

THE MAGUS ERA

BOOK 09

Blood Red

EPUB CREATION BY LISA HAYES

The Magus Era

(巫神纪)

by

Blood Red

(血红)

Synopsis

Long ago, there were people who stood upon the earth with their heads held high. They never bowed to anyone because of their indomitable spirit. They were capable of controlling wind and lightning, and conquering dragons and serpents. They seemed strong enough to split the earth and shatter the stars with their fists. They traveled throughout the land and called themselves Magi. Eventually, one of them would become a Supreme Magus! These men are the ancestors of human beings. Their blood is what we all share today.

Qing Long is the former strongest man in the world. He traveled through space and time and was reborn as Ji Hao in the Fire Crow Clan of the Southern Wasteland. It's a complicated world. Forces from both inside and outside of the clan want this young and talented boy to die. Under great pressure, Ji Hao makes a deal with a mysterious man, who resides in his spiritual space, never showing his real face. He gains two drops of blood from a dragon and phoenix. Afterwards, Ji Hao becomes increasingly more powerful.

Copyright

All rights reserved.

English Translation by Law @ Qidian International

Translation Edit by Hitesh_ @ Qidian International

ePub conversion by Lisa Hayes @ Hasseno Blog

This is a free eBook. You are free to give it away (in unmodified form) to whomever you wish.

No part of this eBook may be reproduced or transmitted in any form or by any means, electronic or mechanical, including photocopying, recording or by any information storage and retrieval system, without written permission from the author.

This book is a work of fiction. Names, characters, places, and incidents either are products of the author's imagination or are used fictitiously. Any resemblance to actual persons, living or dead, events, or locales is entirely coincidental.

Chapter 801: Perfect Talent

Power level, this was an absolute power level difference.

Feng Xing glared at those cyan colored beams of light. As the longbow held in his hand glowed with a bright light, he suddenly moved ten meters away, leaving shreds of afterimages in the air. The thousands of cyan beams of light only penetrated a stream of afterimage left by him.

Following a puffing noise, a thumb-thick cyan beam of light sliced through the air and fiercely pierced into Feng Xing's shoulder. The dragon-skin armor was torn apart, while a fist-sized penetrated wound appeared on his shoulder. Sharp streams of blade-edge-like airstreams ceaselessly stirred in the wound, cutting off thin pieces of bones and muscles.

Yi Shen flew up into the sky, trod on a gust of wind, and floated in the air, staring at Feng Xing with a sharply sparkling pair of eyes. His whole body was quivering with excitement as he said, "Yi Feng, I know more about the goodness of the ogreatest treasure of my clan. I know every secret of its. You've been accepted by it, so what? You can't possibly release its full power at the current stage."

"I can see through every single move you made with the power of that divine bow."

"Today is the date of your death. You lowly bastard, hehe, I've cut you into pieces countless times in my dreams. I sucked your blood, devoured your marrow, let the bone ashes of yours and all your families sink into a livestock cesspool!"

Feng Xing vomited blood while he was sent flying backward by Yi Shen's arrow light.

He bumped into the black mist created by River Earl as countless danger-sharp dark ice threads screamed towards him. Feng Xing

didn’t manage to react timely, and as a consequence, the dark ice threads sliced across his body and cut off pieces of skin and muscles.

Moreover, thin wisps of cold and dark air streams drilled into his body, freezing his marrow and paralyzing his entire back. Following a shrill howl, Feng Xing’s body was bounced forwards while blood spurted out from almost every corner of his body. The wound on his shoulder had been expanding in the meanwhile.

Feng Xing swayed his body. A strong gust of cyan wind coiled around him. He wanted to run and launch counter attacks, but a half of his body was now powerless, and he couldn’t pull open the bow.

"You are talented, even more talented than me."

Yi Shen floated in the air, looking down at Feng Xing, as if he was a God standing high above the masses, looking down at a soul of sin that was about to be executed.

"Even I couldn’t be accepted by the greatest treasure of my clan. But you, you triggered it when attending the great ancestor-worshiping ceremony for the very first time. The treasure chose you, and it took the initiative to merge with you."

"I am the prince of Ten Sun Country... I am the only prince of Ten Sun Country! I am surely the only successor of that great country! You lowly thing, you’re no one but the son of a guard of the Holy Palace in the ancestral temple. ‘Yi’, this noble forename was a great honor, gifted to your ancestors by my ancestors!"

"With your lowly bloodline, how dare you take my honor away? How dare you be even more talented than me?"

"You say, a stupid, reckless bastard like you, and those lowly families of yours who were as lowly as raised animals, if you people stay alive, wouldn’t I become a joke?"

"I don’t get it, how did you make it to Midland?!"

"Countless elders and I tried our best, but we still failed to figure out how the hell you fled to Midland. We sealed the entire Eastern Wasteland, all entrances and exits, all caravans, flying ships and cities, all starry night enormous creatures... we had checked them all thoroughly."

"How on earth did you get here? Do you know how much money and manpower we've spent for catching you?

"But today, finally, you're in my hands."

"Yi Shen, why are you still wasting your breath to say these nonsenses?!" shouted Gong Gong Wuyou unhappily, "Just kill the kid and take back your bow. This little girl, be careful, all of you, do not harm even a hair of hers!"

Gong Gong Wuyou wasn't going to conceal his greediness and evil desire for the girl as he smilingly said to her, "Beautiful lady, please come with me. I don't want to use violence on you, but if you disobey, I can not tell for sure that if you will have a few ribs accidentally broken by me, just like those female slaves of mine."

Step by step, Gong Gong Wuyou approached Yemo Shanye. Meanwhile, large waves of black water surged out from his body, and snowflake-like dark spell symbols emerged from under his feet. A terrifying coldness shrouded Yemo Shanye, that the unicorn stood beside her already had a thin layer of dark ice covered on its body.

The unicorn quivered in cold while tremblingly shielding Yemo Shanye behind its own body. A sharp golden stream of light flew on its golden horn while letting out a puffing noise.

Gong Gong Wuyou smiled with pride and confidence. He spread his arms, seeming to grab Yemo Shanye's shoulders. Dark mist spurted out from his fingertips, that made his hands look like claws of devils. The bone-piercing coldness released from his hands could seal Yemo Shanye's power easily. Then, Gong Gong Wuyou would be able to take her away.

"It’s said that you have the most perfect talent in Dark Sun? You have some special kind of magical power? My ancestors’ souls, little girl, you wandered out here and bumped into me. In this case, the magical, mysterious power of yours, just let me enjoy it!"

Gong Gong Wuyou’s face blushed with excitement as he showed his teeth, seeming like a starving tiger pouncing on his prey.

The unicorn gave a raging roar while the coiling golden stream of light dazzled out from its horn like a sharp sword, reaching to Gong Gong Wuyou’s chest in a moment.

Gong Gong Wuyou snorted coldly while carelessly flicking his finger. A large wave of ice crystal burst along with a cold air stream, freezing the golden light. Then, the golden light was flicked into a puff of light spots by Gong Gong Wuyou’s finger.

Conveniently, he threw out a heavy kick and sent the tall and strong unicorn a hundred meters away. The unicorn thudded against the ground and vomited blood.

Yemo Shanye screamed. Looking at Gong Gong Wuyou’s vicious face, then glancing at Feng Xing, who had been struggling staggeringly, and Yi Shen, who was slowly pulling his bow open, she abruptly spread her hands while letting out a shrill scream from her delicate lips. That scream reached straight into the clouds.

The black crystal pendants worn on Yemo Shanye’s forehead shattered instantly. Then, the deep dark line between her eyebrows suddenly opened. A purely dark erect eye was opened, with streams of dark light rotating in It speedily. A terrifyingly great power, that seemed to devour the whole world, burst from the dark swirl in her erect eye, all of a sudden.

Following two puffing noise and Yemo Shanye’s sky-shaking scream, countless cracks appeared on the ground. Even the black mist released by River Earl began shaking intensively. Those Eastern Wasteland archers who had been approaching from all

directions had blood spurting out from their ears, as their eardrums were all vibrated broken.

Two extremely thin black divine light dazzled out of Yemo Shanye's erect eye and struck on Gong Gong Wuyou and Yi Shen' bodies like two bolts of lightning.

The strong power vibration released from their bodies were weakened immediately. Then, in a great panic, both of them found out that their powers and spirit blood had begun losing at a scary rate.

Yemo Shanye's erect eye swiftly spun in her eye sockets while devouring Gong Gong Wuyou and Yi Shen' powers at a crazy speed.

After merely the span of a breath, two black thunderbolts were released from her erect eye, violently striking on Gong Gong Wuyou and Yi Shen' bodies.

Gong Gong Wuyou and Yi Shen simultaneously gave a muffled moan while stepping back quickly and vomiting blood.

Chapter 802: Destructive Dark Thunder

The Dark Sun was with the power of destroying and devouring.

In the power system of the non-humankind, both the power of destroying and the power of devouring were the top-grade, most terrifying types of power. Therefore, Dark Sun people would either inherit the power of destroying or the power of devouring. But only the ones gifted especially by the Dark Sun could attain both types of these greatest powers.

Yemo Shanye was a perfectly talented one.

The immeasurably great power possessed by Gong Gong Wuyou and Yi Shen were devalued by the erect eye in between Yemo Shanye's eyebrows. The power transformed by her spirit magic eye became the destructive Dark Sun thunder and was released.

Yemo Shanye herself wasn't too powerful, but she absorbed the powers of Gong Gong Wuyou and Yi Shen, then launched a full-power attack on them with their own powers.

Those extremely thin thunderbolts looked like long needles, dim and silent, and seemed to be powerless. However, both Yi Shen and Gong Gong Wuyou were badly frightened, as if they had just seen a ghost. The protective treasures worn by them burst with dazzling light together, while countless fist-sized spell symbols flew out from those treasures, hovering around them. They transformed into thick layers of protective magic screens and shielded them.

A dark, cold, emotionless feeling of destruction enveloped Gong Gong Wuyou and Yi Shen.

The black thunderbolts gently pointed on those protective light screens and generated tens of explosive noises in a row while shattering those magic light screens one after another. The Dark Sun thunderbolts tore all of Gong Gong Wuyou and Yi Shen' outer defenses apart and struck on their bodies, squeezing loud howls

out of their mouths along with blood.

Yi Shen had a fist-sized hole opened in his chest. The inner surface of his wound was as smooth as a mirror, while a layer of dark lightning bolts lingered in the wound, sizzling without an end while devouring his blood and flesh.

Yi Shen was a peak-level Divine Magus, and had eighty-one stars inside his bodies. Furthermore, every single star had been cultivated to its limit. His body was incredibly strong, that any ordinary physical attack couldn't possibly do any harm to his body. However, under the effect of the Dark Sun thunder, his body had been easily ripped open like paper, and the lingering thunderbolts had still been hurting his body, bringing him even greater damage.

Gong Gong Wuyou was injured even more seriously. A big half of his chest had gone missing, and only a small half of broken spine barely had his body connected in whole. Blood gushed out of his body, and was being devoured by the dark thunderbolts that lingered around his body.

Gong Gong Wuyou's face had turned deathly pale because of the pain. He staggered backward while staring at Yemo Shanye in an indescribable fear, as if she was the fiercest ghost in the world. He was a descendant of a God, he was the prince of Gong Gong Family. Nevertheless, God-kind beings valued the abilities of controlling natural powers more than physical strength. They could turn oceans upside-down, could move stars away from the tracks, but they never paid great attentions on cultivating their physical bodies, except for a few of them, who were known for great strengths, like Kua E and his brothers.

Therefore, Gong Gong Wuyou's body was far less strong than Yi Shen. As a consequence, he was injured much more severely than Yi Shen.

Even worse, human beings had independent bodies and souls, so harming the body of a human being could only bring a slight, and

even no harm to his or her soul. Unlike human beings, the soul and body of a God-kind being were a unity. That meant, Gong Gong Wuyou's soul suffered the same injury when his body was wounded. The sense of power released from his body weakened quickly and speedily, as a big half of Gong Gong Wuyou's chest had been blown away. Before, compared with Yi Shen, Gong Gong Wuyou was at a much higher level. But now, judging by the declining sense of power releasing from his body, he was no better than Yi Shen anymore.

Gong Gong Wuyou had taken a sun and moon blood pill, because of which, he had already been standing on a higher starting point. As long as he was willing to make that final step, he would reach the level of Supreme Magus, and would become extraordinary. Nevertheless, Yemo Shane's Dark Sun thunder destroyed a small half of his body, and also tore apart a small half of his soul. His power and his cultivation were both declined largely. This meant that the sun and moon blood pill, which was won by Gong Gong from Dishi Cha, was wasted by Gong Gong Wuyou.

"Bitch!"

Gong Gong Wuyou suffered a great heartache. While staggering backward, he pointed his finger at Yemo Shanye. He wanted to cry but failed to shed any tears. He didn't know what to say but curse her with the worst language he knew.

A sun and moon blood pill, that was a supreme, powerful magic medicine, that human beings could never, ever make. Gong Gong Wuyou took quite a risk to attain the pill from Dishi Cha, and Gong Gong Wuyou took the pill. He had a marvelous feeling, which was given by the amazing improvement delivered by the pill, that made him feel like he was the noblest being in the world, and everyone else was treading under his feet. But, he had only enjoyed this feeling for a few days before he was struck back to where he was before by Yemo Shanye's Dark Sun thunder!

Heartache, the great heartache made Gong Gong Wuyou's face

turn black, and made blood veins bulge from his forehead, making him abruptly begin crying loudly.

Yi Shen was stepping back too. He had a weird smile on that stiff face of his while casting a quick and complicated glance at Gong Gong Wuyou.

Feng Xing raised his head as quickly as he could. He saw the smile on Yi Shen's face. It seemed that Yi Shen was somehow glad to see Gong Gong Wuyou was injured badly, was that true?

"Rubbish friends!" Feng Xing appropriately defined the relationship between Gong Gong Wuyou and Yi Shen.

Taking a deep breath, Feng Xing had a faint light mist stream flash across his body. Next, the fierce outer force that lingered inside and around his body was destroyed by a strong force. Then, his great life-force was boosted up and completely healed his wounds within a second.

Feng Xing leaped up, bit his tongue tip broken and spat a mouthful of cyan and purple colored spirit blood, onto his bow. He abruptly pulled the longbow open, as a fierce gust of wind instantly rose from the ground. The strong wind condensed on his bowstring, transforming into an especially long arrow, within the span of a breath.

"Yi Shen, back then, you killed my whole family!" growled Feng Xing while his longbow let out a thunder-like roar. The air in front of him blasted and wrapped the cyan arrow, which dazzled with an eye-piercing light. In almost the same moment when the arrow was released from the bowstring, it landed on Yi Shen's body, who now didn't have any protective treasures anymore.

Yi Shen roared out. He boosted all of his power and tried to dodge.

However, the arrow came too fast, without leaving him any time or space to dodge. He could do nothing but watch the arrow pierce

into his chest. His body that belonged to a peak-level Divine Magus didn’t manage to stop that arrow from puncturing it. Again, a hole was opened on his body.

A cyan-colored spell symbol exploded on the arrow. Countless, extremely thin and sharp streams of air burst inside Yi Shen’s body, that made him howl in pain. His internal organs, blood veins and meridians were all torn apart, and his body had almost become a griddle.

"Die!" Yi Shen forced himself to suppress the pain while raising his long bow.

Yi Shen’s bow was called ‘dragon-slaying bow’. It was also a great treasure of Ten Sun Country. Ten Sun Country people’ ancestors once killed a hundred dragons with the bow.

However, Yemo Shanye had her erect eye firmly locked on Gong Gong Wuyou, while quickly extracting the great power surging out from his wounds.

Silently, another Dark Sun thunderbolt dazzled out of her erect eye and struck on the dragon-slaying bow.

Followed by a thunderous bang, the lower end of the bow was struck into pieces, and Yi Shen’s left hand was blown up entirely.

Chapter 803: Get Involved

In the front square of the Town Hall, Man Man held Shaosi's hand and violently split the crowd, excitedly rushing to every noisy corner. She snatched a piece of grilled meat from around a bonfire, then grabbed a vat of wine from around another bonfire. Meanwhile, she swung her arm backward and sent a muscular man, who attempted to flirt with Shaosi, flying away. She then threw out a heavy kick and broke the teeth of a badly drunken young man, who rushed over to make an expression of love to Shaosi.

Taisi was holding a grilled beast leg in his left hand, a pot of wine in his right hand, and following closely behind Shaosi and Man Man. He swayed and walked as if he was actually in sleep. He showed the whites of his eyes while walking and stiffly raised his hands to allow himself to drink the wine and eat the meat, as if he was a robot. No one knew what he was thinking.

Sometimes, excited people would reach their hands out and attempt to coil their arms around Taisi's neck to invite him to make a toast together. However, extremely slight air ripples would be stirred up from the air when their hands were still feet away from Taisi's neck, and an indescribable, mysterious power would immediately block the space around Taisi, isolating him from he others. The other people could see Taisi, but could never approach him.

That wasn't a physical distance between Taisi and those people. Instead, that was a distance of time.

After absorbing a Candle Dragon spirit pearl, Shaosi attained the power of space, that allowed her to tear the space apart and teleport herself. Taisi had also absorbed a Candle Dragon spirit pearl, and what he gained was the power of time. Different from Shaosi, Taisi took a rather long period of time to absorb the power of the pearl, but he had merged with the pearl to a high degree. As

a result, Taisi was now in a subtle and indescribable state.

Everyone could see Taisi, but he was always about a second away from each other, or in other words, he existed in a second later or earlier than the others. One could also say that he existed in the future or the past, but never in the present. Therefore, those people who attempted to invite Taisi to drink together would find out that there was always an immeasurable distance between Taisi and themselves.

Besides those bonfires were some girls brought by some human clan leaders. Just like Man Man, these girls were young and energetic. They laughed while chasing each other around the bonfires. Occasionally, some pretty girls would notice Taisi, then with drunken blush, they would excitedly come over to invite Taisi for a dance.

Nevertheless, Taisi was just like a zombie. He completely neglected these girls' invitations, as he passed straight by these girls, with airy steps that made him seem like a ghost. Not a single person could ever touch even a corner of his cloth.

On the roof of the Town Hall, behind a tall ridge, Candle Dragon Gui, Wulong Yao and the other few elders squatted there, sharing a pot of wine, that had a strong and terrific aroma.

Seeing Taisi swaying across the crowd, Candle Dragon Gui abruptly let out a long sigh and said, "This kid, he's all good, but with something wrong with his brain. Do you guys still have single young girls in your families? Can you introduce them to this kid?"

Wulong Yao and the other few elders reached out their heads, glanced at Taisi, then simultaneously shook their heads.

Wulong Yao made it straightforward, "This kid...Only Shaosi, his own blood younger sister, is willing to take care of his daily life. Otherwise, he would have starved to death long ago. You want us to introduce girls to him? So do you want a girl to become his wife, or his mother?"

Candle Dragon Gui angrily raised his hand, wanting to beat Wulong Yao, but the other few elders laughed and stopped him.

Kuafu Yan sat behind the ridge as well. He was extra muscular and was a lot taller than the others. Hearing Candle Dragon Gui and Wulong Yao, he raised his eyebrows and squeezed his eyes while grinning to Candle Dragon Gui and laughing, "Our Kuafu Family girls are not bad. Although they might be slightly stronger than the other girls, it’s not a bad thing for them to marry this young man. Hmm, as long as you can fulfill their appetites."

Another series of laughs could be heard from the roof.

Kuafu Family people were large in shapes. That was not worth mentioning, but their stomachs were like bottomless holes. A gulp of water made by a Kuafu Family person could even break a river, and a meal of a Kuafu Family person could wipe out all animals living on a grassland. Basically, except for some special cases, not a single human clan would be willing to be related to Kuafu Family by marriage. To any ordinary human being, marrying to a Kuafu Family person was just like marrying a king or queen of stomach. A small-scale human clan could literally be eaten broke by a Kuafu Family person! Besides, which boy would want to marry a girl, who had arms thicker than his own waist?

Laughing for a while, Candle Dragon Gui curved his mouth corners back down, flicked his fingers and released a faint layer of gray mist that covered the group of elders up. Then, he said with a deep and strong voice, "For what Si Wen Ming and Ji Hao mentioned earlier, I assume you have a result by now, don’t you?"

"Working with the dragon-kind and phoenix-kind, we have to support them. Otherwise, with the natures of those dragons and phoenixes, they would snatch all benefits away." Candle Dragon Gui fiddled with the wine pot while continuing with a low voice, "A world, same as Pan Xi world."

The few elders all had sharp lights sparkle in their eyes, as they

put their heads together and started whispering to each other.

Whispered for a while, Candle Dragon Gui's look abruptly changed slightly. He raised his left hand and released a strand of gray mist from each fingertip. The thin mist wove into a complicated magic talisman on his palm, then a slight voice drifted from the talisman.

"Hehe, River Earl. This is Pu Ban City, not their Northern Dark Sea...This place is not under the domination of his River Earl underwater force." Candle Dragon Gui's face turned quite dark as he murmured, "Gong Gong has been acting more and more unscrupulous and aggressive. Where did he get that confidence from?"

Wulong Yao snorted coldly. He flicked his finger and released an extremely thin stream of fiery light. From a great distance away, the fiery light stream flew to Shaosi and Man Man, then exploded into a dim sphere of light.

Man Man and Shaosi were having a good time in the crowd. But abruptly, as a dim fiery light flashed across, they heard Wulong Yao's voice.

Shaosi paused slightly, then immediately turned to the direction of that rapidly flowing river, which was not too far away. Meanwhile, Man Man had a raging fire roaring out of her pair of eyes all of a sudden. This slightly drunken girl then gave a raging growl while boosting up all of her strength, "Gong Gong Wuyou, why didn't he die! How dare he bully our friends?!"

The pair of hammers appeared abruptly in Man Man's hands. Dazzling flame flakes were released from the hammerheads, as Man Man slowly lowered her body, then leaped high up like a flea. Her tiny body left a sharp glowing arc in the air while flying towards Yu Mu and Feng Xing, along with an ear-piercing swishing noise.

The square vibrated intensively. At the place where Man Man

leaped up from, the ground dented three inches deep. Countless spell symbols sparkled on the smooth ground while thin spell symbol cracking noises could be heard from underground.

Shaosi snorted coldly. Her face was blushed because she was slightly drunken as well. She grabbed Taisi's neck, carried him up then directly split the space, teleporting Taisi and herself away.

Following two thunderous booms, Man Man's hammers were thrown out while she was still flying in the air. The hammers transformed into a pair of blazing shooting star, fiercely smashing on the dark mist released by River Earl.

A, hundreds of meters tall, mushroom-shaped cloud puffed up into the air. A half of the water of that rapidly flowing water evaporated momentarily, exposing the dried riverbed.

Chapter 804: Reverse the Time

The pair of hammers roared down. Yu Yu had put a powerful magic formation in the pair of hammers, and now, the magic formation was activated completely. River Earl's bowl vibrated intensely, and the dark mist releasing from it turned thinner and thinner.

Following a loud noise, a large area of spider-net-like cracks appeared on the bowl. The look of River Earl, who had been sitting on the head of the boat with a careless and confident face, suddenly changed. A mouthful of heart blood gushed up from his chest and surged out from his nostrils, even before he could open his mouth and let it out. River Earl sensed a great pain from his internal organs, that made him grab his own chest with both of his hands. Meanwhile, he stared at Man Man in a great shock, who was swiftly descending from the air.

"This two bloody hammers, Zhu Rong didn't make them... But who did?!" River Earl growled with a hoarse raging voice. The great heat released from Man Man's hammers evaporated half of the river, and from the remaining half of the river, water surged over. The ice-cold river water flushed the glowing-red riverbed, creating large clouds of steam. The steam rose into the sky, coiled around by the cold wind, then turned into countless snowflakes that drifted down.

The slim bed, that River Earl was sitting on, abruptly turned into a strand of black ash and dissipated along the wind. Next, Candle Dragon Gui showed up behind River Earl like a ghost, a sticky stream of gray mist coiling around his body. It was nothing else but this gray mist that destroyed River Earl's boat in a moment.

Before River Earl could stand up, Candle Dragon Gui already had the five fingers of his right hand locked on River Earl's neck. The cold, iron-hard fingers of Candle Dragon Gui sank deeply into River Earl's neck. These terrifyingly strengthful fingers could

easily break River Earl's neck. Therefore, River Earl now tightened his whole body, daring not to move an inch.

"Young kids are fighting, adults like us shall not get involved... Right, old water creature?" Candle Dragon Gui stretched out his neck, put his wrinkled face near River Earl's ear, while letting out cold gusts of wind that were filled with a strong power of death, from his mouth.

"If you truly want to get involved, you shall become a dead water creature." Candle Dragon Gui put forth his strength through his fingers and squeezed out a series of cracking noise from River Earl's neck. River Earl even temporarily lost his eyesight because of the pain, and he was completely disabled from activating his own divine power, even as a God-kind being with the power of water.

"Candle Dragon Gui...I didn't think that you've become so powerful." River Earl gnashed his teeth and growled in a low voice in rage.

A nimble silhouette abruptly dashed out from the river; that was Wuzhi Qi. He carried a large dark ice stick as he dashed immediately up to Candle Dragon Gui, raised the stick with both of his hands, and seemed to smash down towards the back of Candle Dragon Gui's head. However, a cold snort could then be heard, following which, Wulong Yao, Kuafu Yan and the other few elders showed up behind Wuzhi Qi. The square-shaped hammer held in Kuafu Yan's hand was burning in a raging fire as he began talking with a thunder-like, strong and resonant voice, that even caused a sharp pain on Wuzhi Qi's eardrums.

"Monkey, don't move! You may not be able to break the skull of old Candle Dragon, but my hammer can certainly break your head."

Wuzhi Qi paused instantly, then he slowly turned around with an embarrassed face and looked at Kuafu Yan, who was standing

behind him, and was around thirty meters tall. That giant square-shaped hammerhead, which was thickly covered in tiny spell symbols, was five to six times bigger than Wuzhi Qi's entire body.

River Earl and Wuzhi Qi remained silent, and the looks of both of them were as dark as ink.

Pop! Followed by a loud noise, River Earl's black bowl exploded, transformed into countless beams of dark light beams and dazzled back into River Earl's sleeve. River Earl let out another mouthful of blood, then he showed a badly twisted face, with his teeth gnashed. Just now, the dark mist seal he created was completely broken.

Man Man carried the two hammers and heavily landed from the sky. Along with an earth-shaking bang, a few huge pieces of rock in where she landed were shattered, while tens of serpent-like cracks appeared on the ground. The great shocking wave created by Man Man raised a nearly hundred meters tall wave from the river.

At the moment, Yi Shen's dragon-slaying bow was destroyed by Yemo Shanye's thunderbolt, Man Man released a meters long divine fire from her eyes and immediately saw Yi Shen, whose left hand was blown into pieces.

"Eh? You again? How annoying!" Without using any special magic, Man Man simply boosted up her strength and rushed over towards Yi Shen, along with a strong gust of wind, just like a crazy rhino.

Along with two heavy thuds, the pair of hammers smashed violently on Yi Shen's body. On the flower-bud-shaped hammerheads, a water-clear stream of Yu Yu's divine light flashed slightly. Next, a scarily huge power, that seemed to be as strong as the force generated by a prehistorical star descending from the original void, was released from the hammerheads. It drilled into Yi Shen's body through his pores, then reached to all blood veins, internal organs, bones and marrow of his. Right after that, it

exploded, just like the eruption of a volcano.

From the inside to the outside, this great power burst all of a sudden. That wasn't Man Man's power. Instead, it was a highly lethal function given to Man Man's hammers by Yu Yu quite conveniently.

Yi Shen's bones broke inch by inch; his internal organs were shredded, while tens of huge slashes appeared on his body. Blood surged out from those wounds ceaselessly.

Man Man let out a breath along with a roar while she wielded the hammer forwards. Yi Shen's body was sent flying away like a drifting withered leaf in the wind. While vomiting blood, he fell into the rapidly flowing river, being rolled into the high wave, and then disappeared.

As a dim light flashed across the air, Shaosi rushed into the battlefield with Taisi carried in her hand.

Taisi was drunken, but when he saw Feng Xing, whose entire body was covered in blood, Taisi instantly shook his head and mumbled loudly, "Eh? Is, is someone...bullying you?"

The wine vat and grilled beast meat held in his hands immediately turned into a drifting straw of ash while Taisi's face twisted like a devil. His eyes turned white without any other color. With a low voice, he began incanting an evil sounding spell, creating subtle waves of air ripple that swept across the entire area.

Yi Shen had brought three-hundred Eastern Wasteland elite archers. Among them, thirty to forty were Divine Magi, and the others were elite Magus Kings. These archers had been attacking Yu Mu together, and at the time, Yu Mu's fat had been shaking intensely because of the fierce waves of arrow coming towards him.

Nevertheless, colorful streams of mist flew across these archers'

faces from time to time, as they were all poisoned by Yu Mu. They all had protective magic treasures that had blocked around ninety percent of the poison for them. These archers were powerful and had strong bodies. Therefore, although they were all poisoned, the poison was already weakened by around ninety percent and could not cause any actual threat to them within a short period of time.

In this very moment, Taisi's power of time swept across the battlefield. Those Eastern Wasteland archers, who had their bows pulled open, instantly quivered. Then, within a microsecond, a magical reversal of time happened to them. At that moment, their bodies had gone back to their teenage, back when they just started cultivating themselves. Back at that time, they were merely ordinarily Novice Magi; they were young and weak, and had absolutely no resistance to any type of poison.

All of a sudden, three-hundred elite Eastern Wasteland archers turned into a puddle of pus-blood that flowed all over the ground.

Chapter 805: Xiang Liu Kill

Back inside the small building, Ji Hao, Si Wen Ming, Tushan old man, Ao Li and Feng Xinxin each made a stamp on a sheet of leather. As the five private stamps landed on the leather sheet, the golden leather instantly burst with an eye-piercing light and released a strong stream of power, reaching to the sky. Streams of golden light dazzled out from the leather while the air vibrated, causing a buzzing noise. Next, the leather sheet divided into five, which were five copies of an agreement. They then flew up and landed in the hands of Ji Hao and the other four.

Everything regarding the cooperation had been appropriately negotiated, or in other words, Tushan old man, who was a master of business, had thought of every detail ahead of time. All those clauses suggested by him were perfectly reasonable, and so was the benefit distribution. He considered every partner's needs, and as a result, this agreement satisfied everyone.

"Hahaha, bring us the wine. Take out the pot of Drunken Fox I saved... Haha, today is a good day, good things have happened, and we all have a good mood. Let's now drink!" Tushan old man laughed happily while raising his hands and clapped loudly to tell the maids to hurriedly bring the wine.

Hearing 'Drunken Fox', Ao Li popped out his eyes stunned, and even loudly sucked his own saliva.

Ji Hao smilingly looked at Si Wen Ming, prepared to ask him about Drunken Fox. But suddenly, not so far away, a red mushroom cloud rose into the sky, then a bright fiery light spread out wave by wave, along with a scorching hot hurricane. Immediately, many rare plants around Tushan old man's building withered while many maids and servants screamed out.

"Man Man!"

Ji Hao's pupils shrunk to the size of needle tips when he gave a

long and resonant roar. A golden beam of light dazzled out of his erect eye, then his body disappeared suddenly.

"So fast!" cried Feng Qinxin in shock. She turned straight to where the mushroom cloud rose, but she didn't know when Ji Hao left. She couldn't even see Ji Hao's moves clearly.

Phoenixes could fly at an amazingly high speed, and among all legendary birds, only golden-winged roc and the other few, extremely rare kinds could barely compete against the phoenix-kind in speed. But without a doubt, phoenixes were the fastest flyers. But just now, Ji Hao left abruptly, and Feng Qinxin didn't even see how he did that. Ji Hao's moving speed had already surpassed all those powerful phoenixes Feng Qinxin had ever met, also far higher than Feng Qinxin's own highest speed.

Feng Qinxin was curious and amazed. Therefore, she gave a roar as well and flew towards the mushroom cloud, bringing up a seven-colored stream of light. Si Wen Ming, Ao Li and Tushan old man were all surprised. Next, they each moved towards the mushroom cloud at their highest speeds.

With the power of the Heaven and Earth golden bridge, Ji Hao moved across space, which slightly startled Feng Qinxin. As bright and dim lights flashed swiftly before his eyes, Ji Hao had already arrived where Yu Mu and Feng Xing were attacked. He saw Man Man smash her hammers on Yi Shen's body, almost shattering Yi Shen into pieces. Then, he saw Yi Shen being sent flying away by Man Man's hammers, fall into the river and flee.

Before Ji Hao made any moves, Taisi had already activated his power of time-reversal, and cooperating with Yu Mu's poison, killed three-hundred elite archers in a moment.

River Earl and Wuzhi Qi had already been controlled by a group of elders. By now, only Gong Gong Wuyou was left on the battlefield. He was struck by Yemo Shanye's thunder, and had a half of his chest blown away. A broken spine connected his upper

and lower body, which made him look quite miserable.

The great pain took away Gong Gong Wuyou's elegance. He madly waved the jade flute while screaming like a crazy man, "Who dares to hurt me? I am Gong Gong Wuyou, I am the prince of Gong Gong Family! I am the next Water God!"

"Feng Xing, Yu Mu, you colluded with a non-humankind woman. You swankily attacked me, you attempted to kill our Gong Gong bloodline! I am the only prince of Gong Gong Family, the only prince! You betrayed the humankind, you are spies among human beings!"

Yemo Shanye had a dim black light swiftly spinning in her erect eye. She bit her lips tightly while looking at Gong Gong Wuyou in hesitation. She didn't know if she should launch another thunderbolt to just kill this Gong Gong Wuyou for good. But how did Gong Gong Wuyou know about the proposal? Had her elder sister, Yemo Luoye, the emperor in power of Dark Sun, sent out people to chase her already? Had the people, who had been chasing her, made some contact with Gong Gong Wuyou?

Abruptly, dense black mist spurted out from Gong Gong Wuyou's body, along with a strong cold power. The black mist covered Gong Gong Wuyou's wounds, allowing his wounds to recover speedily. Soon, that broken body was healed perfectly. A thin black mist gathered behind Gong Gong Wuyou, within which, a pair of deep and cold eyes lit up. Then, Gong Gong's hoarse voice came from the mist, "You, how dare you hurt my, Gong Gong's son?!"

Shaosi took a step forward, looking straight at that pair of brightly sparkling eyes in the mist without any fear, and said calmly, "Gong Gong, do you mean that your son can bully us, but we cannot fight back? He wants to kill, so he should be prepared for death."

Before Gong Gong responded, Shaosi harshly continued, "Not only your son, you too. If you want to kill, you should prepare for

death as well!"

An especially fierce and proud vibe rose from Shaosi, under the effect of which, Gong Gong actually didn’t say anything for a long while. Next, Gong Gong sneered and asked, "Who are you? Where you from? Do you even deserve to talk to me like this? For what happened today, no matter whose fault it is, you harmed the prince of my Gong Gong Family. You have to pay for that!"

Sneering again, the black mist behind Gong Gong Wuyou suddenly transformed into a pair of transparent dark ice hand, reaching towards Candle Dragon Gui and the other few elders, along with a shrill scream. Wherever the pair of ice hand reached, even the air was frozen, showing two clearly visible traces.

Candle Dragon Gui, Wulong Yao and the other few elders stopped restraining River Earl and Wuzhi Qi’ powers. Instead, they all made their moves to fend against this nearly sneaky attack launched by Gong Gong. Meanwhile, a hissing noise came from behind Ji Hao, following which, large clouds of black and green poisonous gas puffed out, releasing a disgusting odor. Ji Hao turned around, saw nine giant, dragon-head-like serpent heads, faintly visible in the poisonous gas.

"Earl Yao Ji Hao...You and your people hurt Prince Wuyou... Even Emperor Shun can’t cover this for you...Take a beating from me, Xiang Liu!"

A loud laugh could then be heard while an enormous serpent head swooshed straight over. The air was split up, while Xiang Liu’s head slapped on Ji Hao’s chest like a great mountain.

Chapter 806: Beheading

The enormous serpent head smashed down, creating an unspeakably great horror as it struck down like a tsunami on Ji Hao's head. That horror was as scary as the gathering of all nightmares a human being had in a hundred reincarnated lives. It burst within a moment and woke up the deepest fear inside one's heart, filling every cell of one's body with fear and despair.

This was the natural power of horror possessed by Xiang Liu. Being slightly affected by this great power of horror, anyone, even an ordinary Divine Magi, would have his or her soul shattered. Xiang Liu simply scared his enemies to death many times with his power of horror, then swallowed them.

Xiang Liu was one of the eight senior ministers under Gong Gong's command. He existed ever since the prehistorical era, and was even much older than Candle Dragon Gui. Xiang Liu was injured severely back in the prehistorical era, and had been in a deep sleep to allow his body to recover during all these years. Thus, he rarely showed up in public. If he wasn't injured back then, he would definitely have been the most famous minister under Gong Gong's command, instead of River Earl and Wuzhi Qi.

A terrifying creature originated from the prehistorical era, he attained an amazingly great power through countless years of cultivation. Because of the long-lasting deep sleep, he had accumulated immeasurably great power inside his body. Therefore, when he launched that full-power attack against Ji Hao, both Ji Hao's body and primordial spirit froze, that made him float in the air in a daze, without being able to move a little bit.

The Pan Xi divine mirror automatically activated to protect its owner, releasing a thick layer of dim light from Ji Hao's body.

Dark, deep, mysterious and beautiful, the dim light seemed to contain all mysteriousness in the world. Within that light, Ji Hao

disappeared. Xiang Liu's serpent head was going to give Ji Hao a deathly attack, but he suddenly lost the target.

All traces of Ji Hao's existence had disappeared, including his smell, his power vibrations and all other slight traces. The Pan Xi divine mirror had wiped out all traces of Ji Hao, as if Ji Hao had never existed in the world.

The enormous serpent head bumped into the thick dim light. In the next moment, from within the dense poisonous gas cloud, a serpent head abruptly flew out and thudded violently against another serpent head in confusion.

Bang! A thunderous how could then be heard. Dark-green, sticky and poisonous blood dripped from the sky like a heavy rain. Shaosi shouted, hurriedly waved her hands and released a gray stream of light that rolled all her teammates up, moving them onto a small hill over ten miles away.

Two heads of Xiang Liu had bumped into each other. He was so powerful, that as a consequence, the two heads were both injured seriously. At least a half of each head had been smashed. With Xiang Liu's power and his incredibly strong physical body, even Divine-Magus-level magic treasure couldn't possibly harm even a scale of his. However, he bumped his head with another head of his; such a self-harming move caused him a serious damage.

The poisonous gland located in the edge areas of Xiang Liu's heads exploded, letting out countless drops of venom, splashing down and mixing with his poisonous blood. The ground for miles in radius melted instantly along with a sizzling noise. Sands, rocks, soil and plants all melted into black liquid, that smelled terrible and could corrode the earth. Soon, a, dent miles in radius appeared on the ground.

Xiang Liu was highly poisonous, and this was how terrifying he was.

The pain made Xiang Liu's nine enormous heads sway and howl

miserably. Xiang Liu crazily let out his tongue while screaming in a hoarse voice. The poisonous cloud of gas was dispelled, exposing his weird looking body.

Standing inside the poisonous gas, Xiang Liu was wearing a long robe. His body looked as tall as an ordinary human being. However, his neck was incredibly long, extending for hundreds of meter, then splitting up into nine especially long serpent bodies. The longer those snake bodies extended, the thicker they become. And at last, each of his nine serpent heads was as gigantic as a mountain, but his body remained in the size of an ordinary human being.

Such a weird body made Ji Hao want to throw up.

The Pan Xi divine mirror sparkled, showing Ji Hao's body. Ji Hao flew up into the sky, bringing up a golden beam of light. The power of horror released by Xiang Liu had already been neutralized by the mirror. By now, Ji Hao's power flew perfectly inside his body without any difficult anymore.

The Moho Staff glowed with a sharp light while flying out of Ji Hao's hand. The natural powers in surrounding area were agitated immediately. Next, a water-tank-thick chain, that was condensed purely from natural powers, flew swiftly out, coiled around Xiang Liu's body at lightning speed.

This was a sealing function of the staff, called 'god-sealing chain', and was the most powerful sealing magic of the Moho Family of Full Moon.

Countless gigantic chains absorbed the dense natural powers while releasing bolts of lightning and tied Xiang Liu up. Xiang Liu's nine serpent heads paused instantly, then he burst with a shrill scream in a soul-deep shock, as if he couldn't believe this at all.

"Kid...How can you...?"

Ji Hao gave a roar then gathered all of his spiritual power. The

only spirit star inside his body began shrinking at a crazy rate while the nine sun spear released a, thousands of meter long stream of fire. Sky-Opening, Earth-Splitting, Everything Grow and Everything Perish, he combined the four moves into one, and next, the sun power contained in Ji Hao's body was magically transformed. It was injected into the nine sun spear, after which, a dim black fire suddenly wrapped up the golden, dazzlingly shining spear.

With all of his power, he launched a hack.

All lights in the world seemed to be absorbed by this move launched by Ji Hao. Everyone lost the eyesight at the moment, and some people even had a painful feeling that their souls were about to be devoured.

This was the very first time for Ji Hao to combine the four moves. The sun power contained in his body was fierce and violent, but after being transformed by the combined move, the power he released in the end was rather weird.

That was a world-destructive power. Although Ji Hao was still not powerful enough, the true nature of that power could still frighten everyone on the scene. But Ji Hao was wrapped in the power of the mirror. Therefore, except for himself, no one could sense the scariness given by the black fire wrapped around the nine suns spear.

Another series of shrill howl could be heard, as the nine suns spear hacked on the two injured heads of Xiang Liu.

A tremendous resistant force was generated, but then suddenly disappeared. The black fire dissipated, while Xiang Liu's two heads were chopped off and flew out, transforming into black sticky liquid as they fell from the sky.

Xiang Liu screamed in pain. The rest seven heads of his twitched intensively. Soon, the seven heads merged back into one, while his extra long neck shrunk speedily. Eventually, a regular-sized

serpent head appeared on his human-shaped body.

The hideous serpent slightly swayed and turned into a gloomy and evil face of a middle-aged man.

With hatred, he stared at Ji Hao while black blood gushed ceaselessly out of his mouth corners.

Bang! The pair of dark ice hand launched by Gong Gong Wuyou was shattered by Candle Dragon Gui and the other elders together.

The entire area fell into a deathly silence, as everyone had their eyes fixed on Ji Hao and Xiang Liu. No one could believe that Ji Hao had actually cut off two heads of Xiang Liu!

Chapter 807: The responsibility of Supervision

A towering mulberry tree floated in midair. Beautiful green divine light glowed on each jade-like leaf of the tree and shone on the ground, which was wounded by Xiang Liu.

Streams of poisonous gas were purified by the light, while the odor was dispelled slowly. The air became refreshing again. The large dent on the ground, which was created by the poison, stopped expanding. Tens of Magi with the power of earth stood around the dent, incanting a spell and sending out strong streams of earth power. Under the effect of this, soil, stones and sand began moving and filling up the dent.

A wrinkled face showed faintly on the hundreds of miles thick mulberry tree trunk.

This especially old treeman sighed slightly and complained in a low voice while dispelling the poison left by Xiang Liu, "Young people nowadays are all so impatient and hot-tempered, hot tempered...Eh, with so much strength to fight, why don’t you go back to your wives and make more kids?"

The bonfires of the great party were still blazing, but people around the bonfires had already quieted down. Everyone was listening to the sound that came out from the Town Hall.

It was a perfect celebration ceremony for a great victory attained by the humankind. But because of a suddenly burst conflict, the atmosphere turned tense. Countless people gathered outside the Town Hall, silently waiting for the result.

Inside the Town Hall, Ji Hao expressionlessly faced Gong Gong Wuyou and Yi Shen. Gong Gong Wuyou was with a gloomy face while Yi Shen seemed to be quite embarrassed. From time to time, he would cough loudly, and the breath let out of his mouth still

contained a faint bloody scent.

Obviously, the two hammer strikes launched by Man Man weren't easy to handle. The lethal power put into the hammers by Yu Yu had caused Yi Shen an irreversible injury. By now, the representatives of all Eastern Wasteland clans stood behind Yi Shen, glaring at Ji Hao angrily.

The group of Northern Wasteland clan leaders stood behind Gong Gong Wuyou, under the lead of River Earl, Wuzhi Qi and Xiang Liu, all having vicious faces. If Emperor Shun and the other senior ministers weren't there, they would certainly roll up their sleeves and start another tense fight against Ji Hao.

Not to mention anything else, who was Xiang Liu? Such a famous, powerful being, however, Ji Hao cut off two of his heads right in front of everyone. To Xiang Liu, this didn't just partially consume his life-force. More importantly, this was way too humiliating.

As a well-known senior minister under the command of the Water God, and a powerful prehistorical creature, he was actually harmed by Ji Hao. In many people' eyes, this was just like a great emperor being spat on the face by a little kid. Not only Xiang Liu himself, but all leaders of the clans also followed the Water God's lead felt humiliating.

The atmosphere in the Town Hall was serious and tense. The two strong forces from the Eastern Wasteland and the Northern Wasteland somehow intended to join hands and bring pressure on Ji Hao. Such things never happened before. Therefore, all human ministers on the scene had been pondering the subtle meaning contained in the current situation.

Zhu Rong Tianming had his face darkened while staring at Yi Shen from head to toe. Without a question, Yi Shen was a traitor to Zhu Rong Tianming. He had colluded with Gong Gong Wuyou, and the two of them attacked Ji Hao's friends together. Although Zhu

Rong Tianming never had a good relationship with Ji Hao, at this very moment, he determinedly chose to stand on Ji Hao’s side.

If he didn’t keep the last part of ability of rational thinking, he would have launched a move right now to kill Yi Shen. He wanted peel this traitor and pull out his tendons.

Emperor Shun sat on a straw sheet with his legs crossed, looking at Ji Hao and the others, with a trace of helplessness.

This was a perfect, happy celebration ceremony. Why the hell did it end up like this?

He couldn’t help but take one more glance at Ji Hao. How many times? Emperor Shun remembered that for quite many times, conflicts happened between Ji Hao and some other people when banquets took place in the Town Hall. Right in this Town hall, he beat up Zhu Rong Tianming, and Wuzhi Qi...

This time, he even cut off two heads of Xiang Liu... This was truly a big deal!

"Why did you start the fight?" Emperor Shun finally began talking. As always, his voice was calm and gentle, "You are all elite human beings, you’re the future of the humankind... You are carrying the hope of our kind. You didn’t join hands to fight against the non-humankind. On the contrary, you pointed your weapons at each other...You, you make all elders and me so disappointed."

Ji Hao turned around, bowed towards Emperor Shun and said, "Emperor Shun, they already had blades held against our necks. We had to fight back, not much else. For what happened today, it’s not our fault."

Before Gong Gong Wuyou and Yi Shen said anything, Ji Hao’s tone turned fierce, even cruel as he continued, "No matter who it is, if you want to hurt our Yao Mountain territory people, you shall not blame us for having no mercy."

Gong Gong Wuyou laughed out loud and said scornfully, "Ji Hao, you have no mercy? Who can you possibly frighten?"

Without showing any sign of weakness, Ji Hao responded, "Who can I frighten? Whose heads I've chopped off? If you don't believe me, you can just fight me yourself. Gong Gong Wuyou, do you dare to engage in a deathly fight against me?"

Gong Gong Wuyou immediately shut his mouth and took two steps backward. River Earl and Wuzhi Qi stepped up on both sides, shielding Gong Gong Wuyou behind. After making sure of his own safety, Gong Gong Wuyou pointed his finger at Yi Shen and said, "This is a personal issue between Prince Yi Shen and Feng Xing, from your Yao Mountain territory. Hehe, I was only there to watch the show."

Carelessly putting aside his own responsibility, Gong Gong Wuyou pointed at Ji Hao, sneered and said, "Minister Xiang Liu was nicely trying to stop the fight that happened between you. You didn't accept his kindness... Instead, you..."

Ji Hao's voice sounded as fierce and strong as a sharp hacking blade as he interrupted Gong Gong Wuyou's language game with an indescribable forcefulness, "Gong Gong Wuyou, if you're a decent man, do not play language games. Xiang Liu sneakily attacked me, he tried to kill me. This is the truth. Next time I see him, I will try to kill him, not much else. As for Yi Shen, indeed, that was a personal issue."

Gong Gong Wuyou's look changed, as he glared at Ji Hao without saying anything else.

Not a single living being ever dared to interrupt him, Prince Gong Gong like that. Before, even if he tried to play some language games, who dared to overthrow what he said so straightforwardly? Only Ji Hao, only Ji Hao dared to do this. In this very moment, Gong Gong Wuyou saw Ji Hao as his mortal enemy.

Yi Shen took a deep breath, stiffly nodded towards Emperor Shun

and said coldly, "Emperor Shun, this is an internal affair of our Ten Sun Country. It has nothing to do with the overall situation of our humankind. I am going to kill Feng Xing, because of the personal hatred. According to the rules of our humankind, even you can’t interfere."

Letting out a long breath, Yi Shen waved his hand, then rushed out of the Town Hall along with a fierce sense of power.

"Next time, I will not do it in Pu Ban City."

Gong Gong Wuyou remained silent for a while, then bowed to Emperor Shun, walked out with his people with big steps.

Emperor Shun sighed slightly, cast a complicated glance at Ji Hao and said, "Personal issue...Earl Yao, you have to remember that you should put our entire humankind first. You must not..."

Turned his eyes, Emperor Shun looked at Yemo Shanye, who was standing between Man Man and Shaosi. He frowned and continued in a bland tone, "This girl will be under your watch. Be nice to her, but, do not let her do any harm to our humankind."

Ji Hao paused in surprise. ‘This, has Emperor Shun just passed the buck to me?’ thought Ji Hao.

Chapter 808: About to be Activated

The name of the luxurious palace and the whole lake area that Ji Hao attained from Gong Gong Wuyou as compensation was already changed formally into Yao Mountain Garden.

On the surface of the lake, which was covered with a thin layer of ice, tens of slim boats had been moving across. Servants working in Yao Mountain Garden had been catching fishes and shrimps, also picking some vegetables like lotus roots.

Man Man stood on a boat, a pair of alloy quants were being waved by her like two pinwheels, allowing the boat to move swiftly on the lake surface like a mad buffalo. Shaosi and Yemo Shanye sat on the head of the boat, their long dresses wet because of the splashing water.

Standing on the platform by the lake, Ji Hao had both of his arms held before his chest, looking at Yemo Shanye’s smiling face from a long distance away.

"That is a huge trouble. Women can be troublesome already, and this is a non-humankind woman. Moreover, she’s the twin sister of the emperor in power of Dark Sun, and she sneaked out to run away from marriage. She’s truly a huge trouble."

Feng Xing stood beside Ji Hao, looking at Yemo Shanye with narrowed, glassy eyes. A while later, his gazes turned sharp and determined.

"The outline of her face is a bit similar to the face of my little sister. I witnessed her..."

Ji Hao straightened a finger while waving, interrupted Feng Xing and said, "Alright, let’s not mention that sad past. This isn’t too big a trouble... Emperor Shun only asked us to keep an eye on her. As long as she doesn't do anything to harm our humankind, she can be free to stay or leave."

"If she wants to stay, just let her stay."

"Yemo Luoye's sister, she has a noble identity, that's all. They can't start a war merely for a little girl who sneaked out from her home, can they? Not to mention the fact that we've just signed the contract with them regarding a thousand years of peace... Therefore, she's not a truly big trouble."

Patting heavily on Feng Xing's shoulder, Ji Hao didn't want to steal a poem to express his own feeling, but he couldn't help but begin saying, "If you fall in love with a flower, you should just pick it up...To pursue a woman, you have to be like a hungry wild wolf pouncing on its prey. As a wolf, if you have your eyes fixed on that fresh juicy food already, just pounce, don't hesitate... or you might regret."

Feng Xing looked at Ji Hao in confusion, with his eyes widely opened.

Why did pursuing a woman have anything to do with picking up a flower? He just couldn't understand this literary metaphor Ji Hao made.

Feng Xing remained standing on the platform, confused and panicked. With thousands of thoughts, he looked at Yemo Shanye, who was happily laughing on the boat. Blood veins bulged from his forehead, and he clenched his hands subconsciously as a fierce gust of wind began hovering around his body, causing a loud swishing noise.

A young non-humankind girl, the twin sister of Yemo Luoye, the emperor in power of Dark Sun... Ji Hao was right, she had a complicated identity, and she would be a huge trouble.

However, her eyes were so clear, without any impurities. Sensitively, Feng Xing could feel that her heart was as pure and clear as her eyes, just like the pair of star-like, sparkling beautiful eyes which had been existing in his deepest memory.

"Oi, Ji Hao..." Feng Xing turned around and attempted to ask Ji Hao about something. But Ji Hao had gone long ago without leaving a trace.

Ji Hao left the platform quickly, leaving Feng Xing to continue struggling. He arrived in the main hall of Yao Mountain Garden, where Tu Shan old man and a few others had already been expecting him.

Tens of jade talismans floated in the air, every single one of them glowing with a splendid light. Lights and shadows wove into an enormous, tridimensional blueprint of a magic formation. Complicated spell symbols sparkled in the magic formation blueprint and formed magic chains, which flew in the magic formation, looking like numerous flying and hovering dragons.

This magic formation blueprint was extremely complicated, probably the most complicated one in the world. This was the magic formation provided by Di Yantuo and the others. The non-humankind used this kind of magic formation to open up portals; only with a coordinate, the perpetual portal based on this magic formation could lead straight to another world. This masterpiece was created by countless years of severe work on the Chaos void, the great Dao of space and teleporting magic formation, by countless non-humankind beings, that had cost immeasurably great amount of manpower and material resources.

Through those perpetual portals, the non-humankind armies entered into numerous newly discovered worlds one after another and conquered the local civilizations of those worlds.

Si Wen Ming carefully looked at the magic formation blueprint, with his dense pair of eyebrows knitted, and said, "Such a complicated great magic formation, no wonder it requires so many rare materials. Even if we can reach the targeted world, we have to build another magic formation base, exactly the same as this one, on the other side. Otherwise, our armies could never come back successfully."

Feng Qinxin also frowned as she said, "Therefore, we need to double all those materials for building two same magic formation bases. I’m fine with it, how about you, Ao Li?"

Ao Li stood beside the blueprint. He felt a slight dizzy by now. Dragons were believers of pure physical strength, and they firmly believed that their great physical strength and their especially strong bodies could solve any problem. Therefore, at the current stage, the dragon-kind knew almost nothing about magic formations and magic spells.

Although Ao Li couldn’t tell exactly how excellent this blueprint was, he had still been seriously rubbing his chin with his pair of eyes rolling in his eye sockets because of the dizziness as he said, "Hmm, I’ve emptied my old man’s storage, and also borrowed some materials from some of my cousins... I too am fine with it."

Si Wen Ming spread his hands and said in a deep voice, "All materials on my side are ready. Besides, my family has already raised a force that is strong enough."

Tushan old man squatted aside, with a nameless grass in his mouth, chewing slowly as if he was an old rabbit. The entire hall was suffused by the magically refreshing aroma released from that grass.

Hearing Si Wen Ming, Ao Li and Feng Qinxin, Tushan old man grinned and said, "In this case, according to our agreement, if we are still short of any materials, that would all be provided by our Tushan Family. Apart from this, although our Tushan Family people are never good fighters, we have also raised a force with slave warriors, that will be enough for early-stage exploitation."

At the moment, Ji Hao walked into the hall. He smilingly nodded to Tushan old man and said, "Tushan Family has amazing financial resources... You’ve bought out all slaves sold in Pu Ban Slave Market, haven’t you? In this case, as Liang Zhu City is still in reconstruction and all non-humankind forces haven’t get the time

and energy to explore the new world, we shall take the opportunity and do it before everyone else."

"For the new world, which is supposed to belong to Dishi Family, we should make a move before them and seize the first opportunity. When Dishi Family people travel across the Chaos and arrive in that world, we would be able to strike them right on the heads, perhaps..."

Ji Hao's worlds contained an obvious feeling and coldness, and an intent of killing.

Everyone on the scene clearly understood that if they ever got a chance to wipe out the effective strength of Dishi Family, none of them would let go of the chance. The weaker the non-humankind became, the less pressure the humankind would suffer; everyone knew about this truth.

Tushan old man swallowed the grass in his mouth, then laughed out loud and said, "Let's head to Yao Mountain City then. It's better for the portal to be built in Yao Mountain City.

Giving a large grin, Tushan old man narrowed his eyes and said proudly, "We too have a Heaven and Earth great formation in-construction in our Tushan Mountain, It's just that the constructional work of the great formation required a long period of time, and it's not accomplished yet. For now, Earl Yao's Yao Mountain City is the safest among all our places."

Chapter 809: A Trip Across Space

The earth was covered with a thick layer of snow, but Yao Mountain City was busy.

Si Wen Ming, Tushan old man, Ao Li and Feng Qinxin all moved into Yao Mountain City with their troops. Mountain-huge piles of rare materials were carried into Yao Mountain City's storage. Led by Gulo and the other Xiu Clan masters, all these people began working hard on the construction of the perpetual portal.

Si Wen Ming brought many magic formation artists from the Magi Palace and told them to learn from Gulo and his people.

If those Magi Palace magic formation artists could learn the essence of the magic formation art of the non-humankind from such a large-scale, complicated, and ingenious magic formation that could allow people to travel across space and reach another world, the overall power of all Magi Palace magic formation artists could definitely be improved largely.

Ji Hao, Si Wen Ming, Ao Li and Feng Qinxin were going to explore a new world. This could be counted as a top secret, but among a small group of people, this wasn't a secret at all. Therefore, Candle Dragon Gui, Wulong Yao, Kuafu Yan and the other few elders had all come with their trusted subordinates. These elders wandered on the constructional field all day long, just like fierce beasts who had sensed the scent of blood. Their eyes were firmly fixed on Gulo and his people, grasping every single move made by them.

But of course, they would never, ever admit that they were here to secretly learn some core techniques. With their social status, their positions and their powers, they would sneakily learn techniques from non-humankind masters? What a joke!

Bustling for a few days, Ji Hao finally settled almost everything down, finally getting some spare time. Building a perpetual portal

wasn't an easy job. Even if a few top-ranked Xiu Clan masters, including Gulo, had been helping them, along with the other magic formations artists from the Magi Palace and Xiu Clan, according to Gulo's estimation, it still required eight to nine months to accomplish this great magic formation.

Even if the magic formation was accomplished, to target the world coordinate provided by Di Yantuo, the magic formation still needed to go through complicated tests and adjustments, that would take another few months. Only after all this could the magic formation start to try to teleport people.

After all, the portal had to go through the Chaos void. With a slight error, it might send people to unknown places instead of the destination. Losing in the Chaos would be seriously despairing. Therefore, this thing could not be done in a rush.

Since this couldn't be done in a rush, Ji Hao settled his mind down to focus on his own cultivation. He had just attained the seed of Dao of sun and the first inside spirit star. This meant that both his cultivation of Dao and physical strength had stepped into the level of Divine Magus. Nevertheless, he still felt strange to his new powers. He needed a long period of cultivation to bring his new powers completely under control. Only after that could he truly understand the goodnesses of the level of Divine Magus.

However, on the third day of his cultivation, the mysterious man, who hadn't shown up for quite a long while, appeared abruptly.

Sitting on the misty round platform with legs crossed, the mysterious man said with a resonant voice, "Since you now have the Heaven and Earth golden bridge, why don't you go to that world to take a look ahead of the time?"

Ji Hao paused. Yu Yu never mentioned something like that ever since he gave the golden bridge to Ji Hao to keep. Abruptly hearing the mysterious man, Ji Hao asked, "Do you think I should go take a

look before everyone else?"

The mysterious man responded with a bland tone, "I think Yu Yu wants you to go too. He didn't mention it only because of the friendship between the dragon ancestor, phoenix ancestor and himself. You are cooperating with the dragon-kind and the phoenix-kind, so with his identity, he can't just tell you to go without them, can he?"

Pausing briefly, the mysterious man continued in that deep yet strong voice, "But I think, you should go take a look before everyone else."

Ji Hao remained silent for a while, then stood up. He left the cultivation hall, quietly walked across the square in front of the hall to the door of another hall. He gently knocked the door and asked in a low voice, "Brother Po, are you there? Do you have an interest in going to take a trip outside this world?"

Once Ji Hao finished his question, Yu Yu's voice came from the main hall, "Po, go take a trip with your brother. Be careful, protect him well. Hm, Ji Hao, you're not powerful enough yet... This sword formation of mine, I'll lend it to you for safety."

The magic formation blueprint, that looked like streams of lights and shadows, flew out from the main hall, with the four sharp swords wrapped in it. Flashing across the air, the blueprint and the four swords dazzled into Ji Hao's forehead.

Ji Hao was wild with joy. He hurriedly bowed towards the main hall and silently thanked Yu Yu. He used this sword formation in the Evil Dragon Bay battle and learned how powerful it was back then. With this sword formation, not to mention self-protection, Ji Hao even dared to break into Liang Zhu City once again all by himself, and create an even bigger mess.

The door in front of Ji Hao opened as Po walked out smilingly, wearing a long robe. He nodded to Ji Hao, then waved his hands towards another hall and said, "Brother Ji Hao has a good mood,

sister Gui Ling, let’s go together!"

A gentle breeze blew across Ji Hao’s body, following which, Gui Ling and six of her disciples showed up suddenly.

Gui Ling was wearing a black outfit. She nodded to Ji Hao with a warm smile, then said in a gentle voice, "Brother Ji Hao, I will probably be relying on you this time. Recently, when I cultivated myself, the blood in my heart was always agitated. I might make a breakthrough in the journey."

Ji Hao smiled, greeted Po and Gui Ling, then flicked his finger, releasing over ten beams of fiery light. He sent messages to Ji Xia, Man Man, Shaosi and the other Yao Mountain territory leaders, telling them that he would lock himself indoors to concentrate on cultivation. If anything happened, they could just deal with it without consulting him.

After Ji Hao finished what he had to do, Po put his palms together and waved his sleeves. A breeze flew around Ji Hao, Gui Ling, Po himself and the six disciples of Gui Ling. Next, the nine of them swiftly arrived in a quiet, mountainous area tens of thousands of miles away from Yao Mountain City without disturbing anyone.

In Ji Hao’s spiritual space, the mysterious man said excitedly, "Let’s go, let’s go... Let’s see what’s gonna happen this time."

Ji Hao nodded and took out a jade talisman made by Gulo. He flicked his finger and shattered the talisman. Instantly, a fist-sized sphere of light flew out of the talismans, within which, countless complicated spell symbols flew quickly in streams. This was the world coordinate given by Di Yantuo.

The Heaven and Earth golden bridge spurted out of the spot between Ji Hao’s eyebrows, and the dark golden sphere of light swallowed the coordinate directly.

A slight buzz could then be heard, following which, a dim golden

light stream swooshed straight up into the sky, then disappeared in a moment.

Ji Hao and the other nine cultivators trod on a dim golden bridge. In the front, a golden stream of light tore the Chaos apart, bringing them into the Chaos void, countless billions of miles away from Pan Gu world. Violent Chaos streams roared over from all directions. These terrifyingly great streams bumped against the dark golden light released from the golden bridge, then shattered completely.

Time didn't exist in the Chaos, but in just a while, Ji Hao and the others had already entered deep into the Chaos.

Chapter 810: Following

In the Chaos, the golden bridge moved forward violently and wildly.

Ji Hao and the other cultivators stood on the bridge, and even Po and Gui Ling, who were both powerful and experienced, were shocked by all stunning scenes throughout the journey, and had been quivering slightly.

Within a rampant Chaos stream, a Chaos star, million miles in radius, had been spinning swiftly, releasing countless ten-thousand miles long beams of spirit-perishing divine light. The light beams dazzled out of the star, and wherever they reached, the Chaos stream was struck into nothingness.

Even Po and Gui Ling dared not to fend against this type of pre-world spirit-perishing divine light with their own bodies and without any pre-world supreme treasure. However, the golden bridge bumped directly into the star, forcibly turning the star into pieces.

Dazzling streams of five-colored divine light struck on the golden bridge, but failed to even stir up a ripple on the dark light screen that was wrapped around the golden bridge.

Po abruptly gave a growl, following which, a cyan-colored, shining and enormous hand flew out from behind his head. It expanded to a hundred miles wide in a moment, grasping towards the pieces of that Chaos star. The fierce Chaos stream destroyed a big half of that enormous cyan hand within the blink of an eye. Po tried his best, but only managed to grasp back a water-tank-sized Chaos star piece.

Restraining the cyan light, Po held the star piece with both of his hands. But then, he trembled as his arms were dislocated by this star piece along with a loud bone creaking noise.

A cyan light spot rose from the bag tied around his waist. Po put the star piece into the bag, then seemed to say something. All of a sudden, a shrill howl could be heard, along with which, a whale-like, single-horned enormous beast rushed over, along with another Chaos stream.

This beast, that was tens of thousands of miles long, had countless eyes on its head. Those blood-red eyes were filled with a fierce intent of killing, but without any light of intelligence. Through those eyes, nothing but pure instinct and desire of killing and destruction could be seen. The power vibration released from the beast was incomparably great, affected by which, both Po and Gui Ling subconsciously released five streams of Qi from their heads. Five clear streams of Qi rose from both of their heads and condensed into three lotuses each, spinning speedily and releasing strong streams of power of Qi to fight against the power vibration released from the beast.

The golden bridge flew swiftly and bumped right into the head of the beast. Along with a thunderous bang, the enormous beast, which had been releasing an especially strong power vibration, multiple times greater than the combination of the power vibrations released by Po and Gui Ling, was bumped into bits. Those eyes of the beast became blood-red gemstones, swishing towards all directions like shooting stars.

Gui Ling gave a low growl while raising the black Ruyi held in her left hand. A wide stream of black light hovered in the surrounding space and caught three to five hundred blood-red gemstones.

Before Gui Ling and Po took a closer look at these gemstones transformed from the beast's eyes, a deep yet terrifyingly loud roar came from a long distance away. Even though they were all under the protection of the golden bridge, and the roar came from immensely far away, Ji Hao still felt a piercing pain in his forehead, while his internal organs twitched intensively. Because of the severe inner vibration caused by the roar, Ji Hao vomited

blood and nearly fell off the golden bridge.

Po and Gui Ling were both powerful, so they weren't affected by the roar. But the six disciples of Gui Ling all vomited blood, and even worse than Ji Hao, they had streams of blood flowing out of their eyes, ears and nostrils ceaselessly.

Tens of not too large Chaos stars swished over thousands of miles away. All of a sudden, these stars transformed into a strand of dust simultaneously, being rolled into a Chaos stream, then disappearing. Nearby, a headless, tens of kilometer tall, enormous man, whose skin looked like pure gold, was wielding a giant ax with his left hand and a shield with his right. This headless giant roared madly while bumping a Chaos stream, then haphazardly rushed across space not too far away from the golden bridge.

"This..." Ji Hao looked at Po and Gui Ling in both shock and confusion, but Po and Gui Ling had also been looking at each other in shock while shaking their heads.

"Is that him?" asked Po with his eyebrows knitted.

"Weird." Gui Ling didn't answer directly.

Ji Hao looked at that headless giant, who had been letting out a thunder-like roar from his stomach. All of Ji Hao's fine hairs had stood straight up as his body quivered from time to time. He wasn't frightened. Instead, he was excited. That giant, could he be the one existing in the famous human legend? The unimaginably powerful one, who once fearlessly attacked the heaven and nearly defeated the heaven emperor, making the heaven emperor lock himself indoor?

Why was he in the Chaos? What was he doing in here?

Bang! Bang! Bang! Hundreds of thunderous bangs could then be heard in a row. Meanwhile, the golden bridge glowed with an eye-piercing light, as hundreds of Chaos stars shattered heavily against the golden bridge's glow while releasing thunderbolts and fiery

lights. On one of those Chaos stars, a three-headed, six-winged, incredibly ugly giant bird opened its beaks and let out a long bolt of lightning towards Ji Hao and the other cultivators. But then, the bird realized that its thunderbolt could do no harm to the golden bridge. Therefore, it flashed across space and disappeared immediately.

Before Ji Hao and the others finished the long gasp caused by the shock given by that huge ugly bird, someone cried out in alarm.

A strong spiritual power locked on Ji Hao and the other cultivators. Next, all Chaos streams within the area with a radius of hundreds of thousands of miles were shattered by an unimaginably great force. A ghost-claw-like, purely dark and tremendous claw, which was about a hundred miles wide and having no skin and flesh, roared down towards Ji Hao and the others from a long distance away.

The power vibration released from this claw was scary, being shocked by which, Ji Hao only felt that his whole body was frozen, and he couldn’t move even a little bit. However, the golden bridge had been moving at an unspeakably high speed. Once the claw showed up, the golden bridge swiftly flashed across space, carrying Ji Hao and the others countless miles away, easily leaving the claw behind.

Po and Gui Ling glanced at each other and exclaimed together loudly, "That being is probably as powerful as our Shifu..."

Cold sweat flowed down from both of their foreheads. The owner of that claw was definitely as powerful as Yu Yu. As a creature which was born and had been living in the Chaos, even Yu Yu couldn’t guarantee to defeat it in Chaos.

Fortunately, under the protection of the golden bridge, they survived all dangers they encountered in this journey.

Nevertheless, behind Ji Hao and the other cultivators, in the Chaos, tens of thousands of miles away from them, another group

of people had been cursing loudly and miserably.

A small golden shuttle had been moving in the Chaos. In both the front and the back of the golden shuttle, tens of air wings had been spinning swiftly, releasing large clouds of purple mist and bright bolts of lightning to forcibly destroy all surrounding Chaos streams.

It seemed that this golden shuttle was somehow, mysteriously connected with the golden bridge. This golden shuttle followed closely behind the golden bridge and quickly moved across the Chaos through the trace left by the bridge.

Obviously, the group of people on the golden shuttle had been following Ji Hao and the other cultivators, but the golden shuttle was far less powerful than the golden bridge. In the Chaos streams, the golden shuttle had been shaking intensively, while large ripples were stirred up from its protective light screen from time to time. The pieces of Chaos stars, which were shattered by the golden bridge, struck on the shuttle and made it sway. The roar let out by the headless giant squeezed blood out of the mouths of all people on the shuttle, and then the thunderbolt released by that huge ugly bird almost destroyed the golden shuttle’s protective light screen.

When the tremendous claw roared down, the golden bridge easily moved away, but the golden shuttle was affected by the strong shockwave caused by the claw, being sent out tens of thousands of miles away.

Inside the golden shuttle, a vicious voice screamed hysterically.

"Priest Po, Priest Gui Ling, let’s wait and see!"

Chapter 811: A World of Water

The golden bridge flew faster and faster. At first, the bridge was simply moving in the Chaos at a regular speed, but later, its moving speed rose and rose again, as if a huge piece of magnet had been attracting it, raising its speed to a scary level. The golden bridge vibrated intensely, and not to mention Ji Hao, even Po and Gui Ling couldn't stand steadily on it. People on the bridge had no choice but to lie down on their stomachs, with their bodies shaking intensely along the golden bridge.

Both the intensity and frequency of the vibration grew higher and higher, and even though Ji Hao had an incredibly strong body, he felt that his internal organs were even going to fly out through his mouth. The six disciples of Gui Ling were Qi cultivators, so their bodies were only slightly stronger than ordinarily Junior Magi. Therefore, they had been suffering a heavy vomiting since long ago.

Towards the end, the golden bridge spun wildly and violently in the Chaos, tearing countless Chaos streams apart as if it was a giant drill. As a dim blue light spot came nearer and nearer, the golden bridge seemed to be more and more agitated.

The blue light spot in the front grew brighter and brighter, larger and larger. In the end, a thunder boom was generated as the golden bridge bumped directly against a tremendously thick layer of dim blue light screen. An extremely great and heavy resistance came immediately towards the golden bridge.

Ji Hao clearly sensed a strong will of resistance, judging from which, they were not welcome by whatever was behind this dim blue light screen. However, the golden bridge released an extremely dazzling stream of golden light and penetrated the blue light screen light a long sharp needle.

The billions of miles thick light screen was penetrated by the

golden bridge. Next, along with the intensive vibration of the golden bridge, Ji Hao and the other cultivators broke into the natural protective screen of this world, then violently and impolitely broke into this world.

The golden bridge quieted down immediately. It transformed into a fist-sized, dark golden light, and silently flew back into the spot between Ji Hao's eyebrows.

A strong gale had been blowing across the surrounding space. The bone-piercing cold gale transformed into numerous dark blue and dense air streams, roaring over from all directions. Ji Hao and the other cultivators were now high up in the sky, and they didn't know how far it was from the ground. They tried their best to look down, but saw nothing but winding, dragon-like, dim-blue fierce air streams screaming all over the space.

Cold, terrifyingly cold... The air temperature in this place was incredibly low. It should be because of the natural laws of this world, the temperature in here was way lower than the already discovered lowest temperature back in Pan Gu world. Under the effect of such a low temperature, the gale was nearly liquefied, and contained a frightful destructive power.

The Pan Xi divine mirror was activated. On Ji Hao's body, dim light streams flashed across, teleporting all fierce air streams away before they touched Ji Hao's body. Those air streams which were sent away by Ji Hao, then surged out in random directions, clashing fiercely against each other. At the time, a dreadful series of bangs was generated in the air. Numerous strong air streams were shattered, after which, countless whirlwinds began spinning loudly in the sky, while descending along with an awful coldness like shooting stars.

Po had water-clear Yu Yu divine light streams hovering around his body. No matter how fierce those air streams were, his body stayed perfect unmoved. With great interests, he took out tens of different types of metal pieces and threw them into those fierce air

streams, watching those metal pieces being rolled into the air streams and blasting into tiny crystal pieces.

Gui Ling had released a black divine light, shielding the six disciples of hers. As for herself, she delightfully opened her mouth, joyfully inhaling those raging-dragon-like, tens of thousands of miles long, bone-piercing cold air streams one after another.

These air streams were scarily cold, but contained a pure water power. Gui Ling's real body was an enormous turtle, and she was born before Pan Gu world was created. Therefore, any water power could be greatly replenishing to her. Furthermore, the water power in this world contained a mysterious sense of Dao, which made the water power even more beneficial to Gui Ling.

"Let's go down and take a look!" Ji Hao gave a shout, then took the lead and headed down.

Po and Gui Ling laughed out loud together. They stayed on both sides of Ji Hao to protect him, treading on airy clouds and drifting unhurriedly down. But, their moving speed was still no slower than Ji Hao at all. Meanwhile, tens of exquisite jade talismans flew out from Po's hands one after another. Next, waves of detecting magics were activated, that allowed them to gain a preliminary understanding of this new world.

The water power in this world was incredibly dense, to an amazing degree.

Roughly speaking, the water power was holding an absolute domineering position in this world, as its amount was over a hundred times greater than the total amount of all the other types of natural powers. Natural powers such as metal power, green power, fire power and earth power existed in this world as well. But compared to the water power, these other types of natural powers were so weak that they were not even worth mentioning.

Because of the domineering water power, the fire power, which was opposite to water power, barely existed in this world. Po tried

a few fire magics, but even with his power, he only managed to create a few tiny flames on his finger tips.

Because of the incredibly high density of the water power, the climate change in this world was quite strange. When Ji Hao and the other cultivators dove down from the sky, they had encountered three great storms within merely a quarter of an hour. Before, Ji Hao thought that the storms happened back in the rainy season of Southern Wasteland were already scary enough. But compared to the storms in this world, the rainy season in Southern Wasteland could even be described as gentle.

In the storms they had encountered in this world, there was no such thing as raindrops at all. Instead, coming down from the dense dark clouds were waterfalls. No drops, no streams, it was just like a river in the heaven had suddenly broken, and the river water poured directly on the ground.

The world was dark, with dense dark clouds drifting all over the sky. Because of the low densities of the other types of natural powers, except for those fierce air streams high up in the sky, the lower sky in this world didn't have even a slight gust of wind. As a consequence, every dark cloud was strangely 'fat', and would always float in a certain area without moving, ceaselessly pouring down giant amounts of rainwater.

Without any wind, thunder, lightning, only dark clouds floated in the sky, and countless waterfalls descended from the air, causing endless, muffled noises while falling into the boundless water area down on the ground.

Ji Hao and the other cultivators reached to a spot less than three-thousand meters away from the ground. But the world 'ground' was not appropriate to use in this place, because with their eye powers, they had already tried their best to look around, but none of them managed to find a single piece of land.

Pure water, boiling water, waves after waves, whirlpools after

whirlpools... The water was domineering this world. The only thing that Ji Hao and the other cultivators could see was water, all over the world, roaring, clattering, which made them feel suffocated for no reason.

Following a thunderous series of roars, three-hundred meters tall waves rolled over, generating sharp torrents of wind. Waves and waves clashed against each other while whirlpools devoured each other. Muffled booms could be heard without an end, delivering a despair that one might feel at the end of the day.

Not even a tiny island could be found. The surface of the water was all clean, without even a single grass drifting on it.

High up in the air, a thumb-sized sun with a dim glow showed a half of its body from time to time, barely delivering a slight warmth to this boundless water world, with its weak and thin glow.

"What a nice place!" Gui Ling laughed happily.

Po and Ji Hao already had their faces twisted like used tissues, because they now felt as if they had been going moldy at the joints of their bones.

Chapter 812: A Journey with Bad Luck

A three-hundred long metal warship protected with cowhide violently smashed a giant wave, splashing the water in all directions. The warship was entirely metal, decorated with countless hideous statues of aquatic creatures. By now, the ship had been quacking intensively, and the magic crystal stove was consuming a huge number of top-grade magic crystal pieces in every single second to generate a great power.

Dim blue spell symbols had formed a large circle, inlaid in the tail area of the warship. They had been ceaselessly releasing strong water streams to push the ship forwards. Waves were torn apart by the warship one after another, along with thunderous noises.

Standing on the head of the warship, Ji Hao activated his eye of Dao of sun and released thin beams of golden light while looking around. But wherever his eyesight reached, he saw nothing but the boundless ocean, nothing but water. The air was filled with dark clouds, and countless waterfalls had been falling from the sky, while endless waves roared over. This simple, changeless natural scene even made Ji Hao want to vomit.

The warship hadn't been moving with a high speed, at least, it's speed was much slower than the flying speed of Ji Hao and the other cultivators. But three days ago, after Ji Hao and the other cultivators flew and searched for a while, the power vibrations they released finally caused an attack to be launched by this world itself, with its natural law.

Back then, countless black divine thunderbolts dazzled out from the surrounding water area, striking towards Ji Hao and the other cultivators like raindrops. Even Po and Gui Ling, who could cast so many types of magics and were both extremely powerful, had been thrown into an embarrassing situation by those thunderbolts. If Ji Hao didn't activate the Pan Xi divine mirror and sent all those divine thunderbolts away, both Po and Gui Ling would have

suffered that day. Therefore, Ji Hao took out this large warship, which was produced by Xiu Clan people, as a tool of transportation.

Ji Hao finally understood why were those non-humankind beings liked to invent all kinds of strange large-scale armaments so much. Apparently, under many situations, these large-scale armaments could be highly useful, and even life-saving. At least, in the past three days, since Ji Hao and the others started to move on this warship instead of their own powers, no natural attacks were launched anymore.

This world was way too simple. The suppression given to outsiders by this world itself was not so strong. Therefore, Ji Hao could see things even a million miles away by fully activating this eye of Dao of sun. Nevertheless, three days had passed, and Ji Hao still had no new discovery; nothing at all, absolutely changeless. There was just water, boundless water; the water falling from the sky, the water roaring on the surface of the vast ocean, endless streams of flavorless water, the water that numbed people's feeling and could drive them crazy.

For countless times, Ji Hao lowered his head, looking at the surface of the vast open. What shocked him was that the ocean in this world was immeasurably deep, truly immeasurably deep. Although his eyesight would be largely weakened in water, at least, he could see around a hundred thousand miles into the water. However, he never saw the bottom of the ocean. Thinking of this boundlessly deep ocean under this warship, Ji Hao felt really unsettled.

What made Ji Hao even more helpless was that even when he looked into the water countless times, he saw absolutely nothing in the clear water; even grains of dust were extremely rare. Ji Hao counted clearly that during the past three days, he looked down into the water for many times, but only found thirty-seven-thousand, eight-hundred and ninety grains of dust in total. The

metal warship had moved for more than a hundred thousand miles within these three days, but Ji Hao had only found over thirty-thousand grains of dust, it was not hard to tell how pure the water in this world was... Deathly pure, despairingly pure.

Another great wave roared over, against which, the dragon-head-statues on the head of this ship released a strong stream of light. It shattered the wave and forcibly opened up a broad path among the fierce waves. Pushed by an enormous whirlpool, the warship moved faster forwards, leaving a sharp arc on the water surface.

Sailing in this boundless ocean, Ji Hao and the other cultivators didn't find anything valuable.

From where the golden bridge broke into this world, a dim golden light spot abruptly lit up on the light screen around this world. Following a slight cracking noise, a three-hundred-meter long golden shuttle released pure fire and lightning bolts from both ends of its, while drilling into this world through the protective light screen with difficulty.

The golden shuttle was decorated with complicated patterns, but now, its smooth surface was thickly covered in slashes. In quite a few spots, human-head-sized holes could be seen, with black smoke and flames puffing out from time to time. After forcibly drilling into the protective light screen, the almost broken golden shuttle spun swiftly for a few times and let out a series of grating noise. Then, both the purple fire and lightning bolts released by it disappeared, after which, the golden shuttle fell straight from the sky like a rock.

While falling, spider-like cracks spread out on the golden shuttle while slight and continuous exploding noises came from the inside. This great treasure that was able to travel across the Chaos had obviously suffered an irreversible damage, and was on the edge of destruction.

All of a sudden, a stream of light dazzled out of the middle of the

golden shuttle, from which, over ten people wearing simply designed clothes rushed out. An especially tall and fat man, who had a pair of eyes shining as brightly as the sun in Pan Gu world, and thick, vividly-red lips, lowered his eyelids, looking at the breaking golden shuttle. He gave a long and bitter sigh and said, "How should I explain this to our Shifu? This treasure was not easy to attain, but it is now destroyed in our hands."

A scrawny man, who was a foot taller than this fat guy, and with an extra serious look, said harshly and coldly, "For the great plan of our sect, losing a great treasure is inevitable. As long as we work hard, our Shifu won't blame us for this."

The fat man gave another sigh while looking at the golden shuttle that was quickly cracking and falling apart, then nodded slowly. His facial skin showed a pearl-like luster, as he turned around and said to the other people with a gentle voice, "Our two Shifus consumed their spirit blood to make a spirit talisman to allow us to catch up with the Heaven and Earth golden bridge."

Pausing briefly, this fat man continued with a serious tone, "But the Chaos was dangerous, and this nine-Heaven ten-Earth evil-destroying golden shuttle is broken at last. Without this treasure, we can't return to Pan Gu world. If we want to go home, we only have two choices."

The group of people seriously looked at the fat man while breathing heavily.

The fat man straightened a finger and said with a deep voice, "But in my eyes, we have no other choice but the best one — Take back the Heaven and Earth golden bridge, and return with glory."

A fierce look showed in the fat man's eyes as he continued harshly, "My younger brothers and sisters, you have to understand that if we can bring the Heaven and Earth golden bridge back, how delightful our Shifus would be, and how many rewards you would gain. Therefore, we have to work hard!"

The group of people glanced at each other, then bowed towards the fat man together.

Boom! The golden shuttle exploded, shattering a few dark clouds in the process.

Countless water-tank-thick, black divine thunderbolts dazzled out of the air, striking towards this group of people like a heavy rain.

Chapter 813: Local Water Spirits

The insignificant sun in this world finally sank.

Ji Hao counted his own breaths, and found out that the daytime in this world was three times longer than the daytime of Pan Gu world.

After the dim and weak sun sank, dark blue stars emerged all over the sky. Blue streams of mist-like starlight descended from the air, pure and cold, without any impurities.

Gui Ling sat on the tallest spot of the warship with her mouth widely opened, happily inhaling the starlight. That was the purest pre-world power. Ever since human beings began existing in Pan Gu world and pre-world natural powers gradually got consumed, Gui Ling hadn't inhaled such a pure pre-world negative power for many, many years.

Through every breath of hers, Gui Ling could inhale countless streams of blue star light, and after every single breath, the sense of power released from Gui Ling's body would become stronger and deeper. Her power had been improving at an amazingly high rate, which could be clearly sensed by all others on the ship.

Ji Hao looked at Gui Ling while clicking his tongue in shock.

Pre-world negative power, Gui Ling was so lucky. Sadly, this extremely cold and pure negative power was completely useless to Ji Hao.

At the moment, Po had a square-shaped caldron floating around his head. Streams of starlight were sucked into the small caldron following a buzzing noise. The mist-like negative power streams rotated quickly in the caldron, gradually forming a foot-wide swirl.

The closer one got to the core area of the swirl, the greater was density of the negative power. Po sat on the head of the warship, with his fingers locked together while silently incanting a spell.

Following his voice, fist-sized, dark-blue beads were condensed one after another, being stored in the large interspace of the small caldron.

The pre-world negative power wasn't helpful to Po's cultivation either. But back in Pan Gu world, it was extremely hard to find so much pre-world negative power that was so pure, except in some secret areas. This pre-world negative power was a wonderful material for crafting tools and weapons. For example, some flying swords with rare types of power had to be strengthened with the pre-world negative power to show their strongest effects.

Seeing Po's moves, Ji Hao pondered briefly, then took out the Moho Staff and made it stand on the head of the warship.

Those gemstone eyes inlaid on the Moho Staff sparkled swiftly for a while, then all turned into dark-blue. Streams of dark light began gathering towards the staff, and gradually, all of the dark-blue starlight within the area a hundred thousand miles in radius gathered into a fierce hurricane, roaring towards the staff.

Gui Ling opened her eyes in shock. Sensing the surrounding pre-world negative power that had been growing denser and denser, she nodded and smiled.

Throwing a harsh glance at the six disciples of hers, who were also sitting on the deck and had been cultivating themselves, Gui Ling said, "What are you waiting for? Your Uncle Ji Hao cast a magic to gather the pre-world negative power for you to help you purify your primordial spirits and strengthen your powers. What a good chance! What are you waiting for by sitting there and doing nothing?"

The six disciples laughed together, then bowed towards Ji Hao, closed their eyes and soaked themselves in the pre-world negative power, which was turning denser and denser. The dark-blue starlight transformed into a sticky liquid that wrapped their bodies up. Without spending much of efforts, the pre-world negative

power naturally surged into their bodies.

Around the Moho Staff, fist-sized, dark-blue crystals fell on the ground one after another, along with an endless series of clangs. Those dark-blue crystals fell on the deck and slid along the slight slant. Soon, a thick layer of negative power crystal was piled up on the deck of this ship.

Po gave a grin and said delightfully, "Indeed a great treasure, brother! You're a lucky man!"

Ji Hao smiled and pointed at the staff, preparing to say some humble words. But a gentle wave then surged in from one side of the ship, within which, a crystal clear, transparent large hand reached over and grabbed a few pieces of crystal from the deck.

Po and Ji Hao quivered in shock simultaneously. Ji Hao was actually fine, because he understood that his power was limited and too many people were way more powerful than him. But Po was truly startled, because he failed to notice where and when did the large transparent hand come from. Both of them leaped straight up while looking at that gentle wave.

They saw a tiny spindrift stuck on one side of the ship, moving swiftly forwards along with the ship.

A beautiful girl, whose body was entirely blue and transparent, was sitting on the tiny spindrift, holding the few crystal pieces. She carefully looked at the few pieces of negative power crystal for a while, then happily opened her mouth and swallowed them up.

This girl had a human-like body and a fishlike tail, and was around three meters and six inches tall. Her face was no different from beautiful human girls, but when she opened her mouth to swallow the few crystals pieces, Ji Hao saw the layers of shark-like sharp teeth in her mouth. Those teeth made her beautiful face look slightly ferocious and scary.

More shockingly, Ji Hao scanned through this girl's body with

his spiritual power but gained no feedback through his spiritual power. Even though this girl was right in front of him, it was as if this girl was a part of the boundless ocean, with completely no difference from the water. Ji Hao circled this girl up with his spiritual power; his spiritual power reached every single corner around the girl, but still failed to grasp any trace of this girl's existence.

Po's look turned serious as well, as he failed to reach this girl with his spiritual power as well. Holding his left hand behind his body, Po silently cast a thunder magic, then raised his right hand and asked with a deep voice, "Lady, may I ask your name?"

Po's voice was deep, strong and powerful; every single syllable had magically caused a vibration. This was a special magic, called 'ten-thousand spirit holy language magic'. The magic caster could make a sound through the vibration of the soul instead of the vocal chords, and thus, the language of the magic caster could be transformed into a soul-language, that any creature in the universe could understand. With this magic, one could directly start a soul conversation with the target.

Back in Pan Gu world, spirit creatures which had just become conscious could often be found. Powerful beings needed to use this magic when they wanted to talk with these spirit creatures, who hadn't yet learned the human language.

The girl popped out her eyes, looked at Po in confusion while picking up another few crystal pieces, grinding these extra hard crystal pieces into powder with her layers of sharp teeth.

After making a 'quack' like sound, the girl gave a grin-like facial expression.

She glanced at those crystals pieces on the deck, then glanced at the Moho staff standing on the deck, seeming to realize that this glowing staff was the source of these crystals. Without much of hesitation, she reached her hand out. Her slim arm extended

suddenly as she attempted to grab the staff.

"Girl, this treasure is mine!" Ji Hao flashed across the air, shielding the staff behind his body while slapping the girl's hand away.

The girl paused for a second, then suddenly raised her head and gave a resonant roar. Immediately, the surrounding water began boiling. Following a serious of long and sharp roars, a few whale-sized, transparent enormous beasts broke out from the water. They reached out tens of water-tank-thick, transparent tentacles towards Ji Hao and the others, along with a muffled swishing noise.

Chapter 814: Creature With Instinct

When those tentacles swooshed down towards Ji Hao's head, all large waves of whirlpools in the surrounding ocean surface with a radius of hundreds of miles disappeared. It was as if the powers of these waves and whirlpools had been drained by these beasts and transformed into immeasurably great shocking waves, striking towards Ji Hao and the others. Those long tentacles vibrated the air, creating visible, white air blasts.

Po and Gui Ling stood up simultaneously, while the six disciples of Gui Ling formed a small formation, each with a large black flag held in their hands. On those flags, patterns of waves, hurricanes, and thunderbolts had been sparkling quickly.

The formation was called 'six-direction formation with the negative power', a powerful formation, and was one of Gui Ling's specialties.

The six of Gui Ling's disciples, who were more powerful than Ji Hao, had joined their hands. They formed the formation with six pre-world magic flags, after which Gui Ling sat down in the middle of the formation to give orders. With this formation, the seven of them could easily deal with nearly a hundred enemies, bottle and kill the enemies.

Along with a clear roar, Gui Ling flashed across the air and disappeared in the formation. Immediately, streams of refreshing negative power surged out of the formation, quickly wrapping up the entire warship.

Po smiled and said, "Brother, go try their powers. Your sister Gui Ling and I will cover for you."

Ji Hao had already growled out and leaped up into the sky. His pair of fists glowed with a faint golden light while punching towards those tentacles like mountain-splicing axes. The move of Sky-opening had somehow become an instinct of Ji Hao, that in

the air, the golden light stream brought up by every single punch Ji Hao launched had a magical, arc-shaped moving track.

The natural law in this world was not the same as the natural laws of Pan Gu world, but the eye of Dao of sun, which was crafted by Yu Yu himself, could still deliver countless functions. The move of Sky-Opening taught by the mysterious man was also a powerful one, and carried the ultimate meaning of the great Dao.

When the tens of transparent tentacles smashed down, Ji Hao clearly saw that on the surfaces of these tentacles were many sparkling, dim light spots and streams. These beasts were indeed powerful, and could absorb power from surrounding water, but their attacks were simple and straightforward, and were full of weaknesses.

"Break!" Ji Hao cast a deep growl. Meanwhile, his heavy punches landed on each tentacle, like shooting stars banging against the earth.

Faint golden fiery light flashed across the air and then disappeared. The few beasts howled in pain, their strong and sharp voice causing a piercing pain in everyone’s eardrums. Meanwhile, huge waves rose again in the surrounding area. The tens of tentacles were shattered simultaneously, turning into countless sticky, jelly-like spheres that fell on the deck of the warship, shaking nonstop.

These jelly-like things seemed so gross, yet with a researching spirit, Po picked a small piece up, put near his mouth and took a gentle bite, then chewed for a few times.

Po’s eyes shone instantly as he exclaimed with surprise, "Wonderful! These are not fleshy bodies. Instead, these are tangible essences, condensed from pure after-world essence water power! This, this, back in our world, this can be considered as a rather precious type of natural material."

Gui Ling leaned a big half of her body out from the formation,

staring at the few thousands of meter long beasts with shining eyes.

Living creatures condensed from after-world essence water power? To Gui Ling and her disciples, this was much more important and useful than any other precious natural powers. With some small efforts, Gui Ling could turn these enormous beasts into a greatly powerful magic treasure with water power, that could improve the powers of her disciples largely.

Ji Hao laughed out instantly. He swung his arm backward and grasped in the air. Following his move, the Moho staff flew up while glowing with countless beams of dark-blue light and fell into Ji Hao's hand. Raising the staff high, Ji Hao injected his spiritual power into it. After attaining the seed of Dao, Ji Hao's spiritual power had grown hundreds of times greater than before. By now, he felt like his spiritual power was just like a fierce gale, that could sweep across the tens of thousands of miles in a moment. Inexhaustible water power gathered from all directions, coming under the control of the Moho staff.

Swooshing noises could then be heard, followed by which, over ten three-thousand-meters wide black hands descended from the sky, reaching towards the few enormous beasts along with a fierce coldness. The few beasts struggled and roared in rage, but the few enormous hands condensed from the water power under the control of the Moho staff were incredibly sturdy and powerful. Those beasts were forcibly grabbed out of the water by these gigantic hands.

Po laughed out loud. The small square-shaped caldron floating upon his head released a rapid stream of air, which coiled around these enormous beasts that were disabled from moving. Then, the air streams tightened up and dragged those beasts down towards the small caldron.

Within a few breaths, the few enormous beasts were sealed in the small caldron, no longer able to move.

Po grinned towards Gui Ling and said, "Sister Gui Ling, you can do whatever you want to these big ones when we return to our world."

After a short conversation and a series of laughter, they together turned back to the initiator of all this, the girl, who was sitting on the spindrift and had tried to snatch the Moho staff.

The girl was in a daze. She watched Ji Hao and Po deal with the beasts she called, and witnessed the great powers of Ji Hao, Po, and Gui Ling. Suddenly, she furiously pointed at Ji Hao, growled and yelled with a quacking sound, with her beautiful pair of eyes filled with fierceness. She opened her mouth and showed those layers of sharp teeth, which were shining with a cold light. Those teeth made her look like a hideous monster in a nightmare, that ordinary people would be frightened by merely looking at her.

Ji Hao also cast the language magic, that wasn't practiced by him yet. With the language magic, he talked to the girl with a resonant and strong voice.

"Girl, we just met, but you tried to snatch my treasure already. Don't you think that's too much?"

The girl made no response to Ji Hao's question. Instead, she waved her arms and gave a few deep roars. Meanwhile, the fierce light glowing in her eyes grew brighter and brighter, as she greedily stared at the Moho staff held in Ji Hao's hands. Pondering for a while, she abruptly reached out her hand. A watery light spread out from her palms, within which, a six meters long spear, that was entirely wrapped in watery light streams, appeared in her hands.

Giving a sharp scream, the girl raised the long spear and leaped out of the water, into the air, just like a nimble dolphin. Then, she lunged the spear towards Ji Hao, leaving a clear arc trace in the air.

Still showing no sign of any peaceful conversation; the girl had a clear attitude that she wanted to kill Ji Hao and loot the treasure.

Po and Gui Ling glanced at each other and shook their heads together. They all realized by now that the girl wasn't smart at all. All of her behavior was based on her instincts, and she had no idea about the effects which would be caused by her moves.

But one of Gui Ling's disciples screamed out in shock, "Shifu, that spear..."

Po and Gui Ling nodded simultaneously. Since the girl tended to do everything based on her instincts, she was no different from a wild beast. But the spear held in her hands was indeed a great treasure.

The long spear sliced through the air, piercing towards Ji Hao. Wherever it swept across, countless ice crystals drifted down from the air. These ice crystals spun and fell, clashing against each other and generating thin bolts of watery lightning bolts. In both terms of quality and power, this long spear was definitely no worse than any after-world natural crafted treasure in Pan Gu world; it might even be a world-companying spirit treasure!

Ji Hao put the Moho staff back in his spiritual space, then pulled out the nine suns spear, lunging straight against the girl's long spear.

Along with a thunderous bang, Ji Hao sensed a great pain from his hands while being sent up into the air nearly a thousand meters high.

The girl's arms trembled as well, as she was forced to do an air flip and fell back onto that small spindrift.

Chapter 815: Escape

"Quack!"

The girl's translucent tail violently flapped the surface of the ocean, raising hundreds of huge water columns, sent roaring towards Ji Hao. The air temperature dropped swiftly, and those water columns were frozen into ice columns when they reached the height of over three-hundred-meters, seeming to become even more formidable.

Ji Hao shook his hands quickly while staring at the girl with widely opened eyes.

From his fingertips to his shoulders, Ji Hao's suffered an aching pain from her entire arms, as if every single piece of the bones and muscles in his arms had been smashed. Additionally, thin streams of cold power lingered inside his arms, piercing into those already injured bones and muscles. That miserable feeling almost made Ji Hao scream.

This girl's physical strength was even greater than Ji Hao's strength, even though Ji Hao had already reached the fourth level of the cultivation method with nine turns. Besides, the girl's strength contained a cold power that severely injured Di Hao's Divine-Magus-level body, which could withstand almost all kinds of physical attacks.

"I was careless, careless. I shouldn't underestimate any living being in the universe." Just now, Ji Hao forcibly restrained the Pan Xi divine mirror, as it was automatically activated to protect him, because he wanted to know exactly how powerful the girl was. He didn't think that he would end up severely wounded while the girl seemed perfectly unharmed.

Hundreds of sharp ice columns, which had snake-like twisted shapes, roared towards Ji Hao. This time, he dared not to be careless anymore. He gave a long shout while dim black lights

flashed across his body in streams. Those ice columns all disappeared once they slightly touched Ji Hao's body.

At the same moment, those, hundreds of ice columns swooshed out from all directions around the girl, banging against her at lightning speed.

The girl howled in pain while her translucent body exploded and transformed into countless thumb-sized blue water drops, splashing all over the sky. These water drops wrapped that long spear, flew hundreds of meters away, then merged back together and quickly reformed her body. But clearly, the girl's body was now smaller than before, and her life-force was weakened.

The full-power attack she launched just now had caused a serious injury to her own body. She folded her fish tail and sat on a small wave that had silently rose from the ocean to around a hundred meters of height, while staring at Ji Hao in shock and confusion.

Holding the long spear with her left hand, the girl scratched her own head with her right hand. She was stunned by the magical power of the Pan Xi divine mirror. She tried quite hard, but couldn't figure out why the attack landed on her own body when Ji Hao was the real target.

"Quack!"

The girl pointed at Ji Hao and growled loudly. Her eyes were still filled with fierceness, without any sign of intelligence. Thin streams of blue mist spurted out of her body without an end, under the effect of which, the wave under her tail froze quickly, and the ice spread out speedily. Within the span of a few breaths, the water surface within the area three-hundred miles in radius was frozen into an iceberg by the cold mist she released.

The warship let out a muffled buzz while the magic formation on the tail of the ship shone brightly, generating a strong force to push the ship forwards.

A creaking noise could then be heard. This warship was produced by Xiu Clan people, and was dreadfully powerful. On the head of the ship, large numbers of red spell symbols emerged, releasing a great heat. Waves of scorching hot air streams struck on the iceberg in the front.

Countless cracks appeared on the thick layers of ice, seeing which, the girl growled louder in rage. Abruptly, she released a black stream of cold mist from her head, within which, a fist-sized, silver-white dim light was sparkling. The air temperature dropped immediately at a crazy rate.

The silver transparent ice spread speedily. Abruptly, the bronze-colored warship was covered in three meters thick layer of ice. This amazingly powerful warship was finally sealed by the thick layer of ice and couldn’t move anymore.

"Great treasure!" Gui Ling gave a gentle shout, "This bead is even a hundred times more powerful than my spirit Dan that I’ve been cultivating for countless years! A great treasure in the hands of a wrong owner... What a shame, what a shame."

Seeing that sphere of dim silver light, Gui Ling instantly discovered that the source of the light was a baby-fist-sized, silver bead. This bead hadn’t been shining with a dazzling light, but inside it were layers of incredibly complicated natural inhibitions. At least thirty layers of natural inhibitions were contained in the bead. Without question, this was an amazing pre-world treasure.

Po smiled without saying a word, but he had cast a thunder magic with both of his hands already. His spiritual power had been fully boosted up, and as long as he made a move through changing his hand motions, a heaven-shaking Yu Yu divine thunderbolt would strike down straight from the sky.

Ji Hao flicked both of his arms. The sun power inside his body released a great heat, dispelling the lingering cold power in his body. Then, his Divine Magus spirit blood flushed inside his body,

healing all injured bones and muscles. Looking at the girl, who had nothing but fierceness in her eyes and showed no sign of intelligence, he laughed out loud and said, "Sister Gui Ling, since you like it, you will have it. Although I never liked those people, I do like a word they say."

Holding the nine suns spear and shielding his body with the Pan Xi divine mirror, Ji Hao released faintly golden essence sun fire from his whole body, that made him look like a small sun. He dove directly down towards that girl from high up in the air.

"They always say...'Wait a minute, my friend, this treasure is destined to be mine!"

Gui Ling and Po laughed out wildly, even bending their waists as they almost had tears squeezed out of their eye corners. The six disciples dared not to laugh so loudly, but their faces were twisted as they tried hard to keep themselves from laughing out.

Ji Hao pointed the spearhead at the girl and sent out a stream of golden light along with great heat. The golden light tore apart those fierce air streams caused by the bead and reached to the chest of the girl at lightning speed.

The girl screamed and on her back, sharp, dark blue bone thorns pierced out from her spine immediately, making her beautiful figure hideous and scary. She opened her mouth and let out streams of dark blue mist towards the bead, activating the bead and letting it release large clouds of silver frost, reaching to Ji Hao.

The silver frost bumped into Ji Hao's body along with strong cold power streams, but the Pan Xi divine mirror released a wave of dim light streams. The streams flashed across Ji Hao's body and moved the frost and cold power to unknown places. Next, the nine suns spear brought up a warm air stream while Ji Hao flashed across the air and showed up right in front of the girl. He pierced the sharp spearhead shallowly into the girl's chest, leaving a tiny, half-inch-deep wound on her chest.

Ji Hao didn’t send the essence sun fire into the girl’s body. Instead, he only gave her a not so serious wound with the nine suns spear.

However, the girl was badly frightened by this attack launched by Ji Hao. She quacked out loudly while swiftly drilling into the iceberg along with a dense stream of watery mist, disappearing in the iceberg without leaving a trace. She even forgot about the silver bead that she let out.

The silver bead rolled in the air and started a strong cold gust of wind, seeming ready to flee. But Ji Hao waved his wide sleeve and grasped it. The Pan Xi divine mirror let out a dim beam of light and scanned through the bead. Then, Ji Hao laughed, "Silly girl, she’s indeed instinctively doing everything. For such a precious treasure, she didn’t even leave a soul imprint on it."

Holding the bead with both hands, Ji Hao grinningly flew to Gui Ling, handed the bead to her and said, "Sister, it seems that this time, you’ve attained the first fortune."

Gui Ling took over the bead without any hesitation, delightfully gave it a close look, then smilingly nodded and said, "Alright, next time, I will find you a nice piece too."

Po waved his sleeve, smiled and said, "Now, follow up. Our little brother has wounded her. So, she’s not invisible anymore."

Chapter 816: Nest

Because of the small wound on her chest, a sparkling and sticky liquid, that might be her blood, flew out of her body. Before, she was perfectly invisible in this world, such that even powerful beings like Po and Gui Ling couldn't grasp a trace of hers. But now, the fluid flowing out of her body left a faint, glowing trace in this incredibly clear water world.

Although the girl's body was still invisible in the water, and no sense of power was released from her body, with their sensitive and strong spiritual powers, Ji Hao and the other cultivators followed behind the girl all the way, along with this faint glowing trace.

The enormous warship quickly moved across the water surface, without making even the slightest sound. Ji Hao activated the Pan Xi divine mirror and released a faint dark layer of light to wrap the warship up. Fierce waves violently slapped on the warship, but failed to cause any effect on the ship, as if the ship was only a shadow.

As silent as a ghost, the warship swiftly flashed across the water surface, following behind the wounded, fleeing girl, around a hundred miles away.

Hundreds of miles away behind the warship, a fat man and a tall and skinny man were leading around ten people, each treading upon a metal plate designed in the Yu Clan style, floating in the air. Three meters high above the water surface, they were following behind Ji Hao and the other cultivators. The bottoms of their metal plates brushed against the tops of those strong waves from time to time.

These people suffered a storm of thunderbolts, launched by this world itself, once they arrived in this world. Each of them was powerful, knowledgeable and well-cultivated. Therefore, those

fierce thunderbolts merely managed to cause them slight troubles. Soon after that, same as Ji Hao, they realized that they needed some transportation tools to avoid the rejective force of this world.

An oddly-shaped spirit talisman that was made from a golden leaf floated above the head of each of these people, releasing thin streams of warm power to wrap up their bodies. Because of these magical spirit talismans, the spirit powers of Po and Gui Ling scanned through these people over and over again, but never discovered them.

Looking at the enormous warship, which remained perfectly steady in the rough waves, and wasn't affected at all, the tall and slim man sighed slightly, "I'm just wondering what other treasures do they have. The waves are so strong, yet their ship stays perfectly unaffected."

The fat man narrowed his eyes with two lotuses slowly spinning in his eyes. Around each lotus, six flame-like, red spell symbols were faintly visible. Hearing the tall man, he responded with a gentle voice, "No matter what treasures they have, only people with true virtues shall have great treasure, and those treasures are all destined to belong to our sect."

While smiling, the fat man continued coldly, "Follow them and see how many nice pieces they can find. They're no one but Priest Po and Priest Gui Ling. We together...can certainly waste their billions of years of severe cultivation today."

Afterwards, the group of people remained silent, only quietly following behind Ji Hao.

Just now, Ji Hao snatched the silver bead let out by the girl. These people had seen those, over thirty layers of complicated natural inhibitions inside the bead, and they knew that the bead was a great pre-world treasure with magical powers. If the fat man didn't insist, quite a few among this group of people, who believed that they were quite powerful, would have launched their moves

to try to snatch the bead from Gui Ling's hands already. In their eyes, not to mention any other harvest, merely that bead was worth all they had suffered in this journey so far.

The girl's body merged perfectly in the water, that Ji Hao and the other cultivators still couldn't see her in the water. Following closely after that faint glowing trace, they moved towards where the sun rose for over thirty-thousand miles. Then, a whirlpool thousands of miles in radius abruptly appeared in the front.

Because of the whirlpool, the color of the clear water was suddenly darkened. The nearer to the core area of the whirl pool, the darker was the color of the water. Tens of layers of dense dark clouds gathered above the whirlpool, with enormous water columns descending from the air. An extraordinary amount of rainwater ceaselessly poured into the whirlpool, causing a strong impact force that made the whirlpool vibrate intensely. It raised large clouds of watery mist, and also created an unsettling atmosphere in the surrounding water area.

In this area, that thin glowing trace left by the girl disappeared abruptly. The water currents around the whirlpool were strong and fierce, and the girl had disappeared as well. The thin glowing stream of blood of the girl was rolled into an undercurrent and dispelled immediately.

Ji Hao instantly spread out his spiritual power in all directions. Meanwhile, Po and Gui Ling had both covered the entire area with a radius of tens of thousands of miles with their spiritual powers. Inch by inch, they searched through this entire area, both over and under the water surface.

No trace of the girl was found on the water surface. Ji Hao stood on the head of the ship, pointing down at the deep core area of the whirlpool, pondered and said, "Her nest might be just down there."

Putting the warship back into the space tool, Ji Hao and the other nine cultivators jumped down into the water together. Gui Ling

clapped her hands and let out a black jade Ruyi, floating above her head. It was releasing a faint stream of watery light that surrounded the group of people and created a small sphere of space with air, then brought the group of people down.

Gui Ling dared not to use too much of her power, as it might cause a natural reaction of this world itself and make the world attack her. Therefore, she cautiously released her power bit by bit, bringing the group of people slowly down, towards deep underwater.

Undercurrents under the water were strong and fierce. Centered around the whirlpool, these dark undercurrents rolled and clashed violently against each other, like countless crazy serpents, ceaselessly letting out a dreadful noise. Occasionally, a few undercurrents would bump into each other and generate a strong force, that would be even greater than a full-power attack launched by a low-level Divine Magus. In this underwater area filled with undercurrents, ordinary people would be struck into pieces with a slight little bit of carelessness.

Fortunately, Gui Ling's true body was a pre-world turtle. She was born with a strong ability to control the water power. Although she had restrained around ninety percent of her power, still, she brought the group of people down more than thousand miles under the water without any difficulty. In this depth, effects caused by the enormous whirlpool barely existed.

The underwater world in this depth was strangely quiet and peaceful, even a bit lifeless.

The sunlight in this world couldn't reach this area. Therefore, at first glance, one would see nothing but darkness. However, the group of people kept moving downwards for over ten-thousand miles, until a thin stream of glow appeared in the front. That was the trace left by the girl.

They kept moving down, when a faint light appeared in

surrounding area abruptly. Some thumb-sized, jellyfish-like, especially beautiful transparent creatures had been agilely swaying their long and slim bodies. The faint glow they released allowed Ji Hao and the others to see the surrounding area.

Looking down, Ji Hao saw an over one hundred miles long, enormous creature. This creature was huge and chubby, entirely transparent. The inner space of its body was a large space, that contained countless, different sized ‘rooms’, forming a gigantic nest system.

Many mermaids and mermen, who looked exactly the same as that girl, but larger in shapes, had been resting in the body of that tremendous transparent creature. Each room contained one of two of these mermaids and mermen. Some of them had been resting with their bodies huddled, while some couples had their fish tails stuck together with their bodies shaking quickly; no one knew what were they doing.

Ji Hao reached his spiritual power down and saw the girl who was wounded by him. At the moment, she was showing her teeth while swimming quickly through a transparent tube. Soon, the girl came to a large space that was miles in radius, located in the top area inside the tremendous transparent creature’s head.

Chapter 817: Surprise Attack

The tremendous transparent creature was shaped like a ball, looking like an angry balloonfish. Inside his head, in that huge space, a few mermen with large numbers of thorns and fins on their backs, had been lazily floating in the waving water.

The girl rushed into this space, waving her arms while yelling. Hearing her, those muscular mermen growled towards the sky simultaneously, then moved together towards the girl.

One merman reached his hand out and attempted to grab the girl's slim waist, while another merman impatiently reached out his tail, coiling around the girl's tail. The other few mermen widely opened their mouth and growled out. The merman who tried to grab the girl's waist was punched flying away by another merman, and the one who coiled his tail around the girl's tail was slapped in the face by another merman, that made him swish far away, even bringing up a stream of light.

Two long spears and a sharp sword nearly brushed against his body. A spear tore his tail apart, cutting off tens of brightly sparkling scales. Instantly, this merman pulled out a trident, raised a strong wave, and seemed to start a great fight.

Seeing a conflict burning among these mermen, the girl angrily raised the long spear and wielded it. The few mermen glanced at each other, then dark blue lights sparkled on their bodies while they growled out together. Dark waves spread out from around their mouths, and the tremendous transparent creature, which was serving as a nest, began twisting its body unsettlingly. Meanwhile, the other mermaids and mermen who had been resting in the nest, all raised their heads and growled out loudly.

A short while later, led by the girl and the few mermen, three to five hundred loudly yelling and screaming mermen and mermaids rushed out of the nest. They dashed straight up towards the water

surface without even glancing around. Judging by their moving direction, they were going for Ji Hao, who had wounded the girl earlier, to take revenge.

While swimming swiftly, these mermen and mermaids let out a quacking noise, following which, high-pitched sounds could be heard as a response. Soon, over a hundred whale-like enormous creatures gathered over from all directions and quickly joined the troop of these mermaids and mermen.

These mermen and mermaids moved stunningly fast in the water, and soon, no trace of theirs could be seen anymore.

Left inside the nest were thirty to fifty smaller-sized mermen and mermaids, holding all kinds of weapons, swimming quickly through all paths inside the nest, while showing their teeth and looking around.

As these mermaids and mermen all began moving, Ji Hao and the others discovered that under their nest, in the area behind the tremendous transparent creature's belly, was a three-hundred-meter in radius space.

This space had a relatively darker color, and the water inside it was slightly turbid. Over two-hundred human-sized, especially slim mermaids and mermen were crowded in this area, all having cyan-white skin color.

Not long after the large group of mermaids and mermen left, and before Po, Gui Ling and Ji Hao figured out a plan, a strong cyan-white light speedily approached from a distance away. Ji Hao and the others fixed their eyes on that light sphere, and found that over a thousand, dolphin-like swam over quickly. These fishes were not so large, and cyan and white in color.

Mounting on these nine-meter long transparent fishes were two to three thousand short, cyan-white mermaids and mermen. From around ten miles away from the nest, those dolphin-like fishes opened their mouths together and released a wave of wine-pot-

sized, white spheres of thunderbolts. They then transformed into fierce white lightning bolts, silently dazzling towards the nest.

These white lightning bolts were a type of water thunder magic, soft yet strong, powerful yet silent. Therefore, the moving speed of these lightning bolts was incredibly high, but no sound was made at all.

The ball-shaped nest began shaking intensively. It turned its over one hundred miles long body around and faced the coming enemies with its enormous head. The creature opened its miles wide mouth, then a few giant yet simple spell symbol lightened up on its body. After that, a large area of water in front of it froze suddenly, and turned into a three-hundred-mile long, ten-mile thick ice shield, floating in the water.

The dark-blue ice shield released a strong cold power, while the white bolts of lightning struck over, fiercely banging against the thick ice shield. As a cup of milk was poured into a bucket of still water, the white lightning bolts momentarily pierced miles deep into the ice shield. Afterward, the lightning bolts silently exploded, making the ice shield quake intensely, sending strong waves of water bursting towards all directions. Large pieces of the ice shield fell apart, generating thunderous booms that Ji Hao and the others could hear from a long distance away.

The nest gave a deep roar, following which, swiftly spinning whirlpools emerged from around its body. Those dark whirlpools surrounded its body, causing sharp undercurrents to clash against each other, letting out loud clattering noise.

When the incoming enemies were less than ten miles away from the nest, human-head-sized, black watery thunderbolts spurted out from those, hundreds of dark whirlpools, like a crazy storm. They struck towards the group of dolphin-like fishes along with an eye-piercing light.

The group of fishes opened their jaws with their chests and

bellies up and down. Dazzling white bolts of lightning sizzled out of their jaws and bumped against the dark thunderbolts created by the nest, generating a bright light in the dim underwater world.

However, the nest was obviously much more powerful, as those dolphin-like fishes were basically exhausted after letting out tens of bolts of white lightning, while the nest was continuously creating dark thunderbolts.

On the back of the dolphin-like fish that had been leading the troop, a pretty mermaid girl raised a splendidly shining white bead and gave a deep roar. Then, she quickly shouted a sentence, that had clear vocal varieties. Instantly, the group of dolphin-like fishes scattered towards every direction, dodging the wave of black thunderbolts.

The troop split up into over ten teams and kept rushing towards the nest from all directions. The nest moved its enormous body in the water, but because of its tremendous size, it could never move as nimbly as those dolphin-like fishes. Soon, those cyan-white mermaids and mermen drove those dolphin-like fishes to near the belly area of the nest, then a few mermen stood on fish backs, swiftly threw out their weapons.

Seven to eight long spears violently pierced into the nest's skin. These long spears were incredibly powerful, and the power vibrations released from them even shocked Ji Hao and the other cultivators. However, the skin of the tremendous creature, which had been serving as a nest, was obviously especially tough. Those long spears had merely pierced into its skin for less than three meters.

A shrill scream came from inside the nest, along with which, those mermaids and mermen who were left to guard the nest, swam out of from the mouth of the nest, fiercely rushing towards the incoming enemies.

Chapter 818: Intelligent Group

When the pretty mermaid ordered the group of mermaids and mermen, Ji Hao had already taken the lead to rush out.

That couldn't go wrong; the clear vocal varieties, the sound with emotion, and the bright light sparkling in the girl's eyes, all these clearly showed that these human-sized mermaids and mermen were an intelligent group. The girl didn't just yell without reason. Instead, she was talking with a well-developed language.

Unlike the other mermaid girl who tried to snatch the Moho Staff from Ji Hao's hands, when this mermaid girl spoke, Ji Hao clearly saw her face. She only had two lines of snow-white, beautiful teeth inside her mouth. Her teeth were slightly sharp, slimmer and longer than human teeth, but at least, those were much better to look at than the layers of sharp teeth inside the fierce mermaid girl's mouth.

At least, Ji Hao could accept their girl's appearance, because in general, she looked no different from human beings except for a fish tail.

Puting back the nine suns spear, Ji Hao pulled out the Moho Staff.

The water in surrounding area was agitated as those gemstone eyes on the staff released a dark-blue light, bringing the water currents inside the whole area with a radius of ten-thousand miles under control.

Under Ji Hao's will, strong undercurrents surged out and struck on the bodies of the tens of mermaids and mermen, who had just rushed out of their nest. They made their bodies sway, and their moves incredibly hard and strained.

These mermaids and mermen screamed madly with twisted faces. They violently flipped their tails while releasing dark-blue

light from their bodies. They moved forwards, but with some solid difficulties, because of which, their moving speed had become extremely low.

"Seal!" growled Ji Hao with the Moho staff held in his hand.

The undercurrents coming from all directions suddenly turned as heavy as mountains, surging towards those mermaids and mermen rushing out from their nest. The bodies of these mermaids and mermen immediately turned stiff, just like bugs which had sunk into the resin. No matter how hard they tried to struggle, they could only slightly twist their bodies.

The nest let out a scarily loud growl as its body suddenly turned dark-blue and burst with a bright light. It pointed its enormous mouth towards Ji Hao while swallowing streams of water. The water streams compressed at a crazily high rate inside its stomach. Clearly, it was now preparing an immensely powerful attack.

Gui Ling abruptly took two steps forward, slightly raised her head and gave a long and resonant roar.

A prehistorical sense of power spread out towards the whole area in a formidable way, as if a star had just exploded. The nest instantly stopped its motion, as well as all mermaids and mermen. No matter those who came on the dolphin-like fishes or those who rushed out of the nest, all mermaids and mermen stopped moving. It seemed as if their whole bodies had gone stiff, and none of them dared to make another move.

Gui Ling released the power, that belonged to her real body. As a pre-world turtle, she was definitely at the top of the food chain among all aquatic creatures. Even though this wasn't her world, predators were always predators. Gui Ling's dreadful power awed these local creatures. Through her power, a message was sent into the soul of every single one of these local creatures — Anyone daring to move will die!

All mermaids and mermen were badly frightened by Gui Ling,

just like rabbits frightened by a tiger which was right in front of them.

Po raised his right hand and slightly pointed his finger forward. Clear streams of water power gathered towards Po's fingertip from all directions. The magic created by Yu Yu was incredibly ingenious. Po used his own power as a trigger, and with a hand motion of thunder magic, he momentarily transformed the strong water power into powerful watery thunderbolts.

Tens of water-tank-sized spheres of water thunderbolts dazzled out around Po's body while spinning swiftly, softly attaching to the skin of the nest. Po then flicked his fingers, silently and gently made the rapidly flowing undercurrents shake for a few times. But in the next moment, the thirty-meter thick, transparent skin of the nest broke. Large streams of glowing and sticky liquid surged out of the nest without an end, and soon, the surrounding water began glowing as well.

A huge long tear was ripped open in that slightly turbid area behind the nest's belly, through which, hundreds of smaller sized mermaids and mermen weakly drifted out.

Mounting on the dolphin-like fish, the girl who commanded this sneak attack, shouted out in a great surprise. She attempted to rush up, but was awed by Gui Ling's power, and could only carefully turn around, glancing at Ji Hao and the other cultivators.

Ji Hao's Moho staff had a bright beam of light flashing across it. Next, the undercurrents, which had the tens of mermaids and mermen sealed, began compressing quickly. The soft and gentle water gradually turned thousands of times harder and sturdier than metal, seeming to crush those mermaids and mermen with a great force. The bodies of those mermaids and mermen shrunk slowly, while sticky, faintly glowing fluid gushed out of their mouths.

Seeing Ji Hao was going to crush these mermaids and mermen to

death, Gui Ling stopped him and said, "Just capture them alive. These local creatures are indeed fierce, but it’s alright to keep them alive. They might be useful in the future."

Po looked at the tremendous transparent nest with a shining pair of eye and said, "This big one is interesting, it served so perfectly as a nest. If we can do some works on it, perhaps it can become a precious space treasure."

Ji Hao nodded smilingly, then put back the Moho staff, wielded his left hand and sent out tens of enchanted bone thorns, which were produced secretly by the Magi Palace. Each bone thorn transformed into a dark stream of light, that pierced into the body of a merman or mermaid, through the back of the neck.

These mermaids and mermen suddenly paused, then turned as powerless as dead snakes, drifting in the water.

Ji Hao sighed with relief. He was afraid that the Magi Palace’s bone thorns might not be effective on these local creatures. After all, the power systems of the two worlds were different. But the Magi Palace’s magic turned out to be just powerful, and these fierce mermaids and mermen were disabled from fighting back immediately.

The Pan Xi divine mirror released a thin layer of light and covered up Ji Hao’s body. Afterward, Ji Hao carefully drifted towards those mermaids and mermen mounted on those dolphin-like fishes.

Gui Ling had already restrained her power, allowing those mermaids and mermen to move freely again. Vigilantly, they formed a found-shaped battle formation and circled around those mermaids and mermen that came out from the turbid area of the nest. Every single one of these mermaids and mermen had now been staring at Ji Hao with panic and carefulness.

These mermaids and mermen’s eyes were all bright, and Ji Hao could discover faint emotional changes from their eyes. They were

smart, and they had emotions. Therefore, they were communicative.

Ji Hao cast that language magic that he learned just before he left Pan Gu world, and asked with a deep voice, "People...I think, we can be friends."

Hearing Ji Hao, the eyes of those mermaids and mermen sparkled.

Before, they were frightened by the strong powers showed by Ji Hao, Po, and Gui Ling. And now, they discovered another weird thing — They didn't understand a word said by Ji Hao, but they got Ji Hao's meaning.

With bird-song-like voices, those mermaids and mermen whispered to each other for a while. Then, the girl, who had been leading the troop, mounted on her fish and carefully came over.

A beautiful voice came out from the girl's mouth...

Ji Hao helplessly turned back and spread his hands towards Gui Ling and Po — He couldn't understand the girl!

Chapter 819: A Magical Race

Over a thousand dolphin-like fishes moved quickly in the water. As they slightly flipped their strong tails, their faintly glowing, cyan-white bodies could be pushed forwards for miles.

The cyan-white glow released from their bodies had a magical effect. No matter how fast they moved, Ji Hao, who was sitting on the back of one of them, couldn't feel any resistance from the water.

Gui Ling sat on the back of an extra large fish with her legs crossed. Around her body, a dim watery light had been coiling in streams. She was silently sensing and analyzing the cyan-white glow of the fish with a secret magic taught by Yu Yu. Faintly, a cyan-white light sparkled under Gui Ling's skin, judging from which, Gui Ling had gained some understanding regarding this magical glow.

Po was also sitting on the back of a large fish, smilingly chatting with a merman, who seemed to be an elderly man. Ji Hao hadn't mastered the language magic yet, but Po had almost traveled across the entire Pan Gu world in the past countless years, and had become a genuine master of that language magic long ago. He created a few magic seeds of the language magic, and with an enlightening magic, he planted them in the heads of a few mermaids and mermen, who seemed to be the leaders of the troop. Thus, Ji Hao and the other cultivators could all smoothly communicate with the few mermaids and mermen.

Not far away from Ji Hao, the mermaid girl who commanded the troop to launch the sneak attack and saved the group of kidnaped mermaids and mermen, slightly leaned her body towards Ji Hao while curiously looking at him with a large and watery pair of eyes, speaking with a bird-song-like voice.

Ji Hao still couldn't understand the girl's language, but with the

language magic, he could get the girl's meaning, and translate her language into the human language in his head.

The girl and her clansmen, these smaller shaped, human-sized mermaids and mermen, called themselves 'spirit mermaids and mermen'. They were intelligent, and had developed a mature language system over a long period of time. They had invented words, and created their own civilization.

Those larger-shaped mermaids and mermen, who had thick layers of sharp teeth in their mouths and thorns and fins on their backs, were called 'evil mermaids and mermen'.

These two types of mermaids and mermen looked almost the same from the outside. Their natural abilities were the same as well, but evil mermaids and mermen had completely no intelligence. Instead, they were a group of scary, blood-thirsty beasts. Evil mermaids and mermen tended to do everything instinctively. Besides cruel predation, they would do nothing but mate and reproduce day and night.

If the food resources were richer, based on the crazily high reproducing-rate of those evil mermaids and mermen, this ocean, which was called 'Mother Sea' by those spirit mermaids and mermen, would have been filled with evil mermaids and mermen long ago.

What made spirit mermaids and merman fear and helpless was that evil mermaids and mermen had strong desires for food, and the brains of spirit mermaids and mermen were the favorite food of those evil mermaids and mermen.

For countless years, because of the hunting and retaliation that happened between these two races, countless different-scaled wars had burst.Those evil mermaids and mermen could always slightly suppress these spirit mermaids and mermen. Therefore, spirit mermaids and mermen had been hunted by evil mermaids and mermen all these years.

The group of beautifully shaped large fishes moved forward quickly in the water. During the journey, Ji Hao had been talking with the girl with a low voice. He learned this mermaid girls' name — Starlight.

Starlight was especially honest and simple, or in other words, all spirit mermaids and mermen were simple and honest. Ji Hao and the other cultivators broke the nest of evil mermaids and mermen and helped them saving their clansmen, who were kidnapped. Therefore, these spirit mermaids and mermen now saw Ji Hao and the other cultivators as good friends.They invited Ji Hao and the other cultivators to ride on their mounts without any hesitation or doubt, which were called 'star dolphins', and come to their nest.

After moving forwards for over twenty-thousand miles, rapid water flowing sound could be heard from the front.

Looking from a long distance away, an enormous whirlpool floated in the water like a funnel. Around the dark whirlpool, countless different-sized undercurrents surged ragingly, generating thousands of tiny, barely visible whirlpools.

Starlight and her people drove their star dolphins carefully through tens of undercurrents. Then, an invisible whirlpool emerged in the front and swallowed all of them up, along with their star dolphins. Ji Hao felt that his body suddenly became weightless, then a faint watery light shone around him. In the next moment, they were pushed out from another whirlpool, after which, they arrived in a whole new water area.

Po abruptly sent his voice secretly into Ji Hao's ears. He said that just now, when they were swallowed by the first whirlpool, Po had measured the change of their locations with a powerful magic. He found that within this short moment, as they entered into one whirlpool and came out from another, they had actually moved over thirty-thousand miles far.

An elderly spirit merman gave a deep shout, then took out a fist-

sized, water-drop-shaped white crystal piece. He gently threw it into the whirlpool where they came out from. The spinning speed of this whirlpool instantly dropped, while it shrunk into around a hundred-meter in radius.

A faint ripple of space power flashed across the air, then disappeared without leaving a trace.

Po and Ji Hao glanced at each other. It seemed that what this elderly merman just did was sealing this whirlpool, that had a teleporting function. Thus, even if those evil mermaids and mermen could track them, they would never be able to come over through the teleporting whirlpools.

They kept moving forwards, and through three similar teleporting whirlpools, they were sent over one hundred thousand miles away. After that, Starlight and the other spirit mermaids and mermen showed relieved smiles.

With a silvery bird-song-like voice, Starlight grinningly explained to Ji Hao that, recently, they didn't have enough food in the storage of their nest. Therefore, a batch of their clansmen took the risk to seek for food in further areas. But unfortunately, they were caught alive by evil mermaids and mermen.

Starlight and the others had already hidden around the nest of those evil mermaids and mermen for quite a few days. If those evil mermaids and mermen didn't crazily rush out of their nest today, they wouldn't be able to find a chance to rescue their captured clansmen. Fortunately, Ji Hao and the other cultivators showed up and helped them, and none of their clansmen were killed or injured as they successfully rescued all of their clansmen, which made them feel extremely lucky.

For preventing the search of those evil mermaids and mermen, spirit mermaids and mermen built their nest in an extreme depth underwater. This area was purely dark, and only those star dolphins had dim cyan-white glow releasing from their bodies.

However, on moving forwards for hundreds of miles, a faint white light lightened up the area, that had a radius of tens of miles.

Ji Hao held his breath, looking at the three stunningly beautiful creatures in a daze.

Those were three magical creatures, shaped like jellyfishes. These twenty to thirty miles long creatures were entirely transparent, with countless fist-sized, white light spots swaying and glowing on their light-blue bodies.

The three enormous creatures floated in the water and formed a triangle. Some smaller-shaped spirit mermaids and mermen, who were clearly immature, had been happily swimming in and out of the mouthparts of the three enormous, beautiful creatures.

Occasionally, one of these enormous creatures would slightly move its long tentacles. Then, their over ten miles long tentacles would stir up water currents and raise large clouds of breathtakingly beautiful, thin glowing mist, as splendid as polar lights.

Chapter 820: Saving Them

"Quack!"

The evil mermaid girl led hundreds of fierce mermaids and mermen and rushed out of the water surface.

Fierce waves and roaring whirlpools disappeared abruptly, leaving hundreds of water columns standing on the still water surface. Each column had an evil mermaid or merman sitting on it. They wielded their weapons, widely opened their mouths, and showed their sharp teeth while letting out shrill screams, which were not pleasant to hear.

Over a hundred large creatures with long tentacles on their faces hovered and bumped into each other in the water. From time to time, they waved their long tentacles and slapped loudly on the water surface, making the water splash.

"Quack?"

An elderly evil merman, who was strong and muscular, with slightly dark skin, gave a deep roar towards the mermaid girl.

The mermaid girl confusingly glanced around. Just now, right in this area, Ji Hao snatched her precious bead and wounded her with the nine suns spear. But now, when she brought her clansmen to take revenge, where were those strangely-shaped living beings?

Angrily waving her long spear, the evil mermaid girl pointed at the water surface and released a strong stream of cold power. It froze the water surface of the entire area with a radius of hundreds of miles into thick ice.

"Quack?"

Another strong evil merman, who seemed to be in the middle of his life, showed his teeth furiously while growling at the girl. Abruptly, he flicked his tail, leaped to the top of the water column where the mermaid girl sat on, then threw a heavy slap on her

face.

The evil mermaid girl let out shrill screams, then raised her long spear and lunged towards the strong evil merman. Another few evil mermen leaped up together, circling up the one who slapped the girl, with their eyes sparkling with the light of sexual desire. They even quivered when they glanced at the evil mermaid girl.

High up in the air, the group of people with simple and coarse clothes had been looking down at this group of evil mermaids and mermen, who were now fighting against each other.

"Poor, pathetic... They are so talented, yet have no intelligence, and can only struggle in this world, like wild beasts. Indeed, the lives of all living creatures are bitter." That fat man sighed slightly, then grinned and said to the tall and slim one, "Brother Kong Chan, do you think we can cultivate these local creatures?"

The tall and slim man narrowed his eyes, gave a faint smile while a magical flow of light moved inside his eyes, and said, "Brother Bao Xiang, since you value their talents, this is their fortune. With your power, even a rock can learn to nod its head, not to mention these creatures."

The fat man, who was called Bao Xiang, humbly nodded, then rubbed his hands. His hands were then wrapped up by a soft layer of golden light, as he smiled and said, "In this case, my Cloud Floating Sea can just use some guards, and these creatures fit my needs."

He said that he needed some guards for his place, but when he looked at those evil mermaids and mermen, his eyes had been fixed on their weapons all the time.

The weapons belonged to these furious evil mermaids and mermen, who were more like wild beasts, were all top-grade pieces. Every single one of those weapons had been shining with a bright, splendid light, while releasing a strong power vibration. These weapons were all great treasures, and even the worst one

was above the level of world-companying spirit treasures.

If Bao Xiang could truly turn these local creatures into his guards, that would be wonderful, as he could gain both these powerful creatures and those valuable weapons. Bao Xiang grinned brightly while he flashed across the air and descended from the sky, floating above the water surface less than three-hundred meter high. Stately and gently, he smiled and said to those evil mermaids and mermen, "My friends, the great masters of our sect are immeasurably powerful. We have our gate widely open, and we are willing to have all living creatures to join us, to enjoy the endless peace and happiness."

Taking a long gasp, Bao Xiang had a splendid glow released from his head. Within the golden glow, a four-tusked silver elephant was faintly visible. Carried on the back of the silver elephant was an exquisite, well-designed bottle, with dim streams of multicolored lights rippling around the bottleneck.

Surrounded by the golden glow, Bao Xiang seemed to be especially tall and sturdy. His skin was snow-white, and had a pearl-like luster, while his entire body shone with a multicolored light, as if that body was made from the glaze. Seriously, he looked just like a divine god descending from the heaven. Back in some primitive clans in Pan Gu world, he would definitely be worshiped by those clansmen.

Nevertheless, things were different in the eyes of these evil mermaids and mermen. The fleshy body, snow-white skin of Bao Xiang, and the faintly sensible scent of sandalwood releasing from his body made the saliva of those evil mermaids and mermen flow out of their mouth corners in large streams. Tens of evil mermaids and mermen roared out simultaneously while straightening their long spears, fiercely lunging towards Bao Xiang.

Evil mermaids and mermen were the most powerful race, the domineering race in this world. They were at the top of the food chain of this world. To these evil mermaids and mermaids, who

tended to do everything instinctively, any creature that looked different from them could be counted as food. Bao Xiang looked so different, but those evil mermaids and mermen saw him as nothing more but a new type of food.

Long spears tore the air apart, while countless ice thorns, ice daggers and sharp gusts of wind roared towards Bao Xiang.

Bao Xiang sighed slightly while slightly parting his both hands. Instantly, a thin layer of golden light, that contained a sweet scent of sandalwood, descended from the sky, and covered him up like an enormous light column. Tens of Divine-Magus-level evil mermaids and mermen, who possessed amazing physical strengths, fiercely attacked the protective golden light of Bao Xiang. Large ripples were stirred up from the thin layer of golden light, and generated countless round-shaped golden glows. Yet the storm-like wave of attacks launched by those evil mermaids and mermen was sturdily blocked.

Large spheres of golden glow were released from the protective golden light. Then, the golden light spun in the air and transformed into numerous golden lotuses three meters in radius.

Hundreds of golden lotuses released mountain-heavy power vibrations while airily moving through the air. Each lotus flew to above the head of an evil mermaid or mermen, released a faint golden light, and shrouded their bodies.

Those evil mermaids and mermen screamed in panic, madly waving their weapons to strike the golden light. Those golden lotuses vibrated intensively, letting out slight cracking noise from time to time. But abruptly, a golden pestle abruptly appeared in Bao Xiang's hands. He sat in the midair with crossed legs, gently waving the pestle. Meanwhile, the golden light released from those golden lotuses grew brighter, and the sealing and suppressing power of the golden light was raised by a hundred times.

From the air, a spell-incasing voice, that sounded coming from

countless people, could be heard. These evil mermaids and mermen felt that billions of people had squeezed into their ears, while murmuring the same sentence to them — Come join us, you will be so happy!

These evil mermaids and mermen were just like wild beasts, that everything they did would be based on their instincts. Their soul powers and spiritual powers weren't so great. Therefore, facing the powerful magic cast by Bao Xiang, tens of evil mermaids and mermen threw their weapons away and began kowtowing to Bao Xiang with solemn faces, only in the span of a few breaths.

"You are indeed fortunate creatures!" Bao Xiang smiled so gently and warmly as he slightly waved the pestle. Following his move, those obedient evil mermaids and mermen coiled their fish tails and began devoutly incanting the same spell, which was created by Bao Xiang.

One after another, more evil mermaids and mermen dropped their weapons and kowtowed to Bao Xiang.

Back in the air, the seventeen people, who were led by Kong Chan, enviously looked at Bao Xiang. Hundreds of powerful guards and so many great treasures, Bao Xiang had indeed attained a great harvest this time, that could even make the others drool.

A quarter of an hour later, all evil mermaid and mermen were brought under control by Bao Xiang, obediently kneeling in front of him and daring not to move.

"Good, good, good, just find these people for me." Bao Xiang smiled as a golden light screen emerged in front of him, showing the images of Ji Hao and the other cultivators.

Chapter 821: Quiet Life Divine Flower

The three stunningly beautiful enormous creatures were like the most beautiful elves in a dream.

Ji Hao widely opened his eyes, quietly appreciating the smooth and beautiful lines of their bodies, looking at waves of glow gently spreading out in the water from their long and slim tentacles.

Same as the evil mermaid girl, Starlight and her clansmen, as well as these three enormous jelly fishes, had perfectly merged with the surrounding environment, such that Ji Hao couldn't sense anything from them. However, their beauty and relaxed movements made Ji Hao feel that they were quiet and peaceful creatures, as beautiful as orchids blooming in a wild valley.

"Spirit mother!" Faintly sensible soul power vibrations came over, as Starlight told Ji Hao the name of the three enormous creatures.

Spirit mermaids and mermen called these enormous jelly fishes 'spirit mother'. They were accompanying creatures of the spirit mermaids and mermen. They were not so good at attacking, yet they had a pretty great defensive power. They moving speed was amazing, and in addition to that, as long as they had enough energy, they could create teleporting whirlpools and send all spirit mermaids and mermen to far away, along with themselves.

Because of the existences of these spirit mothers, spirit mermaids and mermen managed to survive till present, under the crazy predation of those evil mermaids and mermen.

More amazingly, spirit mothers were able to absorb the essence water power and generate a 'spirit mother magic liquid' inside their own bodies. The liquid contained strong life-force, with which, no matter how badly spirit mermaids and mermen were injured, as long as they could still breathe, they would be able to quickly recover by soaking in the spirit mother magic liquid

timely.

In the middle of the head of each enormous spirit mother was a small space hundred-meters in radius, that had been glowing with a dreamy light. Contained in the space was a magically glistering liquid, which was nothing but the spirit mother magic liquid.

Inside the body of the spirit mother, which was the nearest one to Ji Hao, a few spirit mermaids and mermen, who had their bodies broken, had been soaking in the liquid. Their bodies were wrapped in a soft layer of light, and Ji Hao saw that their broken bodies had been slowly growing back out.

"What a magical and beautiful creature." praised Ji Hao sincerely.

Gui Ling satisfyingly nodded, delightfully glanced at Starlight, then looked at the other spirit mermaids and mermen, who had been talking to their clansmen which came out from the nest to welcome them. Based on their talents, these spirit mermaids and mermen could all be counted as top-grade geniuses, if they cultivated themselves in Gui Ling's way. The six disciples of Gui Ling who followed her to this world were already top-grade ones, and they were all powerful aquatic creatures. However, compared with these spirit mermaids and mermen, the six disciples were still slightly weaker in the both terms of talent and potential.

If Gui Ling could take these spirit mermaids and mermen as disciples, as a faction of the sect which was founded by Yu Yu and his two brothers, Gui Ling could definitely improve largely, and become the strongest branch among all under Yu Yu's guidance.

"Sister, it's a great opportunity, and a great fortune." Po smilingly stood aside. With admiration, he looked at these spirit mermaids and mermen, but without any jealousy. As he said, this was Gui Ling's opportunity and destiny.

A few elders of these spirit mermaids and mermen swam over and cordially invited Ji Hao and the other cultivators to come into the bodies of those spirit mothers to rest.

Other than the spirit mother magic liquid, the life-force and spirit power contained inside the bodies of spirit mothers were both much denser and stronger than the outside. On staying inside the bodies of these spirit mothers, both the physical bodies and the souls could be perfectly nourished and healed. Those elders had been seeing Ji Hao and the other cultivators as reliable friends and honored guests. Otherwise, a clan of a spirit mermaids and mermen would never easily invite any outsider into their own nest, as they depended on their nest for survival.

Ji Hao and the other cultivators grinningly thanked those elders, then slowly moved towards the beautiful and enormous spirit mothers together. Those spirit mothers seemed to know that those captured clansmen had safely returned, as a constantly changing, splendid glow was released from their bodies. Their long tentacles waved happily, as if they were welcoming Ji Hao and the other cultivators.

The three spirit mothers opened their mouthparts, that looked like silently bloomed flowers. Their mouthparts were the only entrances into their bodies.

When Ji Hao and the other cultivators were going to enter into a spirit mother's body through the long path of the mouthpart, gentle streams of light shone upon their heads, while strong and refreshing waves of life-force suffused the entire space.

Ji Hao raised his head and looked at tens, hundreds, then thousands of extremely beautiful flowers blooming right above their heads. He was stunned completely.

These flowers were shaped like the lily, with thin and transparent petals and a light purple color. In the dark water area, these flowers glowed with a dim light. These flowers were huge, each flower being three-hundred meters in radius, and the petals were thickly covered in tiny light spots.

Without any sign, these flowers bloomed gorgeously in this

empty and dark water area, delivering a soul-shaking beauty.

Soft yet strong vines seemed to reach out directly from the water, with those tremendous flowers quietly blooming on these vines. Large spheres of glow puffed out from the pistils, following which, strong life-force condensed into visible, glistering streams, flowing towards the three enormous spirit mothers, thousands of spirit mermaids and mermen and Ji Hao and the other cultivators.

Ji Hao hesitated for a second, then while sensing the refreshing life-force, loosened his tightened nerves and shut down the defense of his body, letting the beautiful glow streams flow into his body.

Soft and cool streams of life-force merged into Ji Hao's body. No digestion was needed, as this strong life-force was absorbed by Ji Hao's body immediately. Ji Hao's meridians and Magus Acupoints began strengthening and expanding speedily, and within the blink of an eye, his body condition was improved by at least thirty percent, while his physical power was improved by around fifty percent.

What shocked Ji Hao even more was that after absorbing this magical life-force, the seed of Dao of sun floating in his spiritual space had turned hundred percent larger than before!

Not only Ji Hao, Po, Gui Ling and the six disciples of Gui Ling were all staring at these beautiful flowers in a daze. Apparently, Po and Gui Ling had also gained great benefits, that improved their powers at a soaring rate.

Based on the cultivation-level of Po and Gui Ling, even swallowing tons of precious natural materials couldn't improve their powers and cultivations by a slight little bit. However, as this magical life-force merged with their bodies, their powers and cultivations were both improved largely.

"This...this..." Even Po, who had seen countless rare and precious things in the universe, couldn't tell the name of these flowers.

"Quiet life divine flowers, the origin of the life." Starlight looked at these flowers devoutly. Tears sparkled in her beautiful eyes as she continued, "Honored guests, you brought the luck and fortune to our clan. So many quiet life divine flowers... nothing like this had ever happened even in the oldest legends."

Ji Hao remained silent. Luck and fortune?

Did they truly bring any luck and fortune? Ji Hao could swear that if he released his power now, this world would crazily strike him with the fiercest thunder and lightning. These quiet life divine flowers did not bloom for them.

Chapter 822: Quiet Life Divine Fruit

The quiet life divine flowers were still blooming. The dense streams of life-force were like intelligent creatures, automatically merging with the bodies of Ji Hao and the other cultivators.

Obviously, the life-force released from these flowers liked Gui Ling and her six disciples especially, because thirty-percent of all the life-force released from over ten-thousand flowers merged with their bodies, and twenty percent chose to be absorbed by Gui Ling.

Po delightfully smiled and nodded. He could clearly sense that Gui Ling's power had been improving continuously. The already sturdy foundation of Gui Ling's cultivation had now turned even sturdier.

A glowing stream of light of Dao rose from Gui Ling's head. Inside the water-clear stream of light, a fist-sized spirit Dan was spinning. A giant amount of life-force ceaselessly merged with this spirit Dan, and a strong sense of life was released from it gradually.

Crack! Like a tender shoot breaking its cover on a spring night, the spirit Dan cracked into countless light spots and dispelled. Next, a thumb-sized, adorable black tiny turtle floated in the light of Dao. It abruptly raised its head and let out an immature, yet already strong and resonant roar.

"Forming the second body and the second primordial spirit?!" Ji Hao had never seen Po being shocked like this, as Po suddenly, widely opened his eyes. Those eyes had almost popped out from the eye sockets. In a great shock, he looked at the tiny black turtle floating above Gui Ling's head, while tremblingly pointing at it, and couldn't say a word for quite a while.

"Forming the second body and the second primordial spirit!" Gui Ling also had her eyes popped widely out, while staring at Po in both shock and confusion. She then glanced at Po, shook her head and said, "Shifu once said that the cultivation foundation of mine

was way too great. Therefore, I can only cultivate this spirit Dan of mine as my spirit treasure. But if I want to turn it into the second body of mine, that would be nearly impossible, without an especially severe cultivation."

Ji Hao quickly searched through all the knowledge taught by Yu Yu in his head, and finally found some information regarding ‘forming the second body and the second primordial spirit’.

After carefully recalling this part of knowledge that he learned from Yu Yu’s scriptures, Ji Hao felt that his blood was even boiling, and his eyes had even turned slightly red. This was indeed an amazing fortune. Gui Ling was truly the one who gained the greatest benefit in this journey.

So-called ‘forming the second body and the second primordial spirit’ was a top-grade, supreme magic of Dao, created by Yu Yu and his two brothers. Only those especially powerful prehistorical creatures, who had amazing backgrounds and were born with extremely powerful spirit treasures, could be qualified enough to cultivate themselves with this magic of Dao. Simply speaking, a cultivator needed to cultivate his or her accompanying spirit treasure into the second him or herself with immeasurably great efforts.

The second self was tightly related to the original self. They could share a mind, but were completely independent. Every detail of the two selves was exactly the same, from the physical body to the soul, from the cultivation foundation to the talents. The minds of the two selves were exactly the same as well. Additionally, the powers and cultivations of the two selves could be gathered together. This meant that the cultivation of this cultivator would be a hundred percent more efficient than before after he or she attained the second self.

More importantly, if one of these two selves fell, the other one wouldn’t be affected at all. On the contrary, the other self would immediately attain all powers and cultivation of the fallen self.

Therefore, the power wouldn't be weakened. Instead, it would improve by over one-hundred percent.

Such a powerful magic was something only a few among Yu Yu's disciples had the qualification to learn. But Gui Ling was the very first one among Yu Yu's disciples who had successfully learned this magic. This was the very first time even for Po to witness the second self of a cultivator.

Ji Hao popped up his eyes, and couldn't help but laughed loudly out while grabbing Gui Ling's sleeve and saying, "Sister, you're so lucky! Congratulations my sister! Sister, the God and devil water bombs you secretly made, please give me tens of those as a gift! Otherwise, I will be unhappy!"

Gui Ling grinningly nodded, took out a small bag and delightfully threw it to Ji Hao as she said, "You can have it, you can have it! Hehe, hehe... hehe!"

Gui Ling's laughter now sounded even a bit silly. Yu Yu said that she could never easily learn this magic without an especially severe cultivation. But just now, she did that so quickly in this world. Gui Ling didn't even dream that she could attain such a great fortune. She was so happy right now that she grinned, even squeezing her eyes into a pair of curved lines.

Ji Hao grinningly grabbed the small bag, scanned through it with his spiritual space and found at least three to five hundred fist-sized, cyan-colored bombs contained in it. Instantly, Ji Hao carefully put the small bag into his sleeve with satisfaction.

This God and devil water bomb was a special type of bomb invented by Gui Ling. This type of bomb could silently destroy the enemies' primordial spirits in a moment and silently, with a destructive power. These bombs were extremely lethal, and could be counted as the most mysterious and quietest thunder magic among all thunder magics mastered by Yu Yu's disciples.

This type of bomb was not easy to make. Usually, Gui Ling would

only make a few to give to her disciples for protection. Today, Ji Hao gained so many water bombs from her. This proved that Gui Ling was seriously in a good mood now because of this great surprise.

Gui Ling let out a loud series of laughter, then pointed her finger forward. The tiny turtle roared slightly while swaying her head and tail, then transformed into a thin stream of water and disappeared.

This tiny turtle had the same power and cultivation as Gui Ling did, and she was generated by the magical life-force of this world. Therefore, she could move freely in this world without any difficulty, and was even safer than Gui Ling. Gui Ling let her go to wander in this world and cultivate herself freely, without needing to worry about her safety at all.

Po smilingly cupped his hands towards Gui Ling to congratulate her, then her disciples came to Gu Ling to congratulate her as well. Seeing all these, those spirit mermaids and mermen curiously stared at them. They didn't know how Gui Ling made that tiny turtle so suddenly, and why did the sense of power releasing from her body change.

In this very moment, a magical change happened to those, tens of thousands of quiet life divine flowers.

Once the second primordial spirit of Gui Ling was born, all quiet life divine flowers shrunk, their petals withering. Meanwhile, no life-force could be sensed anymore. Instead, a faint aroma spread out. What happened next was a hundred-meter-radius fruit quickly growing out beneath each flower.

In around a quarter of an hour, loud popping noise could be heard without an end, as those fruits burst open, transformed into purple light spots, and merged with the water. Numerous healthy star dolphins happily dashed out from those fruits, then groups of spirit mermaids and mermen slowly swam out. These newborn

mermaids and mermen still had confusion in their eyes.

Ji Hao and the other cultivators popped their eyes out in a great shock once again. Were these star dolphins and spirit mermaids and mermen actually born from the quiet life divine flowers? No wonder Starlight said that these flowers were the origin of life.

A while later, a few extra large fruits cracked. These fruits were only over a hundred meters in radius, but six enormous spirit mothers were spurted out from them. These spirit mothers stretched their long and soft tentacles, letting large clouds of glistering glow spread speedily in the water.

Along with a buzzing noise, the last thousand fruits cracked. From them, countless long spears and swords and blades flew out, along with a beautiful watery light.

Chapter 823: Deep Underwater

Ji Hao floated inside the body of a spirit mother, looking at Starlight and those busy clansmen of hers through the transparent body of the spirit mother.

Except for biological reproduction, spirit mermaids and mermen could also be born straight from the quiet life divine fruits. These magically born spirit mermaids and mermen were more talented and promising than the others. When they matured, they would attain greater powers.

Normally, wherever quiet life divine flowers bloomed, a new clan of spirit mermaids and mermen would emerge. But this time, over ten-thousand quiet life divine flowers bloomed right above Starlight's clan, generating thousands of star dolphins, tens of thousands of newborn spirit mermaids and mermen, along with six spirit mothers. These newborn creatures were meant to become members of Starlight's clan.

Starlight and over a thousand of her clansmen had been excitedly doing all kinds of works by now. They were singing a beautiful melody while quickly swimming in the water. They came to those newborn spirit mermaids and mermen and touched their foreheads with their own.

Ji Hao saw that streams of cyan-white light came out from the eyes of Starlight and her clansmen, gently reaching into the confused eyes of those newborns. A while later, the eyes of those newborn star dolphins and spirit mermaids and mermen turned clear and smart, and one could also find intimacy from their looks.

Behind every single one of Starlight's clansmen, a few newborn star dolphins and a group of spirit mermaids and mermen had been following. These newborns had still been curiously glancing around.

They happily swam around in the water, split the water with

their long tails, and stirred up waves of glowing ripples. Meanwhile, elders in Starlight's clan surrounded the six newborn spirit mothers, and pressed their hands on the enormous bodies of these spirit mothers. Many ancient-styled spell symbols emerged from the surface of the transparent bodies of these spirit mothers. These elders had been singing a simple and ancient-style song while gently and slowly swaying their tails.

Gradually, the tentacles of these enormous spirit mothers began swaying along with the fish tails of those elders with the same frequency, starting beautiful streams of glow in the water.

These newborn spirit mothers let out clear and silvery sings, hearing which, the one Ji Hao had been staying in and the other two happily sang as well. The nine spirit mothers sang gently, responding to each other while having streams of splendid glow flash across their bodies. It looked like a breathtaking rain of shooting stars.

Soon, the nine spirit mothers gathered together, touching each other with their tentacles while connecting their enormous bodies.

Ji Hao sensed the happiness that came deeply from the hearts of these beautiful creatures. He raised his head and looked at this spirit mother that he stayed in, for quite a while, yet failed to find the brain and internal organs of this enormous transparent creature.

Magical creatures, one just could not measure them with the features of those fleshy creatures back in Pan Gu world.

Tens of thousands of newborn spirit mermaids, mermen, and star dolphins had joined Starlight's clan. They lined up orderly and swam into the bodies of the nine spirit mothers. Then, the bodies of the spirit mothers slightly swelled and shrunk, letting out rapid streams of water from their huge mouth parts, pushing their enormous bodies into the deeper water.

Starlight came to Ji Hao, happily talking to him with her silvery

voice.

Ji Hao understood her. Starlight was happy for the expansion of her clan. Tens of thousands of newborn spirit mermaids and mermen all joined Starlight's clan without getting harmed by a little bit. This was a great happy thing that had never happened before. As for those over a thousand great weapons that came out from the divine fruits, Starlight seemed to not pay much attention to them. Even though those weapons were all at the level above world-accompanying spirit treasures, these simple and honest spirit mermaids and mermen didn't value weapons that much.

Starlight talked smilingly with a bird-song-like voice, and Ji Hao patiently listened to her.

Before, the appearance of quiet life divine flowers was completely random. Therefore, clans of spirit mermaid and mermen could hardly ever witness those flowers blooming, not to mention tens of thousands of flowers blooming all at one. Those spirit mermaids and mermen didn't even hear about things like this before.

Divine flowers bloomed and new star dolphins and spirit mermaid and mermen were born, this was a wonderful thing to the clans of spirit mermaids and mermen. However, to newborn spirit mermaid and mermen, this wasn't a good thing. They were new to this world and didn't know how to protect themselves and how to seek for food. Therefore, normally, among a hundred newborn spirit mermaids and mermen and star dolphins, only three to five could manage to survive. They would then join existing clans of spirit mermaid and mermen and become new members of those clans.

This time, those divine flowers bloomed right upon the nest of Starlight's clan, which allowed all newborns to join the clan without being harmed at all. Guided by Starlight and her clansmen, these newborns would be able to learn to use their powers soon.

After absorbing these newborn creatures, Starlight's clan would become a top-grade large clan. Thus, the evil mermaid and mermen clan with the population in hundreds, that Ji Hao had encountered with, would no longer be a threat.

A top-grade large clan of mermaids and mermen, that had tens of thousands of spirit mermaid and mermen, thousands of star dolphins and nine spirit mothers, could be powerful enough to protect themselves in this world. However, before completely absorbing these newborn members, Starlight's clan was still weak, because newborn spirit mermaid and mermen and star dolphin weren't able to protect themselves. Therefore, they had to go deep into the water area, and seek their ancestors' protection.

"Your ancestors' protection?" asked Ji Hao in a surprise while looking at Starlight, "Your ancestors are still alive?"

Starlight confusedly looked at Ji Hao. They communicated through the language magic. Therefore, Ji Hao couldn't make Starlight understand the exact meaning of every single word he said after he transformed his language into soul power vibration. Neither could Starlight answer his question with the most appropriate words.

A while later, Starlight seriously nodded and said, "Alive, also dead. An ancestor, countless ancestors, powerful ancestor...We can't go find them whenever we want... only under this kind of circumstances, we can go seek the ancestors' protection."

Narrowing her eyes, Starlight continued with a solemn look, "In the place of our ancestors, my honored guest, please be quiet. Do not offend asleep ancestors... Otherwise, we will all be punished by our ancestors."

Po swam in with airy moves. On hearing Starlight, he smilingly nodded.

Nine enormous spirit mothers continued moving downwards into deeper areas. They moved fast, and according to Ji Hao's

estimation, they could dive down for tens of thousands of miles within every two hours.

Three days passed like this, and the surrounding area was all dark now, with the only glow being released from the nine spirit mothers.

This boring journey made Ji Hao quite helpless. In this world of water, Ji Hao couldn’t even cultivate himself.

Another big half a day had passed, and finally, Ji Hao saw a cyan-white light shining from down below. He activated all of his eye power and looked down. Then once again, he was genuinely shocked by this magical world.

Chapter 824: The Holy Land of Spirit Mermaids and Mermen

What appeared before Ji Hao's eyes was a land.

The land was formed from ice, perfectly smooth and flat. The cyan-white ice was clear and transparent, completely flawless, that one could see through it with a single glance. Down below, the boundless land with an unknown thickness had been glowing with a faint cyan-white light, giving a magical peaceful feeling that made Ji Hao feel even his soul wasn't willing to move at all.

If that were simply an ice land, Ji Hao wouldn't be so amazed. After all, he had seen too many magical scenes back in Pan Gu world, such as floating lands, mountains, and all kinds of dangerous yet wonderful places. An ice land was far from enough to shock him.

What made Ji Hao largely open his eyes and hold his breath, disabling him from saying any word for quite a while, were things inside the ice land.

Those were countless spirit mermaids and mermen, huddling their bodies and silently lying inside the boundless Ice land, with peaceful smiles on their faces. They were with the same pose, the same look, and the spacing distance between each of them was also exactly the same.

The tremendous ice land was divided into countless cells, which were around three meters in square. In the middle of each cell was a smiling spirit mermaid or merman. Numerous spirit mermaids and mermen were smilingly inlaid in the ice land, which had no visible boundary.

Ji Hao's fine hair straightened up one after another while staring at those spirit mermaids and mermen, which were inlaid in the ice. He spread out his strong spirit power and scanned the area with a

radius of ten-thousand miles. His spirit power easily drilled deeply into the ice, and scanned across the bodies of those spirit mermaid and mermen over and over again.

These spirit mermaids and mermen were dead. Their bodies had already turned into a jade-like material, but their heads remained in the state between alive and dead, because a jelly-like tissue that was contained in the brain of each of them.

Slight soul power vibration had been releasing from the brain of each of these spirit mermaids and mermen, and the soul power vibration released from all of them were exactly the same. Through his spiritual power, Ji Hao found that these soul power vibrations released from the brains of these spirit mermaids and mermen had merged perfectly into one. Or in other words, the jelly-like brains of these spirit mermaid and mermen, which were inlaid in the ice land, had already formed a unity, which was an organism in itself.

Elders of Starlight's clan swam out from a spirit mother with a group of clansmen, who possessed relatively higher social status, following behind. These group of people carefully reached to the ice land, with some things, that Ji Hao couldn't really identify, held in their hands.

Those elders began singing that beautiful song again while gently swaying their tails, and placing the glowing things held in their hands on the ice land. Magical light streams came up from deep inside the ice land and wrapped around the glowing things, which were placed on the ice. Then, all of those glowing objects disappeared.

The heads of those spirit mermaids and mermen lying inside the Ice land sparked with a faint light simultaneously. Next, the soul power vibration released from their bodies was instantly improved. The soul power vibration released from countless spirit mermaids and mermen gathered together, eventually turning into an incomparably strong and dreadful spirit power.

This spirit power seemed to be as powerful as the will of the world itself. It covered the bodies of all spirit mermaids and mermen, star dolphins and spirit mothers. Then, Starlight and her clansmen all smiled, seeming to be happy, relaxed and conformable. They felt safe now, just like babies returning to the arms of their mothers.

A magical humming came from deep inside the ice land. The melody was slow and beautiful, making people want to sleep so much, just like the lullaby that Ji Hao heard back in his previous life.

Po, Ji Hao, Gui Ling and the other cultivators were all disabled from moving at the moment. That spirit power was way too strong, and even powerful beings like Po and Gui Ling could not resist. Po seemed to be quite struggling, as he sent a message to Ji Hao and Gui Ling with difficulty by using his own spirit power, a spirit power which was only slightly weaker than Yu Yu's spirit power.

In the next moment, this spirit power surged into Ji Hao's spiritual spaces like a flood. Following that, a warm and gentle voice sounded in the spiritual spaces of Ji Hao and the other cultivators. As this voice came, Starlight and her clansmen had all fallen into a deep sleep.

"I...saw...you...coming..."

The warm and peaceful voice said word by word, especially slowly. Along with his voice, the brains of all spirit mermaids and mermen laying in the ice sparkled with the same frequency, like countless fireflies.

Ji Hao tried his best to look at this ice land, and even showed his teeth. With his eye power, he could see things over ten-thousand miles away with a glance. But now, matter how hard he tried, he couldn't see the bounds of this ice land. Spirit mermaids or mermen was sealed in this ice land in every nine cubic meters,

then exactly how many spirit mermaids and mermen were sealed in the ice?

"May I ask your name?" said Po with a gentle voice.

This spirit power communicated directly with the primordial spirits of Ji Hao and the other cultivators. Therefore, this conversation was made with spirit power vibrations, and it happened extremely fast. Everyone in this conversation could immediately get each other's meaning.

"Names...are...meaningless..."

"If...you...have...to...know...Mother Spirit..."

Sparkling images were sent into Ji Hao's mind, that allowed Ji Hao to 'witness' the scenes that happened when this world was created.

A beautiful mermaid floated upon an enormous water sphere, with a bottle held in her left hand and a bead in her right hand. These two dazzlingly shining treasures fiercely struck on the gray water sphere. Then, eye-piercing light burst out, and a world with surging water was created with this single move.

The beautiful mermaid sat on a transparent lotus with her tail coiled, while sparkling and sticky blood dripped down from her mouth's corner. But she was smiling, gratifyingly looking at the world she created.

Nevertheless, before her smile faded, a large group of oddly shaped Chaos creatures roared over from the Chaos void and launched waves of attack to this mermaid.

After a great war, the mermaid's body was destroyed, and only her true spirit was left existing. However, those Chaos creatures were mostly killed by her, and only an especially powerful one had half a body remained.

This powerful creature launched the last, fiercest attack with its remaining half body and all of its power, splitting the true spirit of

the mermaid into two; they were colored blue-purple and cyan-white. Afterwards, the two dimly glowing spheres of light quickly merged in the storm.

"All...spirit mermaids and mermen...are me...not me...born by me...should die in me..."

"When...spirit mermaids and mermen...tired in the heart... return...to...Holy Land...merge back in me..."

"All spirits...into one...not alive...not dead...eternal...lonely..."

Without any change of tone, the peaceful voice stated the truth of this world.

"This world...is...a dream...of mine...no...more...power of... creation..."

Chapter 825: A Shocking Discovery

A cliché, at least to Ji Hao, this story was a cliché.

But to Po and Gui Ling, every single word of this story told by this strong spirit power was like a sound of the great Dao. Their bodies quivered slightly while clear lights surged above their heads. Meanwhile, strong power vibrations were released from their bodies. Obviously, they were now in a magical state, and were quite obsessed.

Unlike them, Ji Hao wasn' truly touched by the story.

It was nothing more but a powerful Chaos creature who cultivated herself through a long period of time, then finally opened up the world, which was born with her, a world that was dominated by the water power. Unfortunately, this powerful creature didn't have enough friends, so she didn't even invite a friend to help and protect her when she was going to create a world. Consequently, she suffered a besiege launched by countless Chaos creatures, who tried to gain something from this newly created world.

With the power of the newly created world and the advantage as the creator of the world, this powerful creature killed all enemies, but her true spirit was struck into two by the last enemy, with the price of its own life.

Good and evil, kind and fierce, creative and destructive, her true spirit was turned into two extreme opposites.

The owner of this spirit power, who called herself Mother Spirit, had barely taken control of the creative power of this world. After she accumulated a certain amount of energy, she would let quiet life divine flowers bloom in random places to release large numbers of star dolphins, spirit mermaids, and mermen. The creator of this world was killed before a mature life cycle system was generated. Therefore, every newborn star dolphin, spirit

mermaid, and merman was an independent individual, derived from a tiny part of Mother Spirit's soul. Their thoughts, their sadness, happiness, anger and fear, all their life experiences could be sensed by Mother Spirit anytime, just like reflections in the mirrors.

Mother Spirit was like a giant, who was having an endless dream, and each of the countless creatures in the dream was a part of her. In Mother Spirit's 'dream', when these spirit mermaids and mermen, who had immortal lives, got tired of their lives and felt the exhaustion of their souls, they would be impelled by their souls to come to this Holy Land, where Mother Spirit was sleeping in. They would merge their own bodies with the continuously expanding ice land.

The bodies of these spirit mermaids and mermen would transform into a magical type of jade, while their brains would transform into 'water soul'. Thus, the brain of each spirit mermaid or merman was like a brain cell of Mother Spirit, and a part of her body.

The entire ice land was the body of Mother Spirit, while every spirit mermaid or mermen sealed in the ice was a grain of her body. To Mother Spirit, creating a mermaid or merman or a star dolphin only required a slight part of her soul. During their growth process, each tiny part of the soul would gradually absorb powers from the world and grow. When they returned to the Holy Land, their soul powers, which had improved by hundreds, even thousands of times, would be given back to Mother Spirit and make her stronger.

"Healing...this...is...me...healing...myself..."

The peaceful voice resounded across the minds of Ji Hao and the other cultivators.

"Not...so...hopeful...but...still...a...hope..."

Mother Spirit understood that spreading out tiny parts of her

souls, allowing these thin grains of souls to grow and strengthen themselves, then giving their powers back to her, the efficiency of this healing method was too low. Perhaps, she could never be the same as before, but at the very least, this healing method allowed her to recover.

Even though it was only a tiny hope, she would keep doing it.

"Who are evil mermaids and mermen?" Ji Hao asked a question.

Mother Spirit sighed heavily.

Evil mermaids and mermen were creatures generated by the other half of her true spirit, the evil half.

Mother Spirit creating these spirit mermaid and mermen to heal herself, while the other half of her true spirit chose to devour Spirit Mother's power to strengthen itself. The evil half of true spirit created those evil mermaids and mermen to hunt and eat spirit mermaids and mermen, especially their brains, which contained their soul powers. By doing this, the evil half of true spirit had gained some powers back during the past countless years.

The evil half of true spirit was good at fighting and killing. Therefore, in terms of strength, it was slightly stronger than Mother Spirit. As a consequence, it had taken an advantage on controlling the natural will of this world.

"Therefore...I...saw...you...coming..."

"Therefore...I...made...you...come..."

Said Mother Spirit slowly with that gentle and peaceful voice. She found Ji Hao and the other cultivators came to this world, observed them for a while, and instinctively realized that Ji Hao could help her. Therefore, she consumed a great energy to let tens of thousands of divine flowers bloom upon Starlight's clan, drawing Ji Hao and the other cultivators to the Holy Land.

"Help...me...remerge..."

"I...will...help...you..."

"Help? Not reward?" Ji Hao sensitively sensed the change of the language chosen by Mother Spirit.

"Same...sense of power...A...while...ago..."

Another series of images were sent into the minds of Ji Hao and the others, as Mother Spirit showed something she saw to Ji Hao and the other cultivators. What she showed did not only shock Ji Hao and the other cultivators, but also scared them.

The world was covered in dark clouds and rain. Countless water columns poured down from the sky, with millions of evil mermaids and mermen standing on the surface of the water, showing their teeth and waving their weapons, crazily attacking people standing on a black cloud.

Nine enormous snake heads reached out from the black cloud, opened their jaws and showed their long and sharp teeth. Large streams of black and sticky venom spurted out from those teeth, splashing into the water like a heavy rain.

Countless evil mermaids and mermen howled shrilly as the venom spread speedily out in the water. All evil mermaids and mermen who touched the venom had their bodies quickly melting, and turned into puddles of liquid within the span of a few breaths.

The venom spread in the water at a shockingly high rate, such that within ten minutes, the venom had spread to tens of thousands of miles in radius. Within this area, all evil mermaid and mermen were poisoned to death, every single one of them.

The world was enraged. The natural powers under the control of the evil part of true spirit generated countless watery thunderbolts, striking towards the nine snake heads. But a middle-aged man in a long robe and tall hat reached out his right hand, slightly clenched his slim fingers in the air, and crushed all thunderbolts.

"This world is not bad... It can station the troops of our Gong Gong Family in the future!"

The man with a tall hat proudly talked to the man with an erect eye between his eyebrows, then laughed out loud.

"Disha, you’re indeed honest. I am now willing to cooperate with you."

Chapter 826: They Have Been Here

Gong Gong had been here.

Di Cha, who was now named Dishi Cha, who had thrown the entire society of the non-humankind in Pan Gu world into a great mess, and indirectly destroyed Liang Zhu City, had been to this world too. Even Xiang Liu, who had two of his heads chopped off by Ji Hao, and was humiliated so much in front of countless people, had also been here. A direct conflict had burst between Xiang Liu and those evil mermaids and mermen, and millions of mermaids and mermen were poisoned to death by him.

Mother Spirit's words were easy to understand. The sense of power released from Gong Gong and Xiang Liu was the same with the sense of power released from Ji Hao, Po and the other cultivators; that special sense of power was from Pan Gu world. Ji Hao and the other cultivators might not be too sensitive to this special sense of power, but to powerful beings like Mother Spirit, it was as distinct as a candlelight in the pure darkness.

More images and sounds had been emerging inside Ji Hao and the other cultivators' minds.

On the dark cloud, Gong Gong proudly and satisfyingly held his hands behind his body while glancing around. The sky was covered in dark clouds, and the vast ocean was boundless. Gong Gong seemed to be rather satisfied with this world.

"With a base here, I ought to become the dominator of the world. Zhu Rong, human emperor, you shall all just kneel in front of me!"

Observing for quite a long while, Gong Gong laughed out loud while waving his hands. The great power released by him raised tens of thousands of meter tall waves, roaring around his body. Xiang Liu and the other few of his ministers, who were all hideously shaped, submissively kneeled on the dark cloud, shouting a slogan and trying their best to flatter Gong Gong.

"Hehe, hehehe, hehehehe," Gong Gong laughed wildly and insolently.

"Hehe, hehehe, hehehehe," Di Cha laughed with a bland, and soft voice.

"Only one...can be the... dominator. If he becomes the dominator...where...will you be? Therefore...he's your...enemy!" Mother Spirit's voice came again.

Ji Hao and Po and Gui Ling glanced at each other, then nodded. Although Mother Spirit's true spirit was split into two, she still had a clear mind. Gong Gong wanted to be the dominator of the world, and just like Mother Spirit said, only one could fit that role. If Gong Gong truly became the dominator of Pan Gu world, Ji Hao, Po, Gui Ling and all the others would either become Gong Gong's slaves or be killed by him, without any other possibility.

Therefore, Gong Gong was their enemy.

Without question, Mother Spirit knew clearly about the powers of Ji Hao, Gui Ling and Po. Gong Gong, Xiang Liu and the other few of his ministers all possessed the water power, but among Ji Hao and the other cultivators, Po wasn't with the water power, and Ji Hao's power was purely strong and positive, completely opposite to the water power. According to what Gong Gong said and the nature of his power, Mother Spirit concluded that Ji Hao was definitely not on his side.

"Help you to re-merge with the other half of yours is not impossible." Ji Hao swam forward, looking at the tremendous ice land and said in a deep voice, "But what help can you give us?"

Mother Spirit's voice came again into Ji Hao and the other cultivators' minds, along with images.

From the dark cloud, Gong Gong and Dishi Cha flew up into the sky and crushed countless thunderbolts launched by this world itself. Then, as a dazzling beam of light flashed across, they left

this world. However, a child-like, extremely ugly minister under Gong Gong's command, who had a watery light flowing on the surface of his body in streams, stayed, with over a hundred heavily armored warriors. After Gong Gong and the others left, this child-like minister and those warriors jumped directly into the water, killed a few reckless evil mermaids and mermen, who rushed over in an attempt to hunt them, then quickly dove into the deeper area and disappeared.

Stutteringly, Mother Spirit told Ji Hao and the other cultivators that, although Gong Gong and Dishi Cha had left this world, a batch of their people stayed, hiding in this world till now. Mother Spirit said that she could help Ji Hao and the other cultivators find these people and capture them alive.

"Your enemies...I don't like wars...but I know...what you want... in wars!"

Mother Spirit's voice came ceaselessly. She never liked fighting and wars, but after all, she was a powerful being who could create a world in the Chaos; she was knowledgable and experienced. Therefore, she understood that the minister left in this world by Gong Gong was certainly useful to Ji Hao and his friends. She didn't know how useful could that minister be, but since Gong Gong had clearly expressed his intention of becoming the dominator, his minister would surely be useful to Ji Hao and the others. As long as Ji Hao and his friends agreed to help her defeat the other half of her true spirit and allow her to swallow the evil half and merge with it, she could help Ji Hao and his friends capture that minister of Gong Gong alive.

Ji Hao glanced at Po, while Po and Gui Ling looked at him simultaneously. Then, Po and Gui Ling smiled together, nodding to Ji Hao.

Without a doubt, Po and Gui Ling weren't good at bargaining, but bargaining was one of Ji Hao's specialties. So, this needed to be left to Ji Hao!

Coughing slightly, Ji Hao held his hands behind his body, while the Heaven and Earth golden bridge released a golden beam of light from the spot between his eyebrows. Along with that beam of light, a strong force, that was powerful enough to tear the sky and flash across the Chaos, flashed in the water area.

Mother Spirit's strong spirit power paused immediately. Obviously, she knew how great the power released by Ji Hao was.

"We can return to our own world right now. As long as we tell everybody what we've seen in here, if Gong Gong truly had one of his ministers staying in this world, it wouldn't really matter to us." Firstly, Ji Hao showed an attitude of negotiation, indicating that the information provided by Mother Spirit wasn't too valuable to him.

"What...do...you...want?" Mother Spirit sounded a bit helpless, and also anxious. She could sense the great powers possessed by Po and Gui Ling, and from Ji Hao, she also grasped a dreadful sense of danger.

For countless years, this was the first time for Mother Spirit to meet people who could be helpful to her. More importantly, unlike Gong Gong and Dishi Cha, Mother Spirit sensed a terrifying danger from Ji Hao and the other cultivators. However, no actual threat truly existed. Which meant, Ji Hao and his friends were powerful enough to hurt Mother Spirit, but they wouldn't take the initiative to harm her. This was the most important factor, the factor that allowed Mother Spirit to cooperate with them.

Ji Hao remained silent for a while, then abruptly threw out a question.

"When did they come to this world?"

Mother Spirit pondered for a while and gave a time span. She computed the time with the natural day and night cycle of this world. Ji Hao did a rough calculation and shockingly found that Gong Gong and Dishi Cha came to this world over six-hundred

years ago!

Had Gong Gong already met Dishi Cha before six-hundred years?

What had they truly been planning on? Did Gong Gong truly want to become the dominator of the world? That was not easy at all.

Narrowing his eyes, and pondering silently for a while, Ji Hao prepared to start talking. But abruptly, the mysterious man’s voice came from his spiritual space.

"Ask her, if the sun of this world is useful to her. If not, ask her to give you the sun of this world!"

Ji Hao was shocked, nearly vomiting blood because of the soul-deep shock.

Chapter 827: Evil Mermaids and Mermen Siege

Nine star dolphins moved swiftly in the deep water area, leaving long glowing traces behind them. Through numerous invisible teleporting whirlpools, these star dolphins carried Ji Hao and the other cultivators to cross a long distance.

Ji Hao rode on the back of a star dolphin, in the tail of the small group. A human-head-sized water ball floated above his head, closely following behind him, quickly moving forward. Inside the water ball, a stunningly beautiful mermaid was faintly visible.

The mermaid inside this water ball was Mother Spirit.

After a series of bargaining, Mother Spirit accepted all of Ji Hao's request without any hesitation.

Po and Gui Ling mounted on another two star dolphins with a slightly shocked look. They followed closely behind Ji Hao. Po and Gui Ling and the six disciples of hers didn't think that Ji Hao could be so 'greedy', and more surprisingly, Mother Spirit had actually accepted all requests brought up by Ji Hao without hesitation.

Improving the body conditions and potentials of Gui Ling and her six disciples, this was easy. Quickly improving their cultivations and powers, allowing them to understand the great Dao of water in this world, this was easy too. Mother Spirit could do all these without any difficulty.

Except for natural materials with the water power, she had to collect all other types of natural materials in this world and give them to Po, including all kinds of pre-world and after-world great treasures. In other words, all treasures with non-water-power would belong to Po. This request was accepted by Mother Spirit quickly as well.

Nevertheless, in addition to all this, Ji Hao had also asked Mother

Spirit to give him the sun in this world, that required Mother Spirit to split the sun from this world, seal it by herself and give to Ji Hao. This shocked Po and Gui Ling so badly, that they were still trying to emerge out of it by now.

To Qi cultivators, the balance of the world, of all types of powers, and the integrity of the natural law of the world were essential to the existence of a world, and this was a ‘truth’, rooted deeply in the minds of almost all cultivators.

Although this world was dominated by the water power, it still had a sun. And since a sun existed in this world, it must have a significant meaning to this world, and it must be not replaceable. Without the sun, the natural cycle of Dao of this world would certainly have a huge problem.

However, Ji Hao asked Mother Spirit to give him the sun, and Mother Spirit agreed to do so for real. They had even seriously signed a true spirit blood contract! The true spirit blood contract could never be violated, not even by a creator of a world.

Did Mother Spirit truly agree to give Ji Hao the sun, and the great Dao of sun of this world?

Po’s head had now been buzzing. Without the power of sun, what would this world be like? A world with purely negative powers? A world domineered merely by a single part of the great Dao? Would such a world even work? How would it remain existing? How would it grow stronger?

This was completely against Po’s world view that he built bit by bit ever since he became a cultivator. He just couldn’t understand why Ji Hao would bring up such a ’silly’ request, and why Mother Spirit would ‘recklessly’ agree to do so.

"I have to go consult Shifu when we return... How can this happen?" murmured Po with his eyebrows knitted, as all kinds of thoughts just tangled in his head.

Star dolphins swiftly moved forwards while Ji Hao sneakily talked to the mysterious man in his own head with his eyes narrowed.

"Po and Gui Ling were scared," While clicking his tongue, Ji Hao said, "I truly asked her to give me the sun and the great Dao of sun of this world."

"What is to be scared of? Young people with poor experiences... Worlds with a single type of power are not so rare."

"Have you seen a world with a single type of power? Seriously, without any other powers?"

"Powers with pure gold power, pure fire power, pure earth power, pure water power, pure green power, pure thunder power, pure light power, pure dark power...Even a world formed by a single stream of spirit power...Nothing is strange."

Remaining silent for a while, the mysterious man continued slowly, "A world with a single type of power, although is simple, but it’s pure because of its simpleness. If nothing wrong happens, not many changes will happen. But extremely simply and straightforwardly, the whole world will be like an enormous body, the second body of its creator."

Before Ji Hao said anything, the mysterious man continued blandly, "This Mother Spirit, if I’m right, at first intended to create a world purely with the water power, but she was not powerful enough. Therefore, some other types of power were generated after the world was created. Therefore, this world was not as pure as she expected."

"Because this world was not pure enough, some other creatures grasped an opportunity to easily broke into this world to attack her, who was already exhausted. This sun actually means nothing to her. If you don’t take it, in the future, she will surely abandon the sun and the other parts of the great Dao, sooner or later."

Ji Hao nodded, as if he understood something.

However, Mother Spirit wanted a pure, extreme and simple world, which reminded Ji Hao of the colorfulness of Pan Gu world. Pan Gu world had a sun and stars, storms, rains, thunders, lightning, ice, snow, flowers blooming and withering, tides rising and falling, and countless creatures living and breeding; that world had death and new lives.

A colorful world and a simple and pure world that Mother Spirit wanted, which one was better?

"Pan Gu world and Mother Spirit's world have different ways of developing." Pondering for a while, the mysterious man cautiously expressed his own point of view, "Pan Gu world is pursuing the great Dao while Mother Spirit and the owners of the other pure worlds are pursuing the 'extreme Dao'. Without reaching the peak, who can tell which one is stronger and which one is weaker?"

Pausing for a second, the mysterious man chuckled and said, "But of course, in my opinion, the great Dao is better than the 'extreme Dao'. However, the great Dao is immeasurable... Reaching the top is difficult, way, way too difficult."

Star dolphins swished in the water, moving forwards for countless miles. Abruptly, a muffled series of thunder came from a long distance away.

Star dolphins didn't need any guide, and just swam straight up towards the water surface.

Once they popped out from the water surface, Ji Hao saw a sky-shaking golden thunderbolt descending from the sky, striking fiercely on the water surface.

At least a thousand evil mermaids and mermen had been quacking furiously. Their bodies were struck broken by the golden thunderbolt, flying up from the water and being sent tens of miles away. However, countless evil mermaids and mermen crazily

gathered on the water surface, quacking madly while launching all kinds of attack towards where the golden thunderbolt came from.

A fierce gale roared on the water surface, raising rampant waves. Occasionally, a wave reached thousands of meter high, as white foams splashed to a long distance away. Within the foams, countless evil mermaids and mermen had been waving their claws and showing their teeth, raising stronger waves. Their loud quacks even seemed to vibrate the whole world, making Ji Hao and all the other cultivators feel dizzy.

Far, far away, from the direction attacked by these evil mermaids and mermen, a raging voice could be heard.

"You lowly creatures! Just kneel and obey. Otherwise, don’t blame us for having no mercy!"

Po laughed, "Is that Bao Xiang? I broke his tusks the last time. Have those tusks grown back already? Why is he shameless enough to come out?"

Chapter 828: Availing the Opportunity to Get In

On the water surface, an enormous water lotus had been spinning slowly.

Bao Xiang, Kong Chan and the other sixteen cultivators sat on the seedpod of the lotus with their legs crossed, while releasing faintly golden streams of light, forming an especially sturdy great magic formation. Using this formation, they were firmly fending against the fierce attacks launched by countless evil mermaids and mermen in the surrounding area.

No one knew where did all these evil mermaids and mermen come from. Millions of evil mermaids and mermen growled hoarsely while sending up large waves of water and lightning bolts, striking towards the great formation wave by wave, without an end.

The attacks launched by these evil mermaids and mermen were simple, watery thunderbolts mixed with large numbers of icebergs and snowflakes, roaring over along with a fierce gale; these were all of their attacking methods. However, the number of those evil mermaids and mermen was way too huge, and many of them had been holding all kinds of powerful weapons. Therefore, their attacks gave Bao Xiang and the others a tremendous pressure.

The brightly shining golden great magic formation was forced to sway, that made the bodies of Bao Xiang and the others shake ceaselessly as well. After the span of every three to five breaths, Bao Xiang and Kong Chan would wave their hands, combine the powers of all eighteen of them into a strong force, and send into the sky. After that, a sky-shaking golden thunderbolt would descend from the sky, killing or wounding hundreds, and even thousands of evil mermaids and mermen.

Another thousands of evil mermaids and mermen stood on the

petals of the water lotus, loudly yelling and screaming while wielding their weapons, attacking those evil mermaids and mermen who had been rushing over from all direction. These evil mermaids and mermen standing on the lotus had their bodies covered with a faint golden light, that provided them with a strong defense. Evil mermaids and mermen coming from the water were killed by them one after another, but they only suffered limited injuries.

"Bao Xiang, Kong Chan, indeed the favorite disciples of those two. The golden steel magic formation that was secretly taught in their sect is known as the most powerful defensive magic formation in the world. The fame seems to be true." Po smiled and said while looking at Bao Xiang and Kong Chan, who were being attacked by those evil mermaids and mermen, with a strange sparkle in his eyes. "If our Shifu was here, his hands might get itchy again. He would want to give a hack and try the power of that golden steel magic formation."

Gui Ling and her disciples smiled too while looking at Bao Xiang and Kong Chan, seeming to be taking pleasure in their misfortune.

Bao Xiang and Kong Chan were all powerful beings who existed ever since the prehistorical era of Pan Gu world. Same as Priest Corpse, they followed the guide of the two, who were called ‘crappy flower and corroded wood’ by Yu Yu. Kong Chan and Bao Xian had been enemies of Po and Gui Ling for a long time.

All these years, for all kinds of reasons, they had fought countless times, for treasures, disciples, places and other things. The hatred had been growing between them since long ago. Today, seeing Bao Xiang and Kong Chan being attacked, Po and Gui Ling would only feel glad, and would never, ever give a helping hand.

"How did they come to this place?" asked Ji Hao while frowning.

"They...followed you...all the way!" Inside the water ball, Mother Spirit slightly opened her mouth and said, "Golden shuttle...spirit

talisman...followed you here."

Po snorted coldly and sneered, "Golden shuttle? That piece? That piece was attained by Priest Hua, and can move across the Chaos too, just far less powerful than the Heaven and Earth golden bridge. Spirit talisman? Hehe, those two have made their moves once again."

"Since the Heaven and Earth golden bridge has fallen in our hands, it would be strange if those two don't sneakily make their moves. But, they followed quite tightly indeed, even chasing us all the way to here." Gui Ling responded blandly.

"Evil magic...Evil mermaids and mermen obey..." Mother Spirit's voice turned a bit weird as she said slowly, "She...is enraged... attack..."

Ji Hao and Po and Gui Ling glanced at each other, then laughed out loud together.

Priest Hua and Priest Mu's disciples liked to forcibly turn people into their disciples with a secret magic. But this time, they had obviously messed up. Those evil mermaids and mermen were generated by the other half of Mother Spirit. Forcibly turning these mermaids and mermen was as same as stealing a part of her soul. Of course, she would ben enraged.

Being attacked by millions of evil mermaids and mermen, Bao Xiang and Kong Chan asked for this.

Countless enormous waves rose from all directions, as more evil mermaids and mermen rushed over. The dark clouds in the sky grew denser and denser, releasing countless dark thunderbolts, dazzling towards Bao Xiang and Kong Chan.

Some relatively more powerful evil mermaids and mermen rushed up into the sky, treading on watery clouds and swooshing in the sky, while launching attacks on Bao Xiang and Kong Chan from the air.

The great pressure squeezed a bitter look out of the faces of Bao Xiang and Kong Chan and the others. Bao Xiang sighed helplessly while taking out his golden pestle again, releasing dazzling streams of golden light which merged with the golden magic formation.

From behind Kong Chan's body, a golden light stream dazzled up into the sky, within which, an enormous cicada faced the screaming gale and roared resonantly. Afterward, the cicada let out a golden and shining branch from its mouthpart. Golden leaves on the branch released countless fish-like spell symbols, also merging with the golden steel magic formation.

The other sixteen cultivators all released their powers, taking out their treasures and merging their powers with the great formation, improving its defensive power.

No matter how hard those evil mermaids and mermen attacked, the golden magic formation stayed perfectly unmoved.

Bao Xiang laughed viciously and coldly, then said in a harsh tone, "You know nothing about kindness and mercy. Today, just let us save you all."

The golden pestle was wielded while tens of thousands of meters long, hazy images of that golden pestle descended from the sky like countless bolts of lightning. They struck fiercely on the heads of those evil mermaids and mermen. Bone cracking noise could then be heard without an end, as tens of thousands of evil mermaids and mermen had their heads broken, and bodies burst into countless water drops, falling into the ocean.

Deep thunders came from the sky while a tremendous spirit power descended. Meanwhile, all evil mermaids and mermen seemed to be frenzied.

"We...move...her nest should be...empty..." said Mother Spirit with a gentle voice.

Ji Hao, Po and Gui Ling nodded. Each gave a deep shout and

drove those star dolphins to dive back into the water, moving forward swiftly.

Moving underwater for quite a long while, they left the messy battlefield far behind and got through a few rapidly spinning whirlpools, as a bright light abruptly appeared in front of Ji Hao and the others.

Over ten enormous evil mermaids and mermen nests floated near the last whirlpool, while thousands of evil mermaids and mermen lazily hovered around their nests. Faint blue and dark purple glow was released from their bodies, lighting this entire area up.

Unexpectedly seeing Ji Hao and the others rushing out of the whirlpool, these evil mermaids and mermen paused simultaneously, then opened their mouths and shouted out. They showed their sharp teeth and dashed towards Ji Hao and the other cultivators.

A strong spirit power that seemed to be as great as the will of the world itself came from not far away, and struck violently on the bodies of Ji Hao and the other cultivators.

Ji Hao growled and activated the sword formation and the four swords that he borrowed from Yu Yu, as quickly as he could. The sword formation roared across the entire area with a radius of hundreds of thousands of miles, while the four long swords merged with it. Afterward, magical lights with four different colors dazzled straight up.

Billions of fierce streams of sword power screamed across. Those more than ten nests and thousands of evil mermaids and mermen slightly quivered before they turned into nothingness in an instant.

This area was lit up, as a divine light released from the sword formation was bright enough to lighten up the whole world.

Right in front of Ji Hao, an enormous ice pyramid, that had an

angular shape, was silently floating in the water.

Chapter 829: Remerging

The divine light released from the sword formation lit up the enormous pyramid in the dark water area.

The ice pyramid was faint purple in color, sharp at the top and tremendously huge at the bottom. Countless evil mermaids and mermen with twisted faces were sealed in the pyramid.

Unlike those spirit mermaids and mermen peacefully sleeping in that enormous ice land, evil mermaids and mermen sealed in the pyramid were all with twisted faces. They had their eyes popped out, with all kinds of weird postures. Obviously, they struggled desperately before they died. The bodies of some evil mermaids and mermen were even broken, and were thickly covered in bloody wounds.

"My...children...come back willingly...when...tired..."

"Hers...forcibly...devoured...as offering!"

Mother Spirit's voice came and explained the reason why these evil mermaids and mermen looked so twisted. Before she finished her speech, the brains of those countless evil mermaids and mermen shone with a purple light, that looked like dim flames blazing in a grave. Countless extremely thin purple lights quickly gathered up from the bottom of the pyramid, and within the span of a few breaths, the water in the top area of the pyramid was pushed away by a strong force.

Rapid undercurrents spread out from the top of the pyramid. Those raging undercurrents were as fierce as dragons, roaring towards all directions. The sword light released a dazzling light and shredded all undercurrents one after another.

Po and Gui Ling' looks turned dark. The power released from the pyramid had already surpassed the upper limits of their own powers. If those undercurrents struck directly on their bodies,

they wouldn't be able to fend themselves easily, despite all their power.

If Yu Yu didn't lend Ji Hao his sword formation, which was the most powerful magic formation of his, only this wave of undercurrent could kill Ji Hao and all the other cultivators.

A loud quack came from above the pyramid, as the dim purple light sparkled. Meanwhile, a nearly five-thousand-meter tall, beautiful mermaid showed up above the pyramid. She coiled her long fishtail around the top of the pyramid while looking down at Ji Hao and the others with a fierce pair of eye.

In the water ball floating upon Ji Hao's head, Mother Spirit raised her head, looking at the gigantic mermaid.

Both of them paused slightly as they made an eye contact. Mother Spirit sighed slightly while the gigantic mermaid, whose body was entirely dark purple color, raised her head and furiously roared towards the sky, her eyes filled with craze. Next, she wielded both of her arms, then a bottle and a bead, which had both been releasing a stunningly great sense of power, appeared in her hands.

Ji Hao showed her teeth in shock, then helplessly glanced at Mother Spirit inside the water ball.

Ji Hao thought he could easily gain a great fortune through the deal he made with Mother Spirit, but he didn't know that Mother Spirit never meant to let Ji Hao gain any easy benefits. According to the images Mother Spirit showed Ji Hao, when she created the world, the two treasures held in her hands was a bottle and a bead. These two treasures were the ones that helped Mother Spirit to create the world. However, they were now held in the hands of the evil half of the true spirit, and Ji Hao and his friends had to deal with this evil half of the true spirit. Seeing this, Ji Hao, Po and Gui Ling' faces had all twisted!

Waves of dreadfully great spirit power crushed over. The four-

colored divine light released by the sword formation hovered, creating a heavy rain of light and firmly fending against the strong spirit power.

Following an angry quack, the gigantic mermaid screamed furiously like a wild beast, without showing any sign of communicating. Contained in the spirit power vibration released from her was nothing but the instinctive desire of hunting and killing.

Buzz! A black watery light dazzled out of the bottle held in the hand of the gigantic mermaid.

The whole world seemed to spin along with the black watery light. Within this boundless, vast water area, all the water had been rotating. Every undercurrent, every whirlpool, every water molecule had been randomly spinning.

Yu Yu’s sword formation quaked intensively, as the four-colored light abruptly stopped moving. Faintly, a part of the divine light was twisted, seeming to begin spinning along with the movements of the water streams.

"Brother Po!" Ji Hao shouted out.

The sword formation was affected, and generated a terrifyingly great counterforce. Ji Hao sensed a great pain from his internal organs, and felt that his primordial spirit was even going to be torn into pieces. He let out a stream of blood, then hurriedly gave up on controlling the sword formation.

Po gave a raging growl. From the top of his head, five clear streams of mist swooshed up for over ten-thousand miles. A dense cloud floated upon the five streams of mist, with three lotuses quietly blooming upon the cloud. On each lotus, a hazy silhouette was sitting with crossed legs. Meanwhile, Po’s both hands sparkled with water-clear Yu Yu’s divine light, while he slapped his hands heavily on the blueprint of the sword formation.

"Fix!"

The disordering sword formation quaked slightly. Next, a power of Dao, which was at least a thousand times greater than Ji Hao's power of Dao, was injected into the sword formation. The power of the sword formation was boosted up immediately. The dark watery light released from the bottle swiftly hovered and surrounded the entire sword formation, but it could no longer shake the sword formation, not even by a little bit.

Po slightly quivered, while a thin stream of blood flew out of his mouth corner. He raised his head and asked Mother Spirit, "My friend, how can this other half of your spirit have completely no intelligence?"

Mother Spirit sighed slightly again. She stared at that gigantic mermaid and responded slowly, "I get the wisdom...she got the instincts...all memories...wisdom...in my heart...she has no wisdom...she has the treasures."

Ji Hao and Po glanced at each other and helplessly nodded.

Spirit Mother's true spirit was split into two, a good half and an evil half. The good half gained all the intelligence and wisdom while the evil half gained all fighting abilities and survival instincts. This was fine, but the evil half also gained the two spirit treasures.

Before Ji Hao and Po said any other word, Mother Spirit said with the gentle voice, "This...is the...best chance...I stall her... please help me!"

The water ball broke, and a cyan-white light stream dazzled up. Mother Spirit's body also expanded to thousands of meter tall. She roared resonantly, then rushed towards the gigantic mermaid.

The gigantic mermaid paused, then seemed to be wild with joy as she opened her mouth, biting towards Mother Spirit.

The pressure suffered by the sword formation was eased

instantly.

"Sister, brother, lend me a hand!" Po gave a deep shout, then sat on the blueprint with his legs crossed.

Simultaneously, Ji Hao and Gui Ling sent their powers into the sword formation as much as possible. The four-colored divine light hovered, within which, four five-hundred meters long swords swished up, rotated around the evil mermaid's body and cut her into four.

Mother Spirit was equally powerful as the other half of hers; the difference came from the two supreme treasures.

Yu Yu's sword formation was incomparably powerful. Po launched a sudden attack with the sword formation, and unless Mother Spirit's true body was here, neither of the two halves of hers could ever survive it.

Mother Spirit let out a silvery laughter. Her body flashed across water area, transformed into a cyan-white light and immediately wrapped up the broken evil true spirit.

Within the short span of a quarter of an hour, following a frightfully great spirit power vibration, a ten-thousand meter tall, breathtakingly beautiful mermaid showed up in front of Ji Hao and the others.

Chapter 830: Great Causes and Great Effects

"The true spirit has remerged, but recovering is still not foreseeable."

The immense mermaid spread her hands, looked at her transparent arms, then slowly closed her eyes, seeming to be happy but also sad.

Tremendously great water power surged over from all directions into her body. As the water power ceaselessly merged with her body, the mermaid's body began shrinking, and releasing a cyan-white glow, that had a slight trace of the color of silver-blue.

Ji Hao, Po, Gui Ling and the other cultivators patiently waited.

Po changed his hand motions, following which, the sword formation began shrinking, and eventually turned into a fist-sized, four-colored sphere of light. He pointed at this sphere of light, then turned his finger to Ji Hao. Next, this sphere of light silently merged with Ji Hao's body. Ji Hao nodded to Po while silently praising.

The sword formation seemed to be shut down already, but under the control of Po's great power, it was actually still working. The sword formation hid inside Ji Hao's body, and if Mother Spirit showed any sign of destroying the blood true spirit contract, Ji Hao could immediately control the sword formation to launch a deathly attack.

Po was honest, kind and generous. Yet, he had been traveling across the world for countless years. As a powerful being who lived ever since the prehistorical era and survived countless cruel wars, Po could be especially nice and friendly to any of his friends without reason, but could also maintain doubt and keep vigilance towards any outsider, without reason. Po was Yu Yu's oldest disciple, how could he possibly believe a stranger, only because of a blood true spirit contract and an oral promise?

Water power arrived ceaselessly, while Mother Spirit's body turned smaller and smaller. By the end, her body was compressed to around fifteen meters tall, and seemed to turn back into a fleshy body instead of the transparent state.

That enormous pyramid collapsed thunderously, and countless dead bodies of evil mermaids and mermen sealed in it shattered simultaneously, turning into pure streams of water power that merged into the surrounding water. The jelly-like brains of those dead evil mermaids and mermen transformed into purple streams of light, flowing into Mother Spirit's body, turning the sense of power released from her stronger yet more restrained.

Po took a step forward, solemnly bowed to her and said, "Congratulations, my friend. May I ask your name?"

The beautiful mermaid opened her eyes and flipped her beautiful long tail. Meanwhile, the bottle and the bead hovered around her body, then transformed into two beams of light, flashing into the spot between her eyebrows and disappearing. Raising her head and looking around, the mermaid sighed slightly and began talking.

"My original name was Jia Ling. Now, you can call me Pan Jia."

An immeasurable, mysterious sense of power surrounded her while she continued speaking with a tone of self-mockery: "It's just that I am unworthy of the name of Pan Jia now, unless I can regain my true body. This true spirit can barely control the world. In this way, I do not deserve the name of Pan Jia."

Ji Hao and Gui Ling remained silent. Po smilingly comforted her, "My friend, you have gotten through the most difficult stage after all. Your true spirit has remerged, and even though your true body doesn't exist anymore and your cultivation was affected, with enough efforts, you will naturally attain the result you want."

Pan Jia took a deep breath, then raised her eyelids, grinned to Po and said, "Thank you for these nice words, I hope these can come true."

Remaining silent for a while, Pan Jia laughed, "We had a deal. I shall fulfill my promise at first..."

Pan Jia Glanced at Ji Hao, seeming to be pondering. Then, she said with a warm and gentle voice, "In the future, if I ever need your help again, my friends, please kindly lend a hand."

Before Ji Hao and the others said anything, a dim light was released from Pan Jia's forehead. Within the light, the bead that helped her created this world flew out. Following a cracking noise, a straight crack appeared on the surface of the bead. Next, around twenty-percent of the volume of the bead fell off, transformed into a shaking sphere of water that swished towards Gui Ling.

Before Gui Ling could make any reaction, the water sphere split into seven parts; the largest parts was half the size of the entire water sphere while the other half had averagely split into six parts. The largest part of the water sphere merged with Gui Ling's body while the six smaller parts each merged with the body of a disciple of hers.

"This...Thank you my friend, it's just...too much." Gui Ling popped out her eyes in shock. She threw a complicated glance at Pan Jia, then gave a bitter laugh. Afterward, she and her disciples sat down and crossed her legs, absorbing the water spheres that had just merged with their bodies.

Pan Jia smiled and said, "Since I've promised to improve your powers and potentials, using the power of this spirit treasure of mine is the best way to do it."

Po's look turned especially bitter, such that many wrinkles had been squeezed out of his face, and every single wrinkle was so deep.

This bead of Pan Jia was a supreme piece that helped her created a world. This bead was definitely as powerful as the ax which used to be held in the hands of Saint Pan Gu, the creator of Pan Gu world. She gave twenty percent of the bead to Gui Ling and her six

disciples; this debt was way, way too huge.

Not to mention Gui Ling, paying back this debt would even be not easy for Yu Yu himself.

Ji Hao also showed his teeth in shock. Women were indeed not easy to deal with, especially women at this level, truly terrifying! Ji Hao was simply trying to gain some slight benefits from her. Nevertheless, Pan Jia had given so much. She had actually, directly cut off a huge piece of meat from herself, then forcibly thrust into Gui Ling's mouth.

They now owed Pan Jia a huge, huge one. Bitterly, Ji Hao looked at Po, and Po looked back at Ji Hao, also with a worried look. If they told Yu Yu about this, would Yu Yu burst in anger and hack Pan Jia to death, or simply take this world away from her to prevent after issues, or fiercely spank Ji Hao, Po and Gui Ling, then lock them indoors and make them ponder over their own mistake.

Pan Jia smilingly looked at Po and Ji Hao' bitter faces while waving her hands. Instantly, the surrounding water area began quaking intensively.

Countless whirlpool emerged one after another, sending out all kinds of things without an end; stones, jades and gold pieces, along with many tree roots, seaweed, and other weird kinds of objects. Every single thing came out from these whirlpools had been releasing an especially strong pre-world power vibration.

This was the second request made by Ji Hao, collecting all good materials in this world that were useless to Pan Jia, for Po.

Mountain-huge piles of precious materials and great treasures ceaselessly came, with such an amazing quantity, such a rich variety and such a high value. This was completely beyond Po and Ji Hao's imagination.

Po sighed sightly. He looked at Gui Ling, then glanced at Ji Hao, while packing those valuable natural materials and treasures. As

the old saying went, when there were too many debts, one would stop worrying about them. Since Gui Ling had already gained twenty percent of the bead, collecting some rare materials seemed to be a small case now.

After six hours, the entire Pan Jia world suddenly dimmed down.

The sun, which was glowing in the sky, disappeared all of a sudden. Meanwhile, all of the pure positive power in the whole world disappeared as well, as if the sun and the great Dao of sun had never even existed in this world.

Inside Ji Hao’s body, a true sun shone dazzlingly, releasing its brightness and warmth.

Chapter 831: Infinitude Underwater City

The sun in this world had disappeared, making the sky turn dark.

Hundreds of dim blue stars emerged in the sky. Without being suppressed by the sun, extremely pure and strong streams of negative power descended from the stars. Countless evil mermaids and mermen floating on the water surface growled in excitement while opening their mouth and crazily inhaling the dim blue power streams.

The looks of Bao Xiang, Kong Chan and the others turned especially miserable. They raised their heads and looked at the dark sky in a daze. With their powers, they could clearly sense the severe change that had just happened in Pan Jia world, even though this wasn't Pan Gu world.

The sun had disappeared, and the weak positive power in this world had disappeared along with it. Bone-piercing coldness domineered this world, and it was getting colder and colder. Clouds of icy mist rose from the vast ocean. Without the warmth of the sun, the water started turning colder and colder, and flowed slower and slower, while the air became frigid as well. Tiny grains of ice emerged in the water, then began spreading.

To evil mermaids and mermen, all these changes were highly beneficial to them. Just now, all evil mermaids and mermen sensed a piercing pain from their hearts, as they sensed something that was especially important to them had disappeared. However, right next, endless joy rose from the deepest parts of their souls, that was even more important to them, all of a sudden.

Before the joy faded, the sun, that they never liked since forever, disappeared, and the air was suffused by the cold power, which could make them energetic and allow their strengths to never exhaust. Stars showed in the sky, pouring down streams of pure negative power, which grew denser and denser. At last, the

streams of negative power poured down like waterfalls.

"Quack!" Shrill screams came from all directions, while countless evil mermaids and mermen raised their heads and looked at Bao Xiang and Kong Chan with fierce eyes, sparkling with a bright dark-blue light.

Bao Xiang and Kong Chan and the others looked at those evil mermaids and mermen, who abruptly began approaching from everywhere, with extra bitter looks. Before, these evil mermaids and mermen attacked them as fiercely as wild beasts. Although these evil mermaids and mermen had quite a lot of powerful weapons, their attacks were simple and disordered. However, after the sun disappeared, the powers of these evil mermaids and mermen had been raised largely. Additionally, they seemed to suddenly become smart. They lined up orderly, formed battle formations like well-trained warriors, then launched a massive attack on Bao Xiang and the others; they seemed even to have a plan.

Not only that, looking down from the sky, those evil mermaids and mermen who started attacking Bao Xian and the others again had divided into groups. Each group had thirty-six members who formed a square formation. Then, thirty-six small square groups gathered together, flexibly changing positions, and formed a large battle formation.

Layer by layer, millions of evil mermaids and mermen formed a complicated and dynamic great battle formation. Dense and blue cold power screams flew around in the battle formation, silently connecting all evil mermaids and mermen into an entity.

Bao Xiang, Kong Chan and the others instantly sensed a speedily rising pressure. Despite the fact that Bao Xian had been ceaselessly boosting the power of his golden pestle and Kong Chan was trying his best to activate the enormous glowing cicada behind him, their golden steel magic formation was oppressed heavily. Slight cracking noise could be heard from the golden light released by the

magic formation without an end; the magic formation was about to collapse.

Pan Jia had her true spirit remerged, and regained all the wisdom and fighting experiences, that she used to have. Therefore, those unruly evil mermaids and mermen began forming battle formations and launching attacks orderly. Bao Xiang and his people were going to have some real fun.

Deep down in the water, a quiet life divine flower silently bloomed. When the flower withered, a flood dragon, which was entirely transparent and looked like an ice statue, dashed out from a puff of light spots.

Pan Jia sat on the flood dragon’s back and led Ji Hao and the other cultivators, who were mounted on star dolphins, to move forward quickly. After moving for miles, an enormous whirlpool appeared in the front and swallowed them up. After a hell-like dizziness, Ji Hao and the other cultivators were sent out a tremendous distance away from where they were in the last moment.

"This is the nest of those outsiders." Pan Jia pointed her finger forward and said, "During all these years, ‘I’ sent evil mermaids and mermen to attack them over a hundred times, but the venom of that nine-headed snake is way too terrifying. Each time, we suffered a severe loss."

"Xiang Liu’s poison is the most poisonous thing in the world indeed." said Ji Hao while seriously looking at Pan Jia, "He can even suppress enemies in a large number."

"Is Xiang Liu his name? I have memorized it." Pan Jia gave a faint smile, while a fierceness showed in her beautiful eyes, "If he just killed those evil mermaids and mermen, it would be fine. But they have also been looting the original power of this world with a secret magic, so I have to take them out."

Ji Hao and the others looked forward and found a magnificent

city, that was ablaze with lights, floating in the water. Less than a hundred miles in the front was a dark-blue colored, nine-story building, each story having eighteen rooms. The building was condensed from pre-world essence water, embossed with patterns of dragons and phoenixes, and decorated with countless glowing beads. Those were condensed from pre-world essence water as well, and formed a complicated defensive magic formation.

Looked from a long distance away, countless layers of white waves were coiling around this building, and a large number of oddly-shaped, heavily armored aquatic creatures were faintly visible in the waves.

The defensive magic formation based on the building was especially powerful, such that at first glance, Ji Hao found over ten-thousand powerful protective screens hiding in it. He estimated that, without the Pan Xi divine mirror to protect him, he could hang on for the span of a few breaths at most before he was turned into a puddle of blood, if he accidentally fell into the magic formation.

Behind the building was a series of palaces and mansions, extending for tens of thousands of miles. Every single place or mansion was condensed from different types of essence water. To Pan Jia, these essence waters were the essence blood of this world. Therefore, she didn’t lie while saying that these people were looting the original power of this world with secret magics.

Large groups of aquatic creatures with dark-colored, lusterless bodies, such as fishes and shrimps, were enlightened with magic, and had been walking slowly in those palaces and mansions. Large nursery gardens were located among those palaces and mansions, with countless aquatic magic herbs planted in them. These magic herbs were all enchanted, such that they rooted straight in the water, absorbing the essence water power of this world to grow themselves.

What shocked Ji Hao even more was the huge numbers of evil

mermaids and mermen, and spirit mermaids and mermen hanging around these nursery gardens. They were locked, disabled from moving, with their necks sliced open. Sticky streams of glowing blood flowed out of their wounds, flowing in the water like mist, then being absorbed by those magical herbs.

Fierce evil mermaids and mermen without intelligence had been screaming and roaring, while those intelligent spirit mermaids and mermen were silently crying, letting out despairing moans from time to time.

Pan Jia’s body quivered slightly. Looking at those nursery gardens, she gnashed her teeth and said with a low voice, "I can’t do anything to Xiang Liu’s venom, and I worry that the poisonous venom will pollute the entire world. Besides, my true spirt is not powerful enough. Otherwise, I would have destroyed Infinitude Underwater City long ago!"

Ji Hao fixed his eyes on the building. As Pan Jia said, a few square characters, ‘Infinitude Underwater City’, were written on a board hanging on the building.

Chapter 832: Kappa

Ji Hao looked at Pan Jia with pity.

When her true spirit was split into two, the good half was with the knowledge and wisdom, but without the power that could control this world. Therefore, she could do nothing to this Infinitude Underwater City. The evil half was with the power, but it could only act instinctively like a beast. It sent evil mermaids and mermen to attack the underwater city, but without any plan.

Like this, Pan Jia, as the creature and owner of this world, couldn’t do anything about a small underwater city.

Before Ji Hao witnessed all these things happen to top-grade Chaos powerful beings, he didn’t know that they could be so miserable. When bad things happened, Pan Gu, Pan Xi, Pan Jia, they all suffered.

Ji Hao quivered, while a coldness drilled into his body from his head and made him tumble. Po and Gui Ling seemed to think of the same thing and glanced at each other. By now, they looked less impatient and proud, but calmer and steadier.

The great Dao was not easy to reach, and with a slight carelessness, a destructive disaster could happen, just like the disasters that happened to Pan Gu, Pan Xi, and Pan Jia. As human beings, who were far less powerful than those Chaos powerful beings, they surely needed to be as careful and cautious as possible. Otherwise, when the disaster truly came, they wouldn’t have a chance to even regret.

Gui Ling gave a faint smile and said, "Pan Jia, my friend, I have another body with a primordial spirit. I want to leave it in your world to cultivate itself, can you allow that?"

Pan Jia raised her eyebrows and laughed, "That will be my pleasure. Pan Jia world just needs a few protectors."

Pan Jia and Gui Ling glanced at each other smilingly and knowingly.

Po and Ji Hao also glanced at each other with a smile while nodding slightly. Po was sincerely happy for Gui Ling while Ji Hao abruptly thought of something that would happen in the future. That time, did Gui Ling fake her own death?

After discussing for a while, they looked at that underwater city.

Po gave a deep shout while Ji Hao nodded. A four-colored light stream flew out of Ji Hao's forehead immediately, as Yu Yu's sword light expanded to hundreds of thousands of miles and firmly sealed the entire area where the underwater city was located. From the east, south, west and north, a, thousands of miles long sword light dazzled up, spreading invisible, yet sharp, sword powers. Suddenly, strong white waves rolled up from the surface of the underwater city.

"Hmm, the mother of evil mermaids and mermen, you come looking for troubles again?" A high-pitched voice that was not so pleasant to hear came from the city, "You come every single year. I see, you're truly not afraid of death. If I didn't worry that this world would be polluted, I would have spread Xiang Liu's venom to every corner of this world to perish all your creatures."

Pausing for a second, this high-pitched voice continued harshly, "I've given you a chance. This world is meant to be ours. The more troubles you make, the harder you will suffer when our army arrives."

Pan Jia remained silent with the bottle and the bead floating around her, releasing a dim glow to lighten up the surrounding space. Hearing that voice, Pan Jia only gave a cold smile, while her eyes sparkled as brightly as the edge of a fierce sword.

Po and Gui Ling calmly looked at the white waves above the underwater city. From those rolling waves, tens of strangely-shaped creatures, who had the human bodies and heads of

shrimps, fishes, turtles, or flood dragons, dashed out. These aquatic creatures were holding all kinds of powerful weapons, that released strong power vibrations. Judging by the power vibrations released from these weapons, these were all pre-world and after-world treasures naturally produced by Pan Jia world, probably trophies gained from evil mermaids and mermen who were sent over to attack this city.

Tens of aquatic creatures stood on those waves while showing their teeth and waving their claws. An old turtle, who was carrying a heavy and thick shell, showed his sharp teeth while ragingly growled, "Which reckless stupid one came to our Infinitude Underwater City to mess with us again? Take three-thousand hacks of mine first!"

While speaking, the attraction that existed between aquatic creatures worked, as this old turtle's pair of bean-sized eyes were fixed on Gui Ling, while a stream of saliva was flowing out from his mouth corners. "Ahyaya, girl, so beautiful! You see, we can make a perfectly lovely couple...Hehe, we have no reason to fight. Just come home with me. Let's make a bunch of baby turtles and live a free happy life together. What do you think?"

Gui Ling's face immediately turned dark, and that beautiful face now showed a strong intent of killing.

The six disciples of Gui Ling even had their limbs quiver, and couldn't even stand steadily, as if they were struck by a fierce thunderbolt right on the heads. Gui Ling was especially nice to her disciples, but when guiding them in cultivating themselves, Gui Ling could be extra strict. She was a typical strict tutor, yet as warm and caring as a mother. Therefore, all of her disciples loved her and respected her to an extreme point.

Heard that old turtle talking all that nonsense, the three male and three female disciples of Gui Ling angrily growled out together. Without saying a word to that old turtle, they pointed their fingers out and released a wave of pre-world divine water

thunderbolts, silently striking on him.

The white waves surged and the silver divine water thunderbolts struck on the waves. The waves shrunk instantly, then dense and enormous clouds of watery mist rose, while countless silver lightning bolts sizzled in the mist like serpents.

The old turtle insulted Gui Ling, which enraged her six disciples. Therefore, they showed no mercy when launching the attack. Within a single second, over a thousand divine water thunderbolts were released. White and turbid waves rose from the underwater city layer by layer, and then were destroyed. A great hydraulic pressure spread out, making the entire underwater power quake intensively.

Buzz! The protection provided by those waves was about to be destroyed by those thunderbolts. But at this moment, a stream of watery light dazzled up from each palace and mansion in the underwater city. Within every stream of light, a human-head-sized, transparent bead floated.

Water streams coiled around each other and generated layers of protective screens, wrapping the city up. The thunderbolts sizzled on the protective screens, shattering multiple layers. But at the same time, more layers of protective screens were being generated.

The high-pitched voice came again from the city, "The mother of evil mermaids and mermen? Isn’t that you? Eh? This...Hmm, hmm, you people, you called yourselves free people beyond the noisy world. Why did you come to this place? Damn it, how did you find this place?"

A white stream of watery light swooshed out from the tallest building in the underwater city, within which was a three-foot tall creature, who was like a human child in size, but looked like a monkey, and had webs between his fingers. This creature trod on the watery light, and rushed out with his whole body wrapped in a dense black mist.

Giving a glance at the creature from a long distance away, Po smiled and said, "Kappa, I knew it’s you. As a senior minister under Gong Gong’s command, why are you hiding?"

Kappa popped out its pair of brightly shining, green eyes, looked at Po and Gui Ling from up to toe, then gnashed his teeth and said, "Our Gong Gong Family never offended you...What are you doing in this place? We came to this world first. We’ve occupied the world already!"

Ji Hao curiously put his mouth near Gui Ling’s ear and asked with a low voice, "Sister, do you know each other?"

Gui Ling stared at that old turtle coldly, while responding in a frigid voice, "Back in the prehistorical era, we fought over a pre-world spring. Our big brother gave this thing three hammer strikes. We surely know each other. How can we not?"

Ji Hao nodded. ‘Ah, an old acquaintance.’ thought Ji Hao.

Chapter 833: Kappa's Army

Kappa, who had a small size and a hideous face, showed his teeth towards Po. His body quivered while a series of bong creaking noises that sounded like popping corns came out of his body. Under his faintly blue skin, blood veins squirmed like snakes. Meanwhile, a prehistorical, fierce sense of power was released from his body.

Gradually, a dark cloud of mist rose from his head, within which, a frog-like, three-legged creature that had its body thickly covered in caruncles raised its head and roared towards the sky.

The resonant roar made the entire area quake while water surged in streams. Ji Hao heard the roar and felt that even his primordial spirit was shaken. If he hadn't attained the seed of Dao that provided with the power of great Dao to protect his primordial spirit, his soul would have been sucked out of his body on hearing Kappa's roar.

Po slowly rolled up his sleeves and showed his forearm. From an unknown source, he took out a square-head hammer, that looked like a blacksmith hammer, and was thickly covered in patterns, then smilingly took two steps forwards.

"Kappa, we're old friends, so today, I won't bully you. Just fold your arms and submit yourself. Tell me every detail of the plan of your master. If you do what I say, I can spare you from a few hammer strikes. Otherwise, you will have to suffer."

While speaking the last few words, Po turned around and subconsciously glanced at Ji Hao.

Po was gentle and nice, and even to his enemies, he rarely launched any killing moves. Instead, he normally chose to frighten his enemies with his great powers, and make his enemies shrink back with the deterrence. But today, Ji Hao was here. Po clearly understood that Ji Hao wasn't a merciful one at all. If Kappa fell

into Ji Hao's hands, and if he refused to smartly obey, Ji Hao would probably pull every piece of his bone out of his body, one by one, unless he obediently told all he knew.

Ji Hao confusedly glanced at Po. Why did Po look at him in such a weird way?

Kappa, who was surrounded by tens of aquatic warriors, laughed out instantly. He pointed at Po and shouted, "Priest Po, do you think I'm still as weak as before? Why do you take out this hammer again? Back then in the prehistorical era, I was injured by three hammer strikes of yours indeed, but that was an accident."

Kappa's eyes rolled in the eye sockets as he realized that even he couldn't believe himself. He continued while sneering, "After I was injured by your, I followed Gong Gong. Now, I'm one of the eight senior ministers under Gong Gong's command. Don't you dare violate the rule of your sect and harm me!"

Kappa sounded quite fierce and also threatening. Po laughed loudly, then raised the hammer and smashed straight down towards the underwater city without saying a word to Kappa.

The hammer seemed to be ordinary, but as it was wielded, the hammerhead burst with countless beams of dim black light. They wove into the hazy silhouette of a towering mountain, which then heavily smashed on the layer of protective water light screen that had been shielding the city.

Following a thunderous bang, the area with a radius of tens of thousands of miles vibrated. Next, from the eighteen-thousand layers of protective screens above the underwater city and the four-thousand nine-hundred glowing beads floating among those protective light screens, seventeen thousand layers of protective screens and four-thousand, six-hundred and fifty beads, were shattered by Po.

Countless cracks immediately appeared on those thousands of magnificent palaces and mansions in the underworld city, as if the

city had just been through a destructive thunderstorm. Incalculable bricks, which were condensed from essence water, were broken and disappeared, leaving ugly dark holes and crevices on those buildings. Many buildings collapsed, transformed into streams of water power and merged in the water.

A splendidly beautiful underwater city was made to look like an abandoned city of the dead by Po with a single hammer strike.

Po packed the hammer, smilingly nodded to Kappa, who was already dumbfounded and said, "I don’t want to harm any life, so I restrained my power. Hmm, it seems that I still can’t control my power as freely as I hoped. I wanted to destroy all your protective screens with this strike, but in the end, a few were left."

Kappa’s fain-blue skin suddenly turned dark-green in color, while that wrinkled face of his shone brightly with a green light. His eyes bulged out as he stared at Po. He showed his teeth fiercely but couldn’t say a word for a long while.

"Kappa? Kappa? This name is a bit weird..." Ji Hao stood beside Po and said slowly. "Will you open the gate of this underwater city and let us in? Go find a rope and tie yourself up, so that we don’t need to do the extra work. Oh, and that old turtle said some nasty thing earlier, so cut his head off for me. I will cook him into soup today."

Po and Gui Ling smiled together while pleasedly looking at Kappa’s twisted face.

Kappa maintained that fierce look for a short while, then abruptly gave a shrill laugh. He took out a fist-sized drum from his sleeve and gently waved. As a great water power surged into the drum, it instantly expanded into a ten-meter in radius, enormous drum.

Kappa put the enormous drum beside him, then took out a three-meter-long bone, which was wrapped in sizzling thunderbolts, from his sleeve. He held the bone with both of his hands and

smashed it heavily on the drum. An earthshaking bang was generated, following which, within the area a million miles in radius, all the water quaked. The dreadful sound waves transformed into visible shocking waves, roaring over along with an overwhelming pressure. Ji Hao, Po and Gui Ling growled simultaneously and released Yu Yu's divine light to shield themselves.

No one knew what kind of treasures the drum and the bone were, but the Yu Yu's divine light, which was released by Ji Hao, Po and Gui Ling joint handedly, was vibrated intensively. Po and Gui Ling seemed to be perfectly fine, as if nothing was happening at all, but Ji Hao had already heard the loud bone creaking noise came from his own body, and nearly collapsed.

"The battle drum from the ancient heaven, why do you have it?" Looking the at the drum, which was thickly covered in patterns of clouds and thunderbolts, Po said in surprise, "The heaven has fallen, but Gong Gong Family seems to have attained quite some treasures from it."

Kappa gave a cold smile, then beat the drum with the bone once again. Waves of roars came from the underwater city, while the gates of those, thousands of buildings opened simultaneously. Dense streams of pre-world essence water surged out from those gates, along with countless ugly-shaped, furious aquatic warriors, rushing out from those palaces and mansions.

That was a tremendous army, without a limit to be seen. Million, tens of millions, even hundreds of millions of aquatic warriors surged out from the city, roaring wildly. Following Kappa's growls, these aquatic warriors quickly formed a round-shaped, immense battle formation.

"So...so many fishes, shrimps, turtles, crabs..." murmured Ji Hao while looking at that boundless aquatic army in front of him. His scalp was even numbed.

How could it be so many?

Pan Jia’s look changed slightly as she popped out her eyes in shock. During all these years, she had been secretly observing this underwater city, but she didn’t think that so many outsider aquatic creatures were hiding in this place!

Besides, these aquatic creatures were not weak at all. Merely judging by the sense of powers released from their bodies, even the weakest one of them was at the level of human Senior Magi!

Kappa gave a vicious grin and laughed, "Priest Po, you should know that our aquatic creatures can reproduce quite quickly and conveniently!"

"In the past hundreds of years, the countless eggs I brought to this world hatched, and these babies have already grown into a great army."

"These are hundreds of millions of aquatic creatures. No matter how powerful you are, what can you possibly do to me?"

Chapter 834: Ji Hao Sets a Trap

Among hundreds of millions of races in Pan Gu world, the humankind had a top-grade fertility. The humankind had powerful bloodlines, strong bodies, and in every thirteen to fourteen years, a new generation could be born. In a hundred years, a human being could have multiple generations of descendants. In this way, the humankind rose, grew stronger and stronger.

However, among all races in Pan Gu world, the ones possessing the greatest fertility were these aquatic creatures, who seemed to be so insignificant. A fish or a shrimp could give birth to hundreds of thousands, and even millions of eggs. Only if even one or two in ten-thousand of these eggs could successfully hatch and grow up, the reproduction rate of these creatures would be far higher than the reproduction rate of human beings.

Kappa brought hundreds of millions of mature zygotes from Pan Gu world. He and his subordinates carefully looked after these zygotes and allowed them to hatch, allowing these aquatic creatures to come to this world.

Pan Jia world was suffused by a pure water power that was inexhaustible. Therefore, this place was perfect for aquatic creatures to grow. Human beings could raise a new generation in every thirteen to fourteen years, but these aquatic creatures could do it every year. These creatures grew mature in a few years. On being enlightened by a Kappa with a special magic created by the Water God, they became mature aquatic warriors after a hundred years of cultivation!

Kappa had been in this world for hundreds of years. How many aquatic creatures had he raised in this underwater city?

At first glance, one could see countless aquatic creatures screaming and roaring on top of strong waves, with millions of

sharp weapons held in their hands. This formidable army extended for tens of thousands of miles, and had hundreds of layers. On layers of waves, innumerable aquatic creatures lined up orderly and formed a round-shaped battle formation, while shouting loudly towards Ji Hao and the other cultivators.

Kappa and tens of his subordinates, who had been releasing a strong power vibration, stood in the center of the great battle formation, while proudly pointing their fingers at Po, yelling and growing.

"Priest Po, come, just come. Today, I will tell my warriors to not resist, not fight back. They will simply reach their necks out and let you kill them one by one! I have hundreds of millions of warriors in this place. As long as you have the heart to kill them, you, you can just do it, as much as you want. You can cook them into soup, you can fry them, you can slice them and chew them, you can grind them then feed to animals... I don’t care."

Raising his head high, Kappa showed a fearless look, as if he believed that Po dared not to do anything, while wildly shouting and laughing.

"I know you cultivators, you stay away from worldly affairs, because you value the cultivations of your hearts and your minds, in terms of which, no mistake can be done. You, Priest Po, you are kind, you are righteous, and you’re just...You dare not to just start a massacre, you dare not!"

"So what?" responded Po.

Kappa’s wrinkled face showed a complacent grin as he made an insulting gesture to Po and said, "So, just piss off! Priest Po, I am not despising you, and can let my warriors to not fight back and allow you to kill them as much as you can...But do you even dare? Can you even do that? Are you willing to do that?"

Po, Gui Ling and the six disciples glanced at each other, not knowing what to say.

‘Be kind, be righteous and be just,’ Po, Gui Ling and all the other disciples of Yu Yu had always been guided by these principles. Following the great Dao of nature, following the power of the destiny and always being upright, this was their pride, that had rooted deeply in their bones, and had already become their instincts.

If Kappa messed around, they could simply beat him up. But if one asked them to deal with these lowly, weak aquatic creatures, to slaughter these insignificant creatures for defeating Kappa, they could never do such a thing. They didn’t have the heart to do it, neither did they dare to do it.

They deeply understood how terrifying the ‘causes and effects’ could be. Because of these ‘causes and effects’, countless powerful beings had perished. Even them, as Yu Yu’s disciples, dared not to slaughter innocent living beings and to bear the sin. They lived till this moment because they knew about awe.

"Hahaha, haha, haha!"

Kappa laughed out wildly. Abruptly, he grabbed the old turtle over, patted on his head and laughed to Gui Ling, "Priest Gui Ling, this brother of mine is indeed much younger than you, but..."

Gui Ling’s look instantly changed as the black Ruyi in her left hand released a dark beam of light, seeming to fly out. But Ji Hao pressed his hand on the black Ruyi, laughed and said, "Sister, who are you, why will you waste any time on this lowly thing? Saying even a single word to them will humiliate yourself."

"For scums like these, just let me, a bad person, deal with them."

With a weird smile, Ji Hao slowly walked over and laughed to Kappa, "Kappa, do you know me?"

Kappa stayed in Pan Jia world for hundreds of years, while Ji Hao became famous in Pu Ban City in the recent ten years. How could Kappa possibly know Ji Hao? Besides, judging by the sense of

power released from Ji Hao, he was merely a Divine Magus, while Kappa was one of the eight senior ministers under Gong Gong's command. Kappa believed that he could crush young people like Ji Hao with a finger.

"Ignorant kid, piss off. You don't get to talk to me!" Kappa sneered proudly.

Ji Hao took out a thumb-sized crystal ball which was hiding in his palm. This crystal was secretly developed by Xiu Clan people, and contained unique spell symbols especially for recording sounds and imagines.

Silently activating the crystal ball, Ji Hao said with a cold voice, "Ignorant kid? You have to know that I am a 'someone' in Pu Ban city."

"'Someone'? Whoever you think you are, you're nothing in my eyes!" Kappa and his subordinates glanced at each other, then laughed out loud together.

"I am a human minister entitled by the human emperor!" Ji Hao honestly told to Kappa.

Kappa and his people laughed even louder. Ji Hao looked too young. Not only his face, but the sense of power released from him was also young and immature as well. Ji Hao wasn't even a hundred years old yet. How dare he claim to be a minister of the human emperor? Among those people who were qualified enough to walk into the Town Hall in Pu Ban City, which one wasn't countless years old?

"Kid, if you're a minister entitled by the human emperor, I could be the human emperor's father!" An unbridled aquatic creature suddenly burst with a shout. Among hundreds of millions of aquatic creatures, surely some could be relatively more stupid than the others. Just now, they cursed Ji Hao, Po and Gui Ling with ugly words, those languages they used were truly nasty.

Connived by Kappa, one of these aquatic creatures took the lead. Right after that, countless of them shouted out. They cursed Ji Hao’s ancestors, then mentioned the generations of ancestors of the current human emperor.

Ji Hao grinned, looked at Kappa and said word by word, "I am Earl Yao Ji Hao, entitled by Emperor Shun himself! How dare you people insult the human emperor?! Do you think that our humankind has no rules?!"

Snorting coldly, Ji Hao continued in a harsh tone, "Since you have no idea of rules, I shall teach you a lesson! This world can testify for me, I, Earl Yao Ji Hao, will slaughter these evil creatures today, but not for myself. I will eradicate these scums for the entire humankind!"

Before Kappa, who suddenly changed his facial expression, said anything, Ji Hao let a dazzling fiery light flash out of his forehead.

The sun of Pan Jia world showed up, floating in the air above the underwater city, burning with a raging fire!

Chapter 835: Ji Hao Boils the Sea

The sun of Pan Jia world…

Over a million miles in radius, it contained inexhaustible scorching power. Even though Pan Jia world was domineered by the water power, the sun of this world was still immeasurably powerful. At least, Ji Hao didn't have the qualification to control this sun.

Pan Jia made a move herself and sealed the sun and the great Dao of sun, then gifted it to Ji Hao. In this world, with the help of the power of this world, Ji Hao could barely manipulate this sun, just like an ordinarily Qi cultivator manipulating a great treasure which was far more powerful than him or herself, Ji Hao could barely activate the power of the sun and control it.

The sun floated upon the underwater city. Ji Hao fixed his eyes on the sun and compressed it to ten-thousand miles in radius. Yu Yu's sword light released the four colored divine light, while fierce sword power surrounded the entire area with a radius of hundreds of thousands of miles, isolating this area from the outside world. This 'tiny' sun floated above the city, and released its brightness and hotness. Glowing red flames poured down in streams like waterfalls from above the city. Wherever the flame reached, the water would boil, being evaporated into steam in a moment.

Not a single drop of water was left in the underwater city, all of it being evaporated by the sun. The lava-like flame stream descended while turbid waves surged above the underwater city. The protective magic formation of the city had been fully activated, desperately fighting against the sun power.

Layers of waves were evaporated, and the stream swooshed up and disappeared. The bright red sunlight suffused the space hundreds of miles in radius. If Yu Yu's sword formation didn't isolate this area, a half of Pan Jia world would boil. The turbid

waves above the city were destroyed layer by layer. Aquatic creatures standing on the first layer of wave all let out shrill howls.

The waves they trod upon had already turned into hot stream as countless bubbles popped up. The temperature of the wave was rising crazily and soon, the wave turned into a boiling stream of water. The water in Pan Jia world contained great pure water power. Therefore, the boiling point of the water in this world was incredibly high, over a hundred times higher than the boiling point of the water in Pan Gu world.

Aquatic creatures on the first layer of wave were soaked in the boiling water. Their shells quickly turned red, as the destructive sun power reached their flesh and boiled their bodies broken. Gradually, a dense aroma of fish soup began spreading through the steam.

Kappa looked at the sun floating above his head in shock. He screamed hoarsely, pointing at Ji Hao but unable to say a word.

"I am Earl Yao Ji Hao, entitled by Emperor Shun himself!" said Ji Hao blandly while looking at Kappa, "You and your people insulted the human emperor. You are with the most heinous guilt. If Minister Hao Tao were here, he would behead every single one of you. I am merciful and don’t want to see any bloodshed. Therefore...I chose to cook you into soup, so that no blood will be shed."

Kappa was furious, but still couldn’t say a word. Po and Gui Ling narrowed their eyes and remained silent.

‘Merciful? Don’t want to see any bloodshed?’ But he had actually boiled the ocean and cooked countless aquatic creatures into a giant potful of soup. No matter how one described this, this had absolutely nothing to do with mercifulness, right?

Above the underwater city, hundreds of layers of turbid waves had been surging, and each layer of wave was filled with screaming aquatic creatures.

The first layer of wave had already been boiled. Countless aquatic creatures, who were burned red, dropped their weapons while screaming and desperately dashed down, fleeing to the second layer of wave along with a great heat that lingered in their bodies.

Bone-piercing cold water wrapped up these crying aquatic creatures. A loud sizzling noise was generated when the cold water touched the red and tough shells of some aquatic creatures, that sounded like a cup of icy water being poured on a glowing red iron board.

However, every layer of turbid wave was filled with aquatic creatures. Aquatic creatures from the first layer of wave fled to the second layer, then the second layer instantly turned so crowded and the battle formation was thrown into a mess.

Ji Hao snorted coldly, then sent out a series of magic spells into the sun of Pan Jia world. The fiercely spreading essence sun fire began slowly shrank along with a deep roar. Gradually, all essence sun fire condensed into ten-thousand miles thick flame column. Form the surface of the sun, the golden fire column swooshed down, piercing straight into the underwater city like a sharp sword.

The first layer of turbid wave was evaporated immediately within the span of a few breaths.

Protective light screens of the city were burned out and large numbers of buildings in the city were turned into steam. Only a very few buildings, which served as the cores of the great defensive magic formation of the city, had still been faintly sparkling with a dim watery light. All the other buildings soon turned into nothingness.

Kappa watched this happen while being stupefied. Sun, the sun of Pan Jia world.

He stayed in Pan Jia world for so many years. The sun in this world was so small, weak and insignificant. But based on his

hundreds of years of experience, he clearly knew that this was the sun of Pan Jia world.

Was this a joke?

Could Ji Hao actually control the sun of a world?

Even a peak-level Divine Magus...No, even a Supreme Magus could never control the sun of a world!

"Damn you!" Kappa screamed hysterically. He gnashed his teeth and took out a fist-sized, blue bowl from his sleeve. The leaf-shaped bowl contained a shallow puddle of water, that was blue colored with a bright silver luster. That was indeed a shallow bowl of water, but somehow, it seemed to be boundless and bottomless.

"Earl Yao, Ji Hao? I will remember your name! I worked so hard for so many years, collecting the pre-world and after-world original water powers from this world, and with a supreme magic, I made this ‘seven sea water’. This tiny little bit of water includes seven oceans. It’s cold, it’s eternal. I’d like to see what can you do to me!"

Gnashing his teeth tight, Kappa roared, then splashed the seven sea water onto the underwater city.

Following a rumbling series of noise, large silver waves roared towards all directions. Yu Yu’s sword formation isolated this area, but the surging seven-sea water seemed to contain the power of space. After the silver wave suffused the isolated area, this area began expanding speedily.

Ji Hao fully activated his eye power, but as hard as he tried, he could not see the boundary of the seven sea water.

The silver-blue ocean was vast, boundless, with dense watery mist rising from its surface. Numerous towering icebergs were floating in it, swaying along the streams. Occasionally, a few icebergs would clash against each other and generate fierce gales in the air. Next, human-head-sized hailstones would fall like

raindrops.

The temperature dropped swiftly, and soon, even the air was frozen into ice crystals.

So powerful. Kappa truly didn’t waste his hundreds of years of time in this world.

Ji Hao snorted and pointed at the sun. The Pan Jia sun fell straight into the seven sea water. From the surface of the sun, immeasurably powerful sun flame rose into directly the sky, and soon, the seven sea water around the sun began boiling.

Chapter 836: The Disturbance of Destiny

Yao Mountain City, the Palace of Dao located inside Yao Mountain.

During the recent years, Ji Hao had been traveling around the universe, while Ji Xia managed Yao Mountain City for him. Based on the blueprints provided by Ji Hao, the constructional works of Yao Mountain City Magi Palace and the Palace of Dao had never stopped.

Yao Mountain City Magi Palace was easy to find, as a series of buildings were built behind Earl Yao's mansion for it, while the Palace of Dao wasn't as obvious. Yao Mountain was entirely emptied, surrounded by numerous great magic formations created by Yu Yu. With the power of the special magic formation of Dao, called 'Heaven and Earth dust', the inside space of Yao Mountain, which was only around ten miles in radius, had expanded to tens of thousands of miles in radius, beautiful and magnificent, just like an artificial fairyland.

Bronze-colored, stately and ancient style halls stood among towering trees, while the bodies of the nine ancient Gold Crow floated in the sky, providing the energy for all creatures in this 'small world' to grow.

Groups of children with long white flax robes and relaxed looks, sat on the squares in front of each hall, with crossed legs. They closed their eyes, silently listening to the voice of great Dao coming from a mysterious, immeasurable source.

A faint silhouette of Yu Yu sat in the great hall, located in the core area of the Palace of Dao, also with his legs crossed. Yu Yu had a warm smile on his face while giving a lecture regarding the mysteriousness of the great Dao of nature. Glowing lotuses flew out of his mouth, transforming into sparkling light spots and drifting in all directions.

Yu Yu sent a clone of himself to the Palace of Dao, passing on the knowledge regarding the great Dao to Ji Hao's new disciples. Clearly, Yu Yu attached great importance to this Palace of Dao founded by Ji Hao.

Yu Yu believed that, with education, there was no distinction between classes or races of creatures. Therefore, in the Palace of Dao, except for tens of thousands of human disciples, countless non-human disciples had also been peacefully sitting or lying on the ground, listening to Yu Yu's lecture with an incomparable solemn look

Ji Hao's friend Dragon Pool, and his best mate, the black leopard, were among these non-human disciples.

Because of Dragon Pool and Ji Hao's relationship, and also because Yu Yu always valued magical creatures like it, Dragon Pool had put down his roots outside the Hall where Yu Yu's clone stayed in. He reached a few of his branches straight to the door of the hall while concentratedly listening to Yu Yu. That black leopard huddled right beside Yu Yu, with his large head nodding slowly while looking at Yu Yu. From time to time, he would show surprise, shock or smile on his face.

Yu Yu liked Dragon Pool and the black leopard quite a lot. From time to time, he would conveniently point his finger forward and send out thumb-sized golden lotuses from his fingertips. Those lotuses would then merge with the bodies of Dragon Pool and the black leopard, leaving a faint aroma in the air.

In a corner of the Palace of Dao, in an enormous hall, Elder Destiny activated the Destiny Compass, while walking around the compass at a wind speed. His both hands had been quickly changing motions, sending out streams of power onto the compass from time to time. The compass had a complicated structure, as it was formed by tens of layer of round and movable plates. At the moment, the tens of layers of plates had been spinning disorderly, while countless complicated spell symbols sparkled quickly on the

surface of the compass, with different colored light.

After he came to Pan Gu world, Elder Destiny and a batch of his people followed Ji Hao's lead and started their new lives. One day, Yu Yu saw Elder Destiny activate the compass to foresee the future, which stimulated his interests. Therefore, Yu Yu gave a long lecture regarding his own understanding of the great Dao, that lasted for a whole three days. Elder Destiny was enlightened by Yu Yu. Hence, he became Yu Yu's disciple while Yu Yu became his Shifu.

By now, Elder Destiny had been trying to foresee the future of Pan Gu world with the secret power of destiny possessed only by the king of destiny in Pan Xi world, in combination with the supreme knowledge taught by Yu Yu.

To Elder Destiny, the more future he saw, the faster he would be able to improve; the more secrets he knew, the more powerful he could become, and the longer he could live. He could only foresee the future, but could not speak the future out. If he told the future he saw to no one, he would be able to gain immeasurable benefits, but he would also have to suffer the terrifying consequence as a counterforce of the power of destiny. This was the special cultivation method of Elder Destiny, and even Yu Yu was surprised and clicked his tongue because of this mysterious, magical cultivation method.

The compass of destiny was spinning swiftly. A bright stream of light dazzled up from Elder Destiny's head. Meanwhile, in the front left, in where the destiny tangled together, he saw some faint and weird images gradually emerging before his eyes. However, before Elder Destiny could see those imagines clearly, a dreadfully great counterforce, that never occurred before, struck down. The compass quaked intensively while shining with countless beams of dazzling light. From the dazzling light, quite a few sword-shaped light streams fiercely hacked on Elder Destiny's body, broke his bones and forced him back, making him vomit blood.

Following a thunderous bang, Elder Destiny's head thudded against the wall and created a giant hole. Elder Destiny flew out from the hole and fell on the empty area outside while vomiting blood.

Tens of holy spirits from Pan Xi world sat outside the hall, and had been listening to Yu Yu's lecture about the great Dao of Pan Gu world. Seeing Elder Destiny fly out of the hall while vomiting blood, they hurriedly stood up, held Elder Destiny up and poured a bottle of life-saving magic pills into Elder Destiny's mouths.

A faint silhouette emerged in front of Elder Destiny. That was a clone of Yu Yu. In shock, Yu Yu asked, "Destiny, are you...affected by the counterforce of the power of destiny? The natural power system of Pan Gu world is stable and normal recently, nothing wrong happened. How can you be injured so badly?"

If Elder Destiny had only suffered a physical injury, things would be still fine. Although his bones and tendons were broken and some internal organs were damaged, with that bottle of life-saving magic pills, he would be able to recover fully with half a month of rest. Nevertheless, the worst injury happened to Elder Destiny was on his soul. Pan Xi world people didn't have three soul and six spirits. Instead, the soul of each of them was an integrity, just like a crystal ball.

In Yu Yu's eyes, a few cracks had appeared on Elder Destiny's soul, and his soul was nearly shattered. With the current situation, with a slight carelessness, Elder Destiny could perish, both in his body and soul.

Knitting his eyebrows, Yu Yu took out an egg-sized, purple-golden pill and pointed his finger at it. The pill then transformed into two strong streams of power that drilled into Elder Destiny's nostrils while letting out resonant sounds, that sounded light roars of dragons and tigers. Elder Destiny's body instantly began shivering intensely, then his soul recovered. As a purple mist lingered around his soul, both the sturdiness and purity of his soul

were improved largely.

"Dear Shifu, thank your for saving my life." Elder Destiny freed himself from the group of holy spirits and quiveringly stood straight.

He raised his head and frowned, then continued with a deep voice and a worried look, "Shifu, I saw some terrifying scenes. The flood devoured the sky, and all living beings died. But it seems to have nothing to do with Pan Gu world. Some outer force stopped me from looking into those scenes."

Yu Yu knitted his eyebrows once again. Instantly, his look turned especially serious.

The official name of Ji Hao’s dojo was changed into ‘The Palace of Dao’.

Chapter 837: Tushan Construction Site

Tushan Mountain, the base of Tushan Family.

Smoke puffed up into the sky as fiery light dazzled up from all directions. Kua E and thousands of divine gods trod on fiery clouds, casting their great magics and drilling into the ground. They turned the rock and soil into lava which flowed away along with the channels they built. These powerful divine gods drilled into the ground for tens of thousands of miles deep, to dig the foundation for the new Tushan City.

An elderly man, who looked eighty to ninety percent similar to Tushan old man, also with white hair, was surrounded by a group of people, while smilingly sitting on top of a mountain, in the distance.

Quite proudly, this elderly man looked at the construction site, which was ten times larger than Yao Mountain City, then smiled in satisfaction and said, "My big brother is indeed generous. Our Tushan Family is with a large population, and with many wealthy members. We can't compare with Earl Yao, as he started from a scratch after all. Therefore, we better expand the scale of this city by two hundred percent... Hmm, to allow more of our family members to live in the city, and more troops to be stationed in the city."

A middle-aged man looked at the elderly man in shock and said, "Uncle, the scale of the construction site of our city is already ten times larger than Earl Yao's city. Are you sure that we're going to expand it further by two hundred percent?"

The elderly man slapped heavily on the middle-aged man's head and said, "What's the big deal to expand it by two hundred percent? Nothing will happen except it costing more money, isn't that true? Speaking of elite warriors, our Tushan Family may not be as good as the others, but in terms of financial resources, except

for the dragon-kind and phoenix-kind, who dares to compete against us?"

Narrowing his eyes, the old man proudly laughed and continued, "The dragon-kind and the phoenix-kind possess more treasures than we do, but speaking of active capital, we might even be richer than the combination of the dragon-kind and the phoenix-kind."

Waving his hands, the old man continued generously, "Go tell brother Kua E to expand the scale of the construction site by two hundred percent. They will still be treated with the best meat and the best wine, double portions since today! Their stomachs will be satisfied, and the salary will also be doubled! All in all, this Tushan City of ours have to be an unshakable property, that will serve generations of our descendants and last for hundreds of millions of years."

A few Tushan Family people hurriedly ran into the construction site, found Kua E and a couple of his brothers and talked to them.

Kua E and his brothers paused, then excitedly slapped their own chests.

"Brothers, big deal, big deal, expand the scale of Tushan City by two hundred percent! That means the amount of our work will be over ten times greater than before. Great deal, this will take us more than ten years, and the wages will be enough for us to live freely and happily for over a hundred years."

A group of thousands of meter tall divine Gods raised their heads and cheered out towards the sky. Their strong and resonant voices even shattered the clouds in the higher sky.

Animal howls came from a distance away. Tushan Family slaves drove large groups of livestock and especially crafted vehicles over. Carried on those vehicles were hill-huge piles of grilled meat, grilled till oily, and thickly covered in sauces. Buffalos, goats, tigers, leopards, all kinds of wild animals were cooked into nicely smelling grilled meat, such that dense delicious aroma even spread

to tens of miles away along the wind.

Tushan Family was wealthy. Therefore, they treated Kua E and his brothers much more generously than Ji Hao did. That grilled meat all came from carefully selected, healthy and strong wild animals, covered in expensive spices, and cooked by slaves who mastered culinary skills.

The wine served to Kua E and his brothers wasn't any ordinary type of wine purchased from Pu Ban Market. Instead, that was a top-grade wine produced by Tushan Family, and had been stored in the wine cellar for over a hundred years.

The attractive smells of the wine and grilled meat could be sensed everywhere. Kua E and his brothers sat down on the ground, served by Tushan slaves and happily filled themselves with that delicious meat and wine. Oil flew down from their mouth corners in streams, while they satisfyingly nodded and praised.

On the mountaintop, the elderly man looked at Kua E and his brothers, who had been happily enjoying the banquet, and couldn't help but shake his head.

"They're descendants of divine Gods after all, but generation after generation, they have declined. Look at these gobbling big guys, how many years has it been since they filled their stomachs the last time?"

"But, you can't blame them for that, you just can't. Ever since the ancient heaven fell, they've been keeping their promises, staying in that empty heaven. They wouldn't even take a single step out of the heaven if they didn't have to. Besides, they never lay a finger on the natural resources in the world. Instead, they trade for food, wine and money from human beings with their labors. These descendants of divine Gods can indeed follow the rules of their ancestors, they're not bad."

The group of Tushan Family people turned to the old man,

staring at him while hoping to hear more secrets regarding the ancient heaven from him.

What promise? What ancestor rules?

The old man was right. Kua E and his brothers were thousands of meters tall, and were amazingly powerful. But, no one had never heard about any descendant of divine Gods messing around in the territories of the humankind. These powerful beings only came to the human world to sell their labor for food, wine and jade coins. They never even hunted a wild rabbit in a jungle without permission.

"Uncle, what's the story? We're young, and we know nothing, can you just tell us?" A Tushan Family young man grinningly bowed to the old man and said.

"This...is a long story..." The old man gave a nice grin, slowly shook his head and was about to start telling the story, but from the construction site, Kua E rushed over to before the faces of this group of Tushan Family people, with only a few steps.

The mountain was around three-thousand-meter tall. Kua E stood beside the mountain, that allowed him to straightly face the group of Tushan Family people. As his giant pair of eyes sparkled brightly, Kua E said to the group of Tushan Family people with a muffled voice, "The constructional work of Tushan City was already immense, and it was quite difficult to collect so many divine materials. Now that the scale of the city is going to expand by two hundred percent, the amount of the required divine materials is not small at all. Elder Tushan Zhi, we..."

Before Kua E finished, the old man smilingly waved his hand and said gently, "Kua E, since our Tushan Family have already decided to build this great city, then we have to build it with the best materials and the most advanced techniques."

Pausing for a second, Tushan Zhi took out a jade board, handed to Kua E and continued, "Regarding divine materials, here, I have a

star map. In the star void, is a divine mine which no others know about. Raw materials in that mine are of the best quality, and with great reserves, enough for building our Tushan City."

Kua E paused briefly, then let out a breath on the jade board. The jade board blasted into a splendid sphere of light and drilled into the spot between his forehead.

Carefully checking the star map inside his head, Kua E said in surprise, "It’s not a small distance. Added with the time we will spend on collecting materials, a round trip to this divine mine will take us half a year…hmm!"

Gnashing his teeth, Kua E drummed his own chest and continued, "But, Tushan Family people treated us so kindly, served us with so much delicious food and wine. We can't fail you, can we? Hm, it’s far, but my brothers and I can go together a couple of more times."

Giving a resonant roar, Kua E turned around and shouted to thousands of divine Gods.

The group of divine Gods each gulped a mountain-huge pile of grilled meat, then leaped straight up, trod on fiery clouds and flew up into the sky. Kua E gave another growl then led all divine Gods into the void, heading to the divine mine mentioned by Tushan Zhi.

Chapter 838: A Trap Among Stars

In the starry void of Pan Gu world, stars seemed to be quite close to each other, but in fact, the distance between any two stars could take one hundred times longer than the entire life of a human Senior Magus to travel across. Even with so much time, a human Senior Magus might still not be able to reach one star from another.

A gigantic ship, which had a dragon head and a phoenix tail, and was wrapped in a splendid light, was moving swiftly in the starry void of Pan Gu world. The ship was over a thousand miles long, and on both its sides, eighteen pairs of roc-wing-like, enormous golden wings had been flapping quickly, generating fierce gusts of wind. Rapidly flowing golden streams of air puffed out from these wings, pushing the ship forwards at an amazing speed, even faster than the speed of light.

This was a sky-patrolling dragon ship, a warship of the ancient heaven. Ancient divine Gods used to patrol across the whole world and awe all Pan Gu world creatures with this ship.

A ship like this wasn't produced with manpower. Instead, it was a naturally crafted, world-accompanying spirit treasure generated by the great natural rewarding power that occurred when the world was created. The total number of warships like this was one-thousand, two-hundred and ninety-six; this number could also represent the whole world. The types of this kind of warships included 'one of integrity', 'five natural elements', 'six opportunities', 'seven stars', 'eight directions', 'nine grids', 'ten positions', and the others.

The non-humankind intruded this world and started a long lasting war against the ancient heaven. Over a thousand sky-patrolling dragon ships had been destroyed in the war. Therefore, many people now believed that this kind of warship had already ceased to exist in the world. No one knew that Kua E and his

brothers still had a sky-patrolling dragon ship. Although it wasn't one of those famous ones, it was indeed a top-grade amazing treasure.

The flying speed of the sky-patrolling dragon ship was way faster than the flying speed of Kua E and his brothers themselves. Countless stars were left behind, as they smoothly controlled the ship to move forward, with the help of the strong magnetic tides between stars. Just like a ship moving in an ocean, the dragon ship swished along the magnetic tides, as nimbly as a fish.

Gradually, they moved deeply into the starry void, and no trace of living beings could be found anymore.

The surrounding stars looked like enormous eyes that silently stared at them. It made Kua E and the other thousands of divine Gods quiver, while looking at these stars in awe, for an unknown reason.

Some stars were sparkling brightly, and had countless palaces and mansions faintly visible on them. Those were homes of many ancient Gods, the owners of the stars. The ancient heaven was incredibly powerful, that every star had its owner, and the owner of every star had a giant number of powerful divine warriors under his or her command.

Back during the peak period of the ancient heaven, any order given by the five divine emperors could shake the starry void of the entire Pan Gu world, and make all living beings shiver, including the dragon-kind and the phoenix-kind. Back then, not a single race dared to go against the ancient heaven.

Eventually, this legendarily powerful ancient heaven fell. Among countless divine Gods, star owners and powerful divine warriors, only thousands managed to survive, including Kua E and his brothers. Not to mention the fact that the palaces and mansions on these stars had all been empty since long ago, and even the heaven on Sky Pillar was now cold and quiet. Most palaces in the heaven

hadn’t been touched for countless years.

"Heaven, heaven!"

Kua E stood on the deck, sighed slightly and said, "We follow the rules of our ancestors, stayed in the heaven generation after generation, never took anything that belonged to the humankind or any mortal race. Even for the meat and wine, we traded with our labor from those mortal races."

"But the heaven, oh, the heaven. Will the heaven ever rise again? Do we still have a hope? Generation after generation, we stay in that empty place. The number of our people turned smaller and smaller, while we became weaker and weaker. Every generation is weaker than the old one...By staying like this, will we truly have a hope?"

A few especially tall divine Gods walked to behind Kua E. Among them, a horned divine god, whose body was entirely glowing, and had a pair of white-scaled dragons coiled around his waist, said loudly, "Big brother, the heaven will certainly rise again. Our ancestors set the rules, so even if the heaven becomes colder and more boring, we have to guard it as we are supposed to."

Puffing up his chest, he rubbed his own belly and laughed, "Besides, we can never starve to death. It’s just that we love to eat and drink, so we trade for meat and wine from the humankind. This is indeed a bit humiliating to our ancestors, but in fact, even if we don’t eat and drink..."

Kua E licked his own mouth corner, pointed at the horned divine god and laughed, "Stop saying these nice words. If I truly let you shut the gate of the heaven and stay in without getting any meat or wine from the humankind, I bet you would start crying in starvation within three days. How many years have we been brothers? Don’t I know about you guys?"

On the dragon ship, the group of divine gods laughed out loud together, even bending their waists. Their bright and resonant

laughter spread far, far away.

The flying speed of the dragon ship was amazingly high, and added with the help of the magnetic tides between stars, the speed was even higher. Another twenty-four hours had passed, and more stars were left behind. By now, they were already too far away from Midland.

Abruptly, a large cloud of black dust drifted in the front. A halfway collapsed black star floated in the vast void. On the surface of the star, countless palaces and mansions were visible to be collapsed, and among those dilapidated walls, the skeletons of dragons phoenixes, rocs and many other legendary ancient creatures were leaning.

Around this black star, tens of thousands of different sized stars floated. These stars lifelessly floated within the black dust, and the star powers released from them all sensed fierce and vicious.

"This is...Luoho Star!" A winged divine God, who had smooth and jade-white skin, yet was thickly covered in golden stripes and had a tiger-head, shouted in shock, "After the great war, Luoho Star never showed up in the void again. Louho Star disappeared along with the spirit stars of the thirty-six-thousand subordinates of Luoho, its owner."

"I didn’t think that Luoho Star and all the thirty-six-thousand subordinate stars are in here." said Kua E in surprise. "Back in the war, if Luoho didn’t lead his warriors to rush into the enemy’s battle formation, destroying the thirteen world-crossing descending great formations of those monsters and disabling those powerful beings from launching attacks in their original world, through the thirteen formations, this world would have been occupied entirely, long ago."

"That battle was so dangerous. The spirit star of Luoho has collapsed, but fortunately, fortunately, the star core is not damaged. Let it rest for a few years, and the star can always

recover as before. But Luoho, he, he..." said the horned divine God while sadly shaking his head, "Did he even have a descendant?"

A teasing smirk came from a distance away, "Still have the time to feel sad for a dead one? Why don’t you worry about yourselves at first?"

The thirty-six-thousand stars floating around Luoho star suddenly dazzled with a black light. Countless sharp beams of starlight dazzled all over the void and wove into an enormous web, enveloping the dragon ship entirely.

A fierce aura of killing came, while a tremendous snake slowly wriggled out from a halfway collapsed palace on the Luoho Star.

Chapter 839: The Killing Poison of Snake Xiu

The snake was tens of thousands of miles long, its body purely black and completely lusterless. A layer of liquid seemed to be squirming on each black scale of its. By taking a glance at the snake from a long distance away, one would feel that their eyes were going to be corroded by the liquid. Obviously, those black scales were highly poisonous.

The body of the snake was entirely black, but its enormous head was dark-blue. The blue head glowed with a bright light, that made it look like a small, blue sun. The dark-blue scales on the snake head were crystal-like, looking like gemstones, forming a strong contrast against the snake body.

A purple fork-tongue hissed out from the snake mouth from time to time. The tongue was over a hundred miles long. As it swished out of the snake mouth, a dark sphere of mist would puff out along with it, transforming into clouds and shrouding the snake.

"Snake Xiu!" Kua E looked at this enormous snake in shock.

The group of divine Gods all growled out in rage. Pointing at the snake, the horned and glowing divine God shouted, "Snake Xiu, back then, you were almost killed by Yi, but you luckily survived by hiding in North Ocean. I haven’t seen you messing around in the world for many years. Are you seeking for death by messing with us today? Good, we can fulfill your wish!"

"Yi?" Snake Xiu coiled its enormous body and looked like a mountain standing on the ground. It’s gigantic head was straightened, while it stared at Kua E and the other divine Gods with a pair of dimly shining eyes.

"If Yi were still alive, I surely would not dare to come out. But I assume we can already cook soup with his bones by now, can’t we?" Snake Xiu slightly flipped its tail and flattened a series of buildings on Luoho star, along with a few hills. Rocks were sent

flying to thousands of miles away by its tail from the star.

"I admit I am a coward," said Snake Xiu, "I am afraid of death. I am a hundred percent lowly being who bullies the weak and fears the strong!" Snake Xiu proudly gave a grin while huge streams of venom splashed out of his poison fangs.

The black venom splashed on the ground, corroded the earth of Luoho star and created a giant hole, as all soil and rock were turned into a black liquid. Snake Xiu chucked and said, "If Yi were still alive, I would be quiet, I would do nothing... But, Yi is dead, so I can do whatever I want. What can you kids possibly do to me? I bully the weak and fear the strong, and now I am bullying you. What can you do about it?"

Kua E and the other divine Gods had their face darkened. They remained silent, clenched their fists while blood veins bulged from their skins, and a loud bone cracking noise coming out of their bodies.

These frank and straightforward divine Gods were not willing to waste any time to talk to Snake Xiu. Since Snake Xiu came to bring trouble, no matter for what reason and what purpose did it have, these divine Gods decided to rush up together and beat him up first! This was a fine style passed down from the ancient heaven, to talk with fists. This worked in the whole world and in every era. If one talked, the others might pay no attention. But if one fought, as long as one can defeat the others, whatever one said would have to be obeyed by others.

"Beat him!" Kua E growled while wielding his arms. His thousands of meters tall body instantly began expanding at a crazy rate. Within the blink of an eye, he grew to hundreds of thousands of meters tall. His hands released a bright light as a long bronze spear swished out along with a sharp noise, being gripped in his hands. The spear then released a hundred-mile-long cold light as it dragged the spear while piercing towards Snake Xiu.

The other divine Gods all growled out. Some of them expanded their bodies like Kua E and pulled out all kinds of weapons to attack Snake Xiu. Some transformed into a raging sphere of flame, an iceberg, a hurricane or a bolt of lightning, raising frightful power streams and roaring toward Snake Xiu from all directions. Their bodies now looked nothing like human beings.

Some other divine Gods shook their bodies and transformed into enormously-shaped legendary creatures. They roared resonantly, started fierce gales and blew the surrounding drifting black dust away, then pounced on Snake Xiu.

All divine Gods launched their moves with all of their powers.

Snake Xiu was a fierce prehistorical creature, enormous and greatly powerful, and also was highly poisonous. Its poison was not as powerful as Xiang Liu's venom, but still, snake Xiu was top-grade poisonous in the world. Snake Xiu was incomparably greedy, and loved to devour living creatures and their souls. It had taken countless lives back in the prehistorical era.

Supreme God Yi nearly killed Snake Xiu when he wiping out fierce evil creatures in the world to create homelands for human beings. After that, Snake Xiu fled to North Ocean, followed Water God, Gong Gong's lead, and threw itself under Gong Gong's protection. Afterwards, Snake Xiu became one of the eight senior ministers under Gong Gong's command.

As a countless years old creature, which existed ever since the prehistorical era, Snake Xiu was rather powerful. Any of those divine gods, including Kua E, wouldn't be able to rival Snake Xiu alone. However, thousands of divine Gods had launched the moves together, added with the divine weapons they inherited from the ancient heaven, they could smash Snake Xiu into meat paste.

Snake Xiu chucked loudly, that made its enormous body quiver ceaselessly.

Abruptly, it let out a water-tank-sized water ball from his mouth,

flicked its tongue and broke the water ball. Purple liquid splashed out from the water ball and quickly transformed into faint purple mist, spreading out towards all directions.

Kua E and the other divine gods were about to approach Snake Xiu, but the purple mist suddenly surrounded their bodies. They slowed down instantly. Their legs swayed powerlessly, as well as their bodies. Their fingers trembled, and they couldn’t grip their weapons anymore.

Gigantic weapons fell down from the hands of Kua E and his brothers, weakly floating around their bodies.

Kua E stared at Snake Xiu in shock while murmuring, "This is sleeping incense...but the sleeping incense can’t take our powers away...no any incense in the world can make us...us..."

Those divine Gods who had transformed into fire, ice or hurricane, transformed back to their original shapes, trying their best to support their bodies. They looked at Snake Xiu in confusion. That was nothing but a divine incense, and although it could help divine Gods to sleep, but it could never be so effective. By now, those divine Gods were almost disabled from moving.

Sleeping incense was made from a quite an ordinary plant in the heaven. It could improve the sleeping quality of divine Gods, and was an often used as supportive incense. But it obviously shouldn’t be so effective.

"Sleeping incense is just a start..." Snake Xiu chuckled while its enormous body slightly squirmed and = gradually shrank, eventually turning into a sturdy man with a black armor, floating in the void.

"Before you came here, you’ve eaten a large amount of ‘Xiangshen’, which is a forbidden drug in heaven. The effect of ‘Xiangshen’ is already activated by the sleeping incense. Now, you’re a piece of meat on the chopping board, and I can do whatever I want to you."

The group of divine Gods had their faces turned pale.

"Xiangshen?" Kuala E gave a bitter smile in despair, "We, when did we take Xiangshen?"

Chapter 840: The Forbidden Card

Xiangshen, this name sounded normal and ordinary, but to divine Gods, it was a terrifying taboo, the evilest thing.

'Xiang' meant 'offered food' literally, while 'shen' meant God. The literal meaning of Xiangshen was 'offer the God as food'. Xiangshen was made from an ordinary type of herb. The herb itself was not harmful, but was highly changeable, and could deliver countless magical effects. Once, an ancient divine green God, who mastered the art of magic-medicine-concocting, made a terrifying series of drugs with Xiangshen.

This drug called Xiangshen didn't have a recipe and a specific effect. None of its effects had a specific trigger. The recipe could change wildly, while its effects were never the same, and could be triggered by all kinds of things.

Xiangshen was also known as the most unpredictable drug ever. The bodies of divine Gods were generated by the world itself, that allowed them to be immune to all kinds of poison. Only Xiangshen could drill into the bodies of divine Gods, into the tiniest corner of their bodies and merge with the bodies of the divine Gods. Without being triggered, Xiangshen was noneffective, but after being triggered, it could deliver all kinds of horrible effects to divine Gods. Xiangshen was the only known drug in the world that was effective against divine Gods.

The ancient heaven had created a ban and forbade Xiangshen. Back then, not only all recipes were destroyed, even the main material of Xiangshen, that ordinary type of herb, was exterminated by the ancient heaven with a great effort.

Nevertheless, Kua E and his brothers had actually taken Xiangshen, which could be triggered by sleeping incense.

Fortunately, the Xiangshen they had taken could merely soften their bodies and make them powerless. If it was prepared with

those evil recipes...Kua E and his brothers had gone through those frightful effects of Xiangshen recorded in some ancient books in the heaven, and all had their scalps numbed.

"We, when did we take Xiangshen?" Kua E stared at Snake Xiu and asked, "We didn't eat any weird things recently."

"Was the grilled meat you ate in Tushan Mountain delicious?" Snake Xiu laughed proudly and resounded, "Before Xiangshen is triggered, it tastes pretty good. Didn't you realize that the grilled meat you ate had a special, indescribable sweetness?"

The group of divine Gods all roared out in anger.

Tushan Family?! Tushan Family people poisoned those grilled meat! What did they want? They invited Kua E and his brothers to build Tushan City for them. Was this whole thing a trap?!

"Run!" Kua E abruptly burst with a great growl while a divine red light was released from his mouth. Within the red light was a dragon-shaped flying shuttle. Followed by a resonant dragon roar, the flying shuttle released a beautiful glow and wrapped up the youngest twin brother of Kua E, then transformed into a red streak of light, flying towards Midland.

However, the thirty-six-thousand subordinate stars of Luoho Star released black starlight and wove into a giant web that sealed this whole area. The red streak of light bumped on the black web of starlight and sent out beams of dazzling fiery light, but failed to break out. Thousands of black straight beams coiled around the red light streak like tentacles of octopuses. Then, these starlight beams clench and twisted, squeezing out a loud cracking noise, and turned the flying shuttle into pieces. Kua E's youngest twin brother was sent out from the shuttle, being slapped on the chest by a beam of starlight, that made him fly back to Kua E while vomiting blood.

"This is Luoho sky-swallowing great formation, one of the few famous magic formations created by ancient heaven." Snake Xiu,

who was also hundreds of thousands of meters tall, slowly walked to Kua E and stomped his foot on Kua E's face.

Snake Xiu was tremendously huge and stunningly powerful. In mere terms of physical strength, he was one the very few powerful being who could rival ancient dragons, among prehistorical creatures. He cultivated himself severely for countless years that allowed him to improve amazingly. Stomped by his foot, Kua E's face bone was broken, and tens of his pearl-like glowing teeth flew out of his mouth.

Snake Xiu was wearing a pair of boots which were transformed from his own scales and were cold and hard, thickly covered in sharp thorns. Snake Xiu trod on Kua E's head, broke Kua E's face and made it bleed, exposing Kua E's golden and glowing bones under his skin and muscles.

"Bloody Snake Xiu, are you challenging the heaven?" The group of divine Gods growled in rage.

Thousands of divine Gods were turned powerless, disabled from moving, floating in the void, but they were quite loud. They shouted and yelled at Snake Xiu, some even swore that they would certainly cut Snake Xiu into pieces, slice him and cook soup with him.

Snake Xiu laughed out loud. Looking at these divine Gods, who couldn't move at all, he said in a cold voice, "You can save these terrifying words for the future. If you were not useful to me, if I didn't have to extract fresh spirit blood from you, the Xiangshen you ate would turn you directly into puddles of liquid instead of making you powerless."

Stomping heavily on Kua E's head once again, Snake Xiu swayed his body, as his gigantic body slowly shrunk to around three-meters tall. Shaking his head hard, Snake Xiu leaped up and rushed onto the dragon ship along with a black stream of mist. Taking a few circles on the deck, Snake Xiu abruptly laughed out

and said, "This is a sky-patrolling dragon ship, isn't it? Ha, such a great world-accompanying spirit treasure!"

"Shame, shame, it's only an ordinary one. If it was one of those famous ships...Hehe, those ships were destroyed long ago. How could they possibly serve till now?" Snake Xiu waved his arms excitedly and yelled, "This treasure is mine. Hehe, it's my ship from now on, magnificent, majestic-looking!

In the void, tens of black starlight beams suddenly shrank and showed a path in a large black light screen. A black watery cloud swooshed swiftly out from the path at lightning speed. Once the black cloud rushed out, the tens of starlight beams flashed again and resealed the path.

Gong Gong stood on the black cloud, with River Earl and Xiang Liu standing on both sides of him. The three of them trod on the cloud and quickly approached Kua E. Then Snake Xiu stopped laughing and hurriedly came over.

Gong Gong held his arms behind his back, narrowed his eyes, observed Kua E, then abruptly laughed.

Kua E coldly looked at Gong Gong, gnashed his teeth and said word by word, "Gong Gong...What are you doing? You drew us to this place and captured us alive with such a great effort. What do you want?"

Gong Gong gave a large grin and responded blandly, "What do I want? I want to do the thing that each one of my ancestors wanted to do, that all my Northern Wasteland people have been wanting to do, for so many years. I want to do something... that can make me happy!"

Gong Gong smiled and reached his hand out, clenching his fingers towards Kua E. Kua E suddenly began quivering. Following a deep buzzing noise, a splendidly glowing, glaze-like golden tablet flew out from Kua E's chest and landed in Gong Gong's hand, leaving an arc in the void.

Kua E and the other divine Gods had their looks instantly changed.

Kua E roared out harshly, "Gong Gong, this is pass to heaven... Gong Gong, you and Zhu Rong have already deviated from the heaven. How dare you snatch the pass to the heaven?! You, you, you've broken the divine law, you! Even death can not atone for your crime!"

Chapter 841: Break Into the Heaven

In the middle of Midland, on top of Sky Pillar, clouds and mist had been coiling around while a warm sense of power spread out. Among the clouds and mist, an ancient style magnificent palace stood on purple and golden clouds, releasing a strong power vibration that covered the entire world, making people dare not to look directly at due to the awe.

Sky Pillar, according to the legend, it was transformed from the spin of Saint Pan Gu, the creator of this world. Sky Pillar stood on the earth, reaching to the sky and stabilizing the whole world. It was the core of all stars in Pan Gu world, and the stars and the power streams flowing in underground earth meridians had all been running around it.

More importantly, Sky Pillar was the most important entrance of the heaven. Back in the ancient era, even human beings, who could be counted as the weakest among all the races, could reach straight to the heaven from the earth through Sky Pillar, as long as they had the spirit of perseverance, and were fearless to death and lucky enough. Therefore, in ancient times, human beings who were bullied by the other races often went up to the heaven, asking to see the divine emperors to sue the evil beings who did harm to the human world.

However, ever since the non-humankind intruded and the ancient heaven fell, no human being reached to the heaven again through the Sky Pillar, and no one had climbed Sky Pillar for many, many years.

Qiang Liang, a divine God, held his giant ax and sat by the gate of the heaven with his legs crossed and his eyes fixed on a bonfire in front of him. A three-mile-long boa floated in the bonfire, and was grilled sizzling. Qiang Liang continuously licked his lips while he gave a hissing laugh and said, "It’s good that they are all hired. Kua E and the other big bellies have gone to eat the grilled meat and

drink the wine. Thus, all living creatures in this Buzhou Mountain are my food now."

A muscular Kaiming beast lied beside Qiang Liang. Hearing hm murmuring to himself, the beast unhappily gave a deep roar.

The beast roar raised a puff of dust, that even made the bonfire tremble for a few times. Qiang Liang hurriedly patted on the beast's head and said in a low voice, "Alright, alright, and yours, hmm... These are your food too...You boy, why don't you go eat those evil people down there, and just drool over my food all day long?"

The beast roared out brightly towards the sky, then angrily bit on Qiang Liang's lower leg.

Qiang Liang howled in pain. The beast lessened his teeth, then shouted angrily, "How many years has it been since human beings came to file a suit the last time? Back then, divine emperor promised me that I can stay on the mountain side of Sky Pillar, and I can eat all evil people who attempt to come to heaven to sue. But how many years have been since I saw any living human being?"

The beast thudded his giant head loudly against the ground, made the ground quake intensively, then murmured pitifully, "No one comes to heaven to sue, so I don't have human meat to eat... Ah, we can only hunt animals living on Buzhou Mountain to fill our stomachs, because animals living in the human world are preys of human beings. But how many animals can be raised on Buzhou Mountain?"

The beast spat, then looked at the boa grilling on the bonfire. A stream of saliva dripped down from his mouse corner, but he insincerely continued saying, "Besides, human meat tastes way better than these animals, doesn't it?"

Qiang Liang licked his lips again, then gave a punch on the beast's head and said, "Alright, you can eat, just shut up. Kua E and the others have gone to work. They won't come back for a couple

of years at least. All animals on this mountain are ours now, enough for you to fulfill your stomach."

The beast snorted and swayed his head. However, he suddenly leaped up, with his body expanded to three-hundred meters, while nine human heads emerged on his neck, crazily roaring towards the sky.

A thunderous series of roars vibrated the sky that made clouds wave like the ocean. The Kaiming beast released a dazzling light from his eyes as he shouted with a strong and resonant voice that pierced straight into the sky, "Get the hell away! This is the heaven, who dares to intrude?! Aren't you afraid that your entire clan would be wiped out?!"

Qiang Liang grabbed the ax put beside him while standing up at lightning speed. Then, he launched a violent hack directly towards the sky without saying a word.

Clang! Followed by a loud bang, a purely black ice stick smashed down and clashed against Qiang Liang's ax. Fire sparkles were sent to every direction while ice crystals zipped out. Qiang Liang sensed a great pain from his arms. He staggered back for tens of steps and almost had his head bump on the gate of the heaven. With a great shock, he raised his head and saw Wuzhi Qi, who had now transformed back into a giant water ape, and had been grinning towards him while showing the sharp teeth.

"Wuzhi Qi!" Qiang Liang's heart twitched intensively.

Wuzhi Qi was a well-know prehistorical creature. Back in the peak period of the ancient heaven, he was already a famous fierce beast. Qiang Liang was a descendant of divine God, but he was born after the ancient heaven fell. Therefore, in both terms of power and fame, he was far weaker than Wuzhi Qi.

"What do you want? Breaking into the heaven without permission, this is a heavy offense!" Qiang Liang took a deep breath while gripping the ax with both of his hands, silently

preparing for a great fight.

"Ah, breaking into the heaven was indeed a heavy offense, but that was countless years ago, wasn't that?" Wuzhi Qi carelessly squatted on a watery cloud, showed his teeth and laughed to Qiang Liang, "Now, even if I do break into the heaven, who can convict me?"

Pointing at Qiang Liang with his large stick, Wuzhi Qi chuckled and said, "Can you do that, kid? Or...Kua E and his brothers? Who are busy at doing part-time jobs for the humankind to trade for wine and food?"

Qiang Liang narrowed his eyes and said blandly, "What happened to Kua E and his brothers?"

The heaven had fallen indeed, but still, no one dared to underestimate the power of the heaven. If Qiang Liang, Kua E and his brothers were all guarding in the heaven and activated the Heaven and Earth great formation to defend, no one could ever make a single step into the heaven without permission, unless thousands of powerful prehistorical creatures like Wuzhi Qi joined hands and attacked. Since Wuzhi Qi dared to show such an attitude, there was only one explanation, something happened to Kua E and his brothers.

"Smart!" A dark cloud descended from the sky, treading on which, Gong Gong, Xiang Liu, River Earl and a large group of ministers under Gong Gong's command, who were wearing black armors, landed in front of the gate of the heaven with weird smiles on their faces.

Qiang Liang took a step aside, while Kaiming beast did the same thing. They stood side by side and shielded the gate of the heaven.

The Kaiming beast gnashed his teeth and cursed, "Gong Gong... The first generation of Gong Gong was never a good one. Back then, I should really have taken out your ancestor."

Gong Gong smiled, looked at the beast and laughed, "Kaiming beast, you’re an old minister in heaven. I don’t want your blood in my hands. Just follow my lead, and I can give you whatever you want. Won’t that be better than staying this wildness and live a boring poor life?"

The beast cast a complicated glance at Gong Gong, helplessly sighed and said, "I want to do that...But, before divine emperors... Before the few old bastards fell, I promised them that I will guard the heaven well. Therefore, I can only stay here and guard the heaven."

"Stupid!" Gong Gong looked at the beast and growled coldly.

The beast lowered his eyelids and responded in a bland tone, "Stupid? No, I don’t think so. I’m just loyal!"

Smiling coldly, the beast threw a sideway glance at Gong Gong and continued in that bland tone, "Of course, you don’t understand...Your Gong Gong people just don’t understand!"

Chapter 842: Into the Heaven

"Loyal?"

Gong Gong's white face turned dark. He threw a sideway glance back at the beast, then flicked his hands and let out a sphere of liquid. Clouds of sleeping incense spread out, that made the bodies of Qiang Liang and Kaiming beast sway simultaneously. The six legs of theirs shook intensely, and at last, both of them weakly fell on the ground.

"Loyalty is bullshit!"

Looking at Qiang Liang and Kaiming beast, who lied on the ground and couldn't even move their fingers, Gong Gong gave a cold teasing sneer.

Qiang Liang opened his mouth, seeming to say something, but Wuzhi Qi jumped down from the dark cloud, raised his black ice stick and poked fiercely into his mouth. Qiang Liang moaned in pain while blood flowed out of his mouth with broken teeth mixed in it. The blood was quickly frozen by the cold power released from the stick.

Kaiming beast couldn't move his large head, but the nine human heads with twisted faces on his neck opened their eyes simultaneously. From those scary looking eyes, which were filled with blood streaks, a dazzling light was released, that transformed into eighteen misty chains, coiled around Wuzhi Qi along with the cries and screams of countless evil spirits.

Standing beside Gong Gong, Xiang Liu laughed viciously. Abruptly, his neck extended and became a snake body, thickly covered in scales. The black snake body extended to tens of miles long, then split into nine. Nine hideous snakeheads emerged from a dense black mist.

Xiang Liu's snakeheads opened the enormous mouths and

sprayed out drops of venom. The venom fell onto the top of Sky Pillar, as a turbid mist coiled up from Sky Pillar, transforming into a cloud that caught the venom, keeping it from touching Sky Pillar.

Xiang Liu looked at the cloud and gave a cold snort, seeming to be afraid of the cloud. Next, his nine snake heads sucked loudly toward Kaiming beast's body. The dazzling light released from the eyes of the human heads on the beast's neck flew into Xiang Liu's mouths in streams. No matter how loud the beast roared, he couldn't free himself from the great suction force given by Xiang Liu.

"Kaiming beast, if you were still as powerful as before, I wouldn't dare to offend you." said Xiang Liu while looking at Kaiming beast in a teasing way, "But, are you still you? I can crush you with my little finger now!"

The human heads on Kaiming beast's neck weakly moaned, then closed their eyes.

Kaiming beast raised his head with difficulty, glanced at Xiang Liu, then roared with his teeth gnashed tightly.

"Is this the price of loyalty? Hehe, Kaiming beast, you're nothing more than this." Xiang Liu satisfyingly transformed back into the human shape and burped loudly. The dazzling light released from the human heads on Kaiming beast's neck was condensed from the evil spirits of all evil people who were eaten by Kaiming beast during the past countless years. The light contained a great evil power that came from countless evil human beings, and the evil power was a perfect supplement to Xiang Liu.

A while ago, two of Xiang Liu's heads were chopped off by Ji Hao, that not only humiliated him but also consumed a lot of his life-force. However, absorbing the evil power released from Kaiming beast, Xiang Liu had not only replenished his consumed life-force but also gained a great benefit. His power was even improved largely. After all, back in the ancient time, Kaiming beast was the

leader of all divine creatures who were responsible for guarding the gate of the Sky Pillar and awing evil beings in the world. Back then, Kaiming beast was way more powerful than Xiang Liu. Therefore, Xiang Liu dared not to offend Kaiming beast at that time.

But things had changed. The ancient heaven fell, and Kaiming beast became a captive of Xiang Liu.

"Kua E and his boys seem to be good friends, " said Snake Xiu, standing behind Gong Gong and laughing teasingly, "Every time they gained meat and wine, they brought back to share with you. Perfect now, we've gotten all of you."

Qiang Liang's face was almost smashed. With difficultly, he vomited blood while mumbling, "Xiangshen...those idiots, they are trapped. Bloody Tushan Family, did they entrap us? How dare they, how dare they entrap Gods in heaven!"

Gong Gong and his group of ministers laughed together, all with weird looks.

They were just going to let Qiang Liang and his friends misunderstand the Tushan Family. In the face of such a misunderstanding, Gong Gong and his people would never be kind enough to explain the truth to them. They just wanted the misunderstanding to become deeper and deeper.

Snake Xiu trod on the black cloud and flew to the gate of the heaven with his head held high. He raised his head, looked at the gate, which reached straight into the sky, and was cast from five-colored divine metal, embossed with the patterns of countless legendary divine creatures, rains, clouds, winds and thunder. It also had countless spell symbols sparkling on it. Snake Xiu carefully reached his hands out and pressed on the gate, trying to push the gate open.

Before Gong Gong could stop Snake Xiu, a muffled bang was generated. A five-colored, enormous mountain, which was

condensed from a five-colored bolt of thunder, roared out from the air and violently smashed on Snake Xiu. The nearly tangible five-colored thunderbolt struck onto Snake Xiu's body. The black armor worn by him, which was transformed from his own scales, seemed to be completely ineffective, as the thunderbolt drilled straight into his body. The terrifying divine thunderbolt blasted inside Snake Xi's body. From Snake Xiu's eyes, nostrils, mouth and ears, thousands of meters long flakes of thunder-flame roared out while he howled shrilly in pain. His body was sent flying to hundreds of miles away, and was forced back to his original snake shop, following his loud howls.

The tens of thousands of miles long snake fell down from the top of Sky Pillar while screaming. His enormous body bumped fiercely into the rugged rocks on Sky Pillar and crushed countless ancient spirit herbs on the way, along with a large number of animals who didn't manage to escape timely.

Sky Pillar stood right in the middle of Midland and reached straight into the clouds. It connected the heaven and the earth, and was at least hundreds of millions of kilometers tall. Snake Xiu fell down from the top of Sky Pillar, and even with the free fall speed, he could never reach the earth before three to five hundred years.

Bolts of five-colored divine lightning sizzled on Snake Xi's thick scale. Wherever the divine lightning bolts flashed across, the snake scales were struck to pieces. Ceaselessly, bloody wounds appeared on the enormous body of Snake Xiu while blood splashed out, flowing down through Sky Pillar. A large section of Sky Pillar was dyed red by the snake blood, nourishing those ancient spirit plants on Sky Pillar, instantly making the plants especially thriving.

"He made a fool of himself!" shouted Gong Gong in anger while a dark cloud emerged above his head and transformed into a tens of thousands of miles in radius black palm, It reached down, grabbed Snake Xiu's tail and shook violently.

Snake Xiu's body was shaken straight, while a five-colored divine lightning bolt dazzled out of his mouth, roaring towards the earth. A dark cloud stoped the divine lightning bolt. Then, as the cloud grew denser and denser, the divine lightning bolt was swallowed into the cloud.

Snake Xiu coughed out a puff of black smoke, then transformed back into the human shape. He flew back onto the top of Sky Pillar, bowed to Gong Gong in both rage and shame and said, "Master... something's wrong with the gate of the heaven."

Gong Gong's mouth corner twitched in anger as he heard Snake Xiu. What a superfluous report! This was the gate of the heaven, if it could be opened as easily as any door in the world, why would he spend such a great effort to set the series of traps to catch Kua E and his brothers, then take his people to break into the heaven after all this?

Snorting coldly, Gong Gong shook his hand and let out the pass that he snatched from Kua E.

The gate of the heaven silently opened. Then, Gong Gong gave his order, following which, a large group of his people carefully followed him into the heaven.

Chapter 843: Occupy the Heaven

The gate of the heaven was opened. Xiang Liu, Snake Xiu, River Earl, Wuzhi Qi, these four senior ministers under Gong Gong's command held their breaths together while looking at those splendid palaces and mansions, which were surrounded by dense cloud and mist, behind the gate.

Even Gong Gong subconsciously popped out his eyes, looking at those palaces with incomparably greedy and passionate eyes. He held his hands behind his body, pretending to be calm and careless, but his pair of hands hiding in his sleeves, which were larger than ordinary human hands, were clenched tightly into fists. Because of the tightness, his knuckles had even turned pale.

A dim black stream of light spread out from deep inside Gong Gong's pupils, and gradually formed a dark swirl in each of his eyes, seeming to swallow the entire heaven up, digest it then turn into a part of Gong Gong's body.

"The heaven...My ancestors, today, my Gong Gong Family finally returns." Although Gong Gong had been trying quite hard to pretend to be calm, his body had still been shaking without his control.

Qiang Liang and Kaiming beast were carried on the shoulders of a group of Gong Gong Family warriors. Haring Gong Gong, Qiang Liang abruptly teased, "Finally return? Back then, you deviated from the heaven yourself!"

Gong Gong took a deep breath and responded blandly, "That's an old story. Zhu Rong could leave the heaven, so why couldn't I?"

Qiang Liang answered in a cold voice, "Zhu Rong left the heaven to be the Great Libation of the humankind, to spread the fire for human beings, and he is worshipped by generations of human beings. They are the family of the Fire God. Without the fire, human ancestors could never survive. They left the heaven with

the permission of the divine emperors!"

Kaiming beast spat loudly then continued with a cold voice, "Zhu Rong Family served as the Great Libation of the humankind, generation after generation. The Fire God Family shielded human beings from all kinds of evils and dangers, and opened up homelands for the humankind. Therefore, they are worshipped by generations of human beings. Your Gong Gong Family can do nothing but start floods. You forced those weak human clans to serve you, and you..."

While Kaiming beast was accusing Gong Gong for all the bad things the Gong Gong Family had done, Wuzhi Qi abruptly burst with a wild roar and slapped on its face with the stick. The force hollowed a half of the beast's face and made his sharp teeth fly out of his mouth.

Blood gushed out of the beast's face. Kaiming beast howled in pain, then couldn't speak anymore.

Gong Gong snorted coldly, gnashed his teeth and said, "Anyway, the heaven is mine now! The heaven belongs to our Gong Gong Family now! From now on, the heaven is one of my properties! It will shine upon generations of my descendants, until forever!"

Laughing wildly towards the sky for a short while, Gong Gong suddenly rushed up for a few steps. However, from the broad path in front of him, which was embossed with the patterns of dragons and phoenixes, large clouds of mist suddenly burst out, that made Gong Gong hurriedly take tens of steps backward like a frightened bird. He almost stepped out of the gate of heaven.

Not only Gong Gong, but the four senior ministers of his also shouted out, turned around and fled at their highest speed. Just now, Snake Xiu suffered a heavy strike of the five-colored divine thunder by the gate. As a consequence, his body was severely damaged already. Therefore, none of them was willing to try those defensive traps set in the heaven with their bodies ever again.

Besides, anyone could easily figure out that more defensive traps were definitely set inside the heaven, in all kinds of important spots, than outside.

Snake Xiu was nearly killed outside by the divine thunder. If another divine thunderbolt struck on his head in the heaven, wouldn't he be killed for real?

Gong Gong was the descendant of the ancient divine Water God, but Xiang Lou, Wuzhi Qi and Snake Xiu were famous evil prehistorical creatures. Even though they had boosted their courage up to walk into the heaven, their hearts were still filled with fear and awe to the heaven, just like River Earl. River Earl was one of the official regional water Gods entitled by the ancient heaven. But he was only a regional god, and couldn't compare with those real divine Gods. Back then, River Earl only had limited chance of coming into the heaven. Therefore, he also had fear and longing to the heaven.

For the above reasons, Gong Gong was frightened, turned around and fled. The four ministers of his followed closely behind him and desperately fled as well. Each of them showed an ugly and embarrassing shape, such that their dignities were nothing now.

Dashing backward for tens of steps, seeing nothing happen on the path except the clouds rising out of the mist, Gong Gong instantly had his face darkened. He snorted coldly and embarrassedly, then growled at his ministers in anger and said, "What to be afraid of? Why are you all in a panic? Everything is under my control. It's nothing...nothing but a dead thing, without an owner."

The group of people under Gong Gong's command dared not to make any sound. Still, they looked at the heaven, which was covered in splendid streams of light and clouds, in fear and awe.

The heaven wasn't built artificially. Instead, back when the world was created, the heaven was generated naturally. The

heaven was generated by the natural will of this world, or in other words, the heaven was a greatly powerful world-accompanying spirit treasure, and it was the absolutely most powerful one among all world-accompanying spirit treasures in Pan Gu world. No other treasure could ever be compared with it.

Right in front of Gong Gong and his people, standing on the layers of purple, golden, cyan and green clouds, was a series of palaces, which were built in an ancient style, beautiful, magnificent and exquisite. Every single detail of these buildings was stunningly beautiful, and every brick of these buildings was filled with the power of Dao of nature.

Every palace, every hall, every mansion, every nursery garden, all of these buildings were surrounded by different colored, breathtakingly beautiful divine lights, that descended straight from the sky. These divine lights had different colors, pouring down straight from the sky. These lights were the magical power of creation that came from nature. The Heaven and Earth great formation had been absorbing essence powers from the world, transforming the power into these divine lights and nourishing those buildings. Therefore, buildings in heaven were all perfectly clean, despite the fact that no one had been taking care of them for countless years. The heaven was empty, but not tumbledown at all. In addition to that, the defensive power of every building had been ceaselessly improving, which meant that the defensive power of the entire heaven was improving as well.

In front of Gong Gong and his people was a hundred miles wide, ten-thousand miles long golden path. Thin streams of mist coiled in the path, while the path glowed like an enormous piece of treasure. The surface of the path was embossed with countless patterns of legendary creatures and rare plants, among which, the patterns of dragons and phoenixes were the most.

Gong Gong walked on the path and led his group of people to carefully move forward. Soon, they walked through the ten-

thousand miles long path and entered into the Light Palace, that was the first palace in the heaven, and located at the end of the long path.

This palace was the core of an outer defensive formation of the heaven. The palace was thousands of meter tall, tens of thousands of miles in radius. Every single thing in the palace was gorgeous and brilliant, and enormous, because they were designed for those gigantic ancient Gods, who were hundreds, and even a thousand meters tall.

Gong Gong carefully walked to the throne of the owner of the Light Palace, put the pass on the enormous golden long table in front of the throne, then bit his tongue broken. He spread his own spirit blood on a divine talisman that emerged from the long table, then began incanting a complicated spell.

A quarter of an hour later, the Light Palace quaked slightly. Then, the first layer of defensive divine magic formation of the heaven was completely brought under Gong Gong's control.

Chapter 844: Control the Divine Sleeping Palace

"Ah!!!"

A divine God with a tiger's head, a human body, and a pair of wings, with ankles thickly covered in fine white feathers, lied with his stomach on the ground. A few monkeys pressed his body heavily on the ground while squeezing his body, as if they were squeezing the juice out of a fruit.

The wrists of the divine god were cut open. Along with the violent moves of the few monkeys, streams of faintly golden blood ceaselessly spurt out of his wrists, that looked like boiling golden liquid. The blood flowed along the complicated divine spell symbols on the ground.

Nearly a thousands divine gods, whose blood were almost drained, lied disorderly around, looking at the winged divine God, whose blood had been squeezed out of his body, in fear and despair. These divine gods had almost lost all of their blood. To the God-kind, blood was only a media for them to manipulate their divine powers. Even if their blood were all drained, they would merely lose a part of life-force, but their lives wouldn't be threatened. However, the emptiness of their bodies was killing them by now.

Nevertheless, the physical suffering was far weaker than the great shock they were going through.

Why did Gong Gong know about this place? How did he straightaway find this place after he controlled most of the public defensive magic formations in the heaven?

This was a purely black divine palace, entirely built with black divine materials, and was flawless. Only people with extremely great eye power could see the slight traces of sparkling starlight

inside, through the thick walls of the palace. Only the most powerful senior divine Gods could sense the faint, magical power, which seemed to lie between life and death, of this palace.

This palace was called Divine Sleeping Palace. As the name stated, this was a place for divine Gods to fall in a deep sleep. This was not an ordinary palace for divine Gods to live in. Instead, this was a place for those divine Gods, who had reached the limitation of their lives, to seal themselves.

In the Divine Sleeping Palace, these divine Gods, whose embers of lives were about to snuff out, could fall in a deep sleep, almost eternally, to maintain their last life-force. According to the direction given by the last divine emperor in the heaven, if the heaven could ever rise again, these divine Gods would be woken up from the deep sleep, and would attain immortal lives, like their ancestors!

Divine Gods sleeping in this palace were keeping a slim hope for themselves. However, to the heaven, they were the last defensive line. If any irresistible enemy came, for example, the enemies raised a great army again and marched into the heaven, these divine Gods in the divine sleeping palace would be woken up to fight against the enemies.

For the above reasons, the Divine Sleeping Palace was an absolute forbidden area, and an absolute secret.

Gong Gong shouldn’t know about the existence of the Divine Sleeping Palace, because when the last divine emperor activated the Heaven and Earth great formation and created the Divine Sleeping Palace before He fell, Gong Gong had left the heaven long ago. Therefore, Gong Gong and his people shouldn’t know about these secrets.

On the thousand-mile square ground of the palace, countless complicated divine spell symbols were filled with the divine blood that flowed out from the bodies of divine Gods. Gong Gong stood

on the core of this divine magic formation formed by these divine spell symbols, holding the pass and laughing viscously, "You must be wondering why do I know about this place. But, I will never tell you. Anyway, you shall know about one thing — From now on, this heaven belongs to my Gong Gong Family, forever and ever!"

Kua E, whose blood was also drained, huddled on the ground and glared at Gong Gong with his teeth gnashed. He was confused and enraged, as countless thoughts flashed disorderly in his head, but he couldn't grasp any useful information or idea.

What was Gong Gong doing? He had already controlled the tens of outer layers of defensive magic formation of the heaven. Except for some core forbidden areas, that even Kua E and his brothers couldn't enter, around ninety percent of the heaven was already under Gong Gong's control.

Now, he laid his fingers on the Divine Sleeping Palace. What on earth did he want?

Ever since the ancient heaven fell, the lifespan of divine Gods had become shorter and shorter. Sleeping in this Divine Sleeping Palace were Kua E, Qiang Liang, and the other divine Gods' ancestors, and even their parents.

What was Gong Gong doing to the Divine Sleeping Palace?

Kua E's body twitched intensely as he growled with a hoarse voice, "Gong Gong! Whatever you want, we can negotiate!"

Wuzhi Qi raised his huge stick and smashed on Kua E's head, almost crushing his head entirely. Kua E twitched in pain. If he didn't have the strong life-force belonging to a divine God, this strike would have taken his life away.

"Shut up! By now, anything you say will be useless." Gong Gong coldly looked at Kua E, raised the pass and sent a stream of power in while saying, "I just want to eliminate the last little bit of hidden trouble...Although I don't believe that these old things still have

much of powers, but the fewer accidents, the better."

Dong! Followed by a thunderous noise, twenty-eight streams of starlight abruptly began flowing on the four walls of the Divine Sleeping Palace. Next, numerous thousands of meter tall silhouettes emerged. These giant silhouettes slowly freed themselves from the sealing power of the walls and walked over in big steps, each with a splendid glow. Their bodies were formed by the purest starlight. Their faces were hazy, such that no eyes or mouths could be seen, and the dreadful sense of powers released from their bodies even made Gong Gong's heart start beating.

"The primordial spirits of the twenty-eight star owners." said Gong Gong with a cold smile, "I didn't think that they have already regained eighty to ninety percent of their powers, since they were destroyed completely by the non-humankind back then. Hehe, even I can only suppress three to five of them, tops. The twenty-eight star owners don't need to form any battle formation. As long as they rush up together, I will be killed right on the spot."

Tauntingly looking at Kua E and his brothers, Gong Gong cursed with a low voice, "Possessing the great powers, you go to work for those lowly human beings to trade for wine and meat! You so-called divine Gods...You humiliated the heaven!"

Kua E weakly murmured, "The rule is set by our ancestors. This is the agreement between the heaven and the humankind...The heaven has fallen, and Gods no longer stand high above the masses. We earned that food and wine with our own hands, so we feel no shame!"

"Shut up! You idiot!" growled Gong Gong fiercely, "We are Gods... Gods are supposed to stand high above the masses. Those lowly human beings are supposed to kneel in front of us, offer us the power of faith, as much as they can! You are unreasonable!"

The primordial spirits of the twenty-eight star owners roared out simultaneously, stretched the arms and fiercely tore the air. Under

the effect of their combined power, the space in the Divine Sleeping Palace was torn apart, showing a beautiful glowing, square-shaped gate.

Gong Gong laughed out loud, took Xiang Liu and the others, and walked into the gate with big steps.

In front of them was the boundless starry void. Incredibly pure and strong prehistorical star power had transformed into visible silver streams, forming a vast silver ocean, silently floating in the void. Countless colorful crystal coffins floated in the silver ocean. Sleeping inside those coffins were countless divine Gods with different appearances.

Streams of star power descended, continuously flowing into these crystal coffins. Through the transparent coffins, one could see that the chests of those divine gods had been slightly rising and falling, ceaselessly absorbing the starlight.

Gong Gong smiled faintly and said with a vicious voice, "Destroy this place. Kill every last one of them! They didn’t want to die, but I am going to wipe them all out!"

Chapter 845: The Gate Keeper

"One, two, three, four, five..."

Kua E and his brothers were thrown onto the square outside the Divine Sleeping Palace, lying in a straight line. Xiang Liu was looking at them with a malicious grin on his face.

Transparent, colorful crystal coffins flew out from the Divine Sleeping Palace one after another. Every coffin had a black divine talisman stick on it, releasing black and cold streams of power which were coiling around the coffin like fierce serpents. Twisted spell symbols formed from dark crystals covered those coffins, sealing every coffin.

The faces of Kua E and his brothers had turned deathly pale. In a daze, they looked at those divine Gods inside those coffins. Every coffin flew that out of the palace had a family member of each of these captured divine Gods sleeping in it. Those were their parents!

Xiang Liu was still unhurriedly counting those coffins. Gong Gong family warriors pushed out more coffins while laughing. At last, in front of Kua E and each of those captured divine gods, a coffin floated, containing the mother or father of the captured divine God before it.

If those divine Gods sleeping in these coffins had already died, Kua E and his brothers wouldn’t have such a strong reactions. To gods, they were given birth by nature, and they should naturally go back to nature after dying.

However, divine Gods sleeping in those coffins were still alive, and those were their parents. Through the thick layer of divine crystal and those complicated spell symbols created by Gong Gong himself, Kua E and his brothers saw their parents breathing slowly and slightly, saw their chests rising and falling, and even heard their hearts beating.

The first generation of Gods were creatures of nature. They didn't have fleshy bodies, but they did have immortal lives. They were the most original and most powerful generation of Gods, and were the ancestors of all gods in the world.

As time went by, Gods gradually attained fleshy bodies and fertility, just like human beings. Descendants of Gods were naturally Gods too, and the descendants of Gods also had great powers and long lifespans.

Normally, even descendants of Gods didn't need to worry about their lifespans, unless they wanted to die. At least, before the ancient heaven fell, not a single God died because he or she had reached the limitation of their lifespan. However, the non-humankind intruded Pan Gu world, and the heaven started a series of great wars against the non-humankind. Countless ancient divine Gods fell, and then the heaven fell. Afterward, the lifespans of divine Gods were shortened quickly and largely, and every new generation of Gods had shorter lifespans than the last generation.

The Divine Sleeping Palace was the last hope. Only with this hope, new generations of divine Gods could hang on in the heaven. They sealed themselves in the Divine Sleeping Palace when they were going to reach the end of their lifespan. In the Sleeping Palace, their bodies were nourished by the natural powers, and they hoped that one day, the heaven could rise again, back to the peak, and they could regain the glory of their ancestors and attain immortal lives.

Kua E, Qiang Liang and the other young divine Gods all believed that one day, the heaven would rise again. Then, their parents and grandparents, who were sleeping in these coffins, would regain their life-force, and they could live together again, happily ever after.

If they didn't have this last hope, how could these powerful young divine Gods, who loved grilled meat and wine, obediently follow the rules of their ancestors and willingly stay in the cold and

empty heaven, without taking a single step out if they didn't have to?

But now, their parents were right in front them.

Gong Gong slowly walked out of the palace, looking at these coffins as he said blandly, "What a bunch of old things who are unwilling to give up. My father, my grandfather, my great-grandfather, every generation of Gong Gong...Hehe, some of them had gone missing, but some of them died, as they had reached the ends of their lives.

"But you...You homeless dogs. You idiots, you still want the ancient glory, and you have actually figured out a way to steal the power of destiny."

"You sealed yourselves, vainly attempting to regain an immortal life when the heaven rises again!"

Gong Gong abruptly burst with a growl while slapping on a coffin.

The colorful crystal coffin was smashed by Gong Gong's palm as countless thumb-sized crystal pieces clanged against the splendidly glowing ground. Lying in the coffin was a divine God with a human body and a dragon head, who had strangely-shaped, bulged bones on both shoulders. This divine God seemed to be brave and fierce, and also had a strong sense of power released from his body. However, in a deep sleep, he had no power of resistance. Gong Gong smashed his head.

A shrill howl could then be heard. The young divine god with a dragon head kneeled in front of this coffin, having his eyes popped widely out while hoarsely screaming 'Abba', then showed the whites of his eyes and fainted.

The dragon-head divine God in the coffin twitched intensively. His head was smashed and his soul was broken by Gong Gong. From his neck, his body began burning slowly. Seven colored

divine flame lit gradually, burned his body and released pure streams of natural powers, transforming into a hurricane, roaring out of the flame.

Gods were generated by natural powers, and were the creatures of the natural law. Therefore, the more powerful a God was, the more natural powers he or she had in the body.

The dragon-head divine God’s body began burning while raging streams of natural powers surged out. Soon, the surrounding space was suffused by pure natural powers. Because of the high density, the natural powers even condensed into visible streams, coiling around everyone on the scene.

"For such a good thing, you didn’t tell me!" Gong Gong sighed slightly and said in a bland tone, "You should have informed our Gong Gong Family regarding this. You should...You should have told us, so that my father, my grandfather, they could be lying in coffins in this place as well."

"But you didn’t!" Gong Gong sighed slightly, then punched another seven coffins into pieces, perishing the souls of the divine Gods sleeping in those coffins.

The few young Gods kneeled in front of these seven coffins cried in sadness, then all fainted in heartache. Their parents were killed by Gong Gong just like this, right in front of them. The souls of Gods couldn’t remain existing in the world after they died, neither could they reincarnate. When a god died, both the body and the soul would cease to exist.

"What on earth do you want?!" Kua E even screamed hoarsely, "You’ve already controlled the heaven! Except for those areas that even we aren’t allowed to enter, you’ve controlled over ninety percent of the heaven! What else do you want?!"

"Who’s the gatekeeper?" Gong Gong looked at Kua E’s twisted face and asked word by word, "Who is the gatekeeper?"

All captured divine gods stared at Gong Gong in shock, had their bodies stiff and couldn’t say a word.

"You…shouldn’t know!" Kua E’s body swayed slightly. He almost fell unconscious.

"But I know…Who’s the gatekeeper? Stand out, do what I say!" growled Gong Gong, "Do what I say, so they can all live. Otherwise, I will kill every last one in the Sleeping Palace! All your ancestors will die!"

Remaining silent for a while, a short divine God, whose body was covered in soft silver hair, tremblingly said, "I…I am the current… gatekeeper!"

Chapter 846: The Divine Origin Pool

"Bai Rouzi!" Kua E growled out and looked at the divine God who stood up.

Bai Rouzi was short and slim, and was stunningly beautiful. If she didn't have those long silver hair covering all over her body, she would look like a breathtakingly beautiful young human girl. However, the silver hair on her body didn't do any harm to her beauty. Instead, it made her look magical and mysterious.

Among the group of captured divine Gods, only Kua E and the other few showed despair on their faces, while the others were mostly confused and shocked. Some even whispered, "Do we truly have a gatekeeper? Bao Rouzi, a little girl? What gate has she been keeping? Is there still something in the heaven that we don't know about?"

"Kua E and Qiang Liang seem to know something about it, right? Eh, the heaven has fallen already. What gate still requires a special gatekeeper? So all those legends turn out to be true?"

The group of divine Gods whispered to each other. According to their conversations, they had heard about the gatekeeper once, but most of them didn't believe it. They thought that it was only a story. However, with such an extreme method, Gong Gong forced Bai Rouzi to stand out. Meanwhile, Kua E, Qiang Liang and the other few, who were the leaders of the young divine Gods, showed despair on their faces. Obviously, this was a great secret that ordinary divine Gods didn't have the right to know about. But none of them knew how did Gong Gong find this out.

"Are you the current gatekeeper?" Gong Gong walked to Bai Rouzi, raised her chin with his long and slim finger, curiously looked at her young face and said, "A little girl, can you even take such a heavy responsibility?"

Bao Rouzi tremblingly remained silent. In a great panic, she

turned around and looked at Kua E.

Kua E had taken Xiangshen and was paralyzed, so he couldn’t even move his fingers. But at the moment, he suddenly boosted up his strength and leaped straight up, pointed at Bai Rouzi and screamed, "Bai Rouzi, you cant..."

Snake Xiu gave a malicious smirk while suddenly dashing to before Kua E’s face, cutting into Kua E’s chest with his right hand, which was as sharp and hard as a blade. His arm penetrated Kua E’s body, and Kua E opened his mouth, but could only breath loudly and desperately, without being able to say one more word.

Bai Rouzi was frightened so badly that her face had turned dreadfully pale. Gong Gong showed a warm grin, rubbed Bai Rouzi’s head and said, "You don’t want your Abba and Amma to die in front of you, do you? Gods, if they die, they will die for good. Nothing will remain. You don’t want your parents to die, do you?"

Bai Rouzi quickly shook her head. Tears gushed out of her eye corners, being sent flying away along with her moves.

"So, just take me to there." Gong Gong gripped Bai Rouzi’s neck with his long fingers. Bai Rouzi’s neck was slim, and couldn't even fill his hand. Gong Gong then laughed, "Take me to there, then we can negotiate anything. You will be fine, your friends will be fine, your families, these old things who had themselves sealed, will also be fine...Alright?"

Bai Rouzi raised her heads, seeming to say something. But Gong Gong sensitively realized that she was struggling in the heart.

While sneering, Gong Gong continued slowly, "You are going to tell me how important is your responsibility, how many lives that are related to it, aren’t you? Just wake up, little girl. If that responsibility is truly so important, why are you, a little girl, carrying it? Not Kua E, not Qiang Liang, not Kaiming beast?"

"Your responsibility is not as important as you think it is, neither

is it as important as they told you it is."

As a dim stream of light flashed across his eyes, God Gong said tauntingly, "You are tricked. The so-called responsibility of yours, of a gatekeeper, is just a dream of those idiots, who weren't willing to admit that the heaven has fallen forever."

Bai Rouzi opened her mouth, looking at him without knowing what to do.

Qiang Liang suddenly leaped up, raised a fierce gust of wind while pouncing on Bai Rouzi. He clenched his fists, punching straight down towards Bai Rouzi's head. Frightened by Qiang Liang's sudden moves, Bao Rouzi subconsciously screamed out.

Wuzhi Qi rushed up and violently smashed his stick on Qiang Liang's neck. Qiang Liang gave a muffled moan as his neck was nearly struck broken, and his body was sent flying away like a broken kite. He vomited blood, struggled for quite a while but still failed to stand back up.

Kaiming beast roared despairingly. Large streams of brightly shining warm power emerged from under his feet, carrying him up and allowing him to bump towards Bai Rouzi.

River Earl gave a vicious laugh while turning a black jade bottle held in his hand around. A bone-piercing cold power screamed out, that froze Kaiming beast into a giant block of ice. The huge ice block banged against the ground. Inside the dark ice, Kaiming beast shivered intensely, but didn't have any more power to struggle.

"Little girl, take me to the place you've been guarding." Gong Gong gently smiled to Bai Rouzi and said, "Just obey. Do what I say, so you can all live. Otherwise, I will order my people to kill all living beings in this place, except for yourself, right now."

Bao Rouzi slightly trembled, then gnashed her teeth and slowly nodded.

Among the thousands of captured divine Gods, three to five stood up and growled hoarsely out, "Bai Rouzi, do you remember..."

Xiang Liu laughed, then a few snakeheads of his flew out and thudded against the bodies of these few divine Gods, breaking their bones and sending them flying away. Gong Gong abruptly laughed out with a gentle voice, "A bunch of silly kids, they take this quite seriously. Bai Rouzi, take me to where you've been guarding. Don't waste time, alright?"

While gently and slowly scratching Bai Rouzi's slim neck, Gong Gong continued with that deep, creepy voice of his, "I am a bit impatient, and I really want to kill a few now."

Bai Rouzi hurriedly shook her head, pointed at the inner area of the heaven as she stuttered, "Don't kill anyone. The place I've been guarding is right in the Lihen Palace."

Pausing briefly, Bai Rouzi continued with a low voice, "Be careful, do not break any hair of mine with your fingernails. The divine magic formation for opening that gate is extremely complicated. Each of my 129600 hair is corresponding to a spell symbol. Only when all spell symbols merge into one can the gate can be opened. Therefore, among all the entire heavens, only Gods from my family can be gatekeepers."

Gong Gong immediately took his hand back, as if he was struck by thunder. Laughing embarrassedly, he said, "Alright, hmm, your hair is indeed valuable. Hurry up, hehe, your hair won't fall off for no reason, will it? Eh?"

An hour later, layers of complicated divine seals were opened, while Gong Gong, his people and Bao Rouzi came to before an enormous palace, which was wrapped in dense gray mist. This palace had a simple and ancient style design, and was enormous in shape, but no door or gate could be seen; not even a slight slit existed on the wall.

Bao Rouzi stood in front of the Lihen Palace, with her silver hair

slowly waving. Beams of silver light burst from her hair, transforming into countless complicated divine spell symbols. Then, these spell symbols started to combine, forming small groups.

At last, a human-head sized, lusterless, bronze-colored divine seal emerged in front of Bai Rouzi. She waved her hand, and the divine seal silently flew into the Lihen Palace.

The enormous palace split into two while a misty gray gate appeared in front of the group of people.

On the misty gate were three large characters formed from Chaos thunderbolts — Divine Origin Pool!

Chapter 847: Burn Kappa

Back in Pan Jia world, the sun was blazing in the water.

Kappa's face was covered in sweat with his eyes popped out, staring at the sun right in front of him.

The seven sea water was condensed from the purest negative power and bone-piercing cold. It could suppress almost all positive powers in the world. Most of divine flames and spirit fires in the world could be suppressed by the seven sea water, and only the essence sun fire was an exception. The essence sun fire was the extreme of the positive powers of the world. It could destroy all evilness, and was unstoppable.

Through the seven sea water, the essence sun fire burned Kappa. The Long black robe worn by him transformed into large and sticky streams of water, swiftly rotating around him. It was constantly generating ice crystals and snowflakes to protect Kappa, fending against the sun power.

Kappa was protected by powerful treasures, but still, he was soaked in sweat. He was inside the water, but his sweat was as sticky as glue, as heavy as liquid silver. Even in the water, one could clearly see the streams of sweat on his body.

The other tens of powerful beings under Gong Gong's command, and countless aquatic warriors who were hatched in Pan Jia world, screamed while desperately fleeing towards all directions. They cried so loudly, as if their butts were on fire.

They had to run. All shrimps and crabs already had their shell burned red while fishes had their scales cooked. The skins of water snakes and eels had almost fallen off. Even those turtles, who had thick shells to protect themselves, were also screaming because of the great heat while throwing their weapons away and fleeing away from the sun as quickly as possible.

Only a few dragon whales, who had enormous bodies, especially thick scales and skins and extra strong life-force, guarded around Kappa with their teeth gnashed, while trying their bests to withstand the power of the sun.

Dragon whale was a legendary creature from the North Sea. Most of the dragon whales were born in the deepest water areas in the North Sea, and also lived in that area. Those water areas were incredibly dangerous and extremely cold. But in some areas, volcano vents could be found, and the water temperature around those volcano vents could even melt gold and iron. Nevertheless, dragon whales could still live safely and freely in places like those.

With the heat-resisting power they gained back in the North Sea, these dragon whales gnashed their teeth tight while keeping Kappa guarded. However, after guarding Kappa for less than a quarter of an hour, the skins of these dragon whales were burned broken, while differently sized blisters appeared on their bodies. Helplessly, these dragon whales screamed out, turned around and escaped with all of their powers, without being able to protect Kappa anymore.

Kappa stood still in a daze for quite a while. Then, with a great rage, he screamed towards those desperately fleeing aquatic warriors, "Fight! Fight with your lives! You useless idiots! Where can you run? When the seven seawater is boiled, you will all become a pot of fish soup!"

Pointing fiercely at Ji Hao, Kappa continued screaming, "Rush up! Rush up and kill them! Kill this sun! Kill this sun! This is the only way to live! The only way to live!"

Those aquatic warriors kept fleeing without even turning around and glancing at Kappa.

‘What a joke! Kill this sun? Do you even know what are you talking about? Kill a sun?! Not to mention you, Kappa, even the Black Emperor from the north, who once was the leader of all

water Gods in Pan Gu world, could never kill a sun!' thought Ji Hao.

Ji Hao crossed his arms before his chest, chuckled while looking at Kappa, who was so furious, laughed and said, "Kappa, if you can kill this sun, I could let you go without punishing you for insulting the human emperor!"

Kappa's face twitched. He looked at Ji Hao, then raised his head and cast a resonant growl. All of a sudden, a terrifyingly great cold power roared out from his body. Great dark power streams transformed into rampant waves, surging out. Meanwhile, the seven sea water began waving as well, along with Kappa's waving arms.

Ji Hao's body instantly shook. What a great power, Kappa was indeed a powerful creature, who existed ever since the prehistorical era.

He moved the seven seawater single-handedly, and even made the sun of Pan Jia world, which was compressed by Ji Hao, quake intensively, that affected Ji Hao as well.

"Earl Yao Ji Hao? You're nothing but a human earl. How dare you go against our Gong Gong Family? One day, you will all kneel under our feet, be slaves, and serve us forever and ever, generation after generation." Kappa growled in a deep and hoarse voice while black smoke puffed out from the top of his head. Within the black smoke, countless oddly shaped, hazy silhouettes of aquatic creatures could be seen, roaring furiously.

Harshly, Kappa shouted, "You useless things, why would I raise all of you? What can you do? Just die!"

Following his voice, the bodies of all those fleeing aquatic warriors paused in the water, then exploded simultaneously. Except for the tens of subordinates of Kappa, hundreds of millions of aquatic creatures all turned into streams of blood in the water.

Kappa took a deep breath, then all the blood began surging into his mouth. The blood was swallowed and absorbed by Kappa. Gradually, black scales grew out from his skin, layer by layer. Soon, Kappa became a black ball, which was thickly covered in scales, that looked seriously weird and disgusting.

"Hiss...Ha!"

Along with a resonant shout, Kappa's body started expanding speedily, as more blood was absorbed by him. Within the span of a few breaths, his body expanded to thousand miles. The ball-like body of his then turned into a gigantic frog, which was covered in scales, and had sharp teeth filled in the mouth. The frog opened his mouth and released a dense stream of black smoke, roaring towards the sun.

The black smoke contained immeasurably great cold power and negative power, which clashed violently against the golden glow of the sun, generating a loud sizzling noise. The golden sunlight pushed forward inch by inch, while the black smoke was dispelled inch by inch. Nevertheless, Kappa had actually been fending against the power of the sun single-handedly. Although he was suppressed, at least for now, his life wasn't threatened.

"Priest Po, Priest Gui Ling, the agreement made on top of Sky Pillar, do you still remember it?"

Kappa gnashed his teeth and said with a twisted voice, "You people are not allowed to step into internal affairs of the humankind, unless human beings are facing a true destructive disaster. Although I am a minister of Gong Gong, I am also a minister of the human emperor..."

Po smilingly looked at Kappa and said, "Therefore, my sister and I will never step into the fight between you and Earl Yao Ji Hao!"

Kappa paused, then leaped up in surprise. His body was like a mountain, smashing down towards Ji Hao's head. This strike he launched contained the spirit blood powers that came from

hundreds of millions of aquatic creatures. It was overwhelming and unstoppable. Only the fierce gale started by it almost broke all of Ji Hao's bones.

"Good!"

Ji Hao roared while a dim stream of light flashed across his head. The Pan Xi divine mirror was activated. Kappa's enormous body bumped into the dim light. He suddenly burst with a shrill scream while he was teleported away by the Pan XI divine mirror straight into the sun!

Inside the ten-thousand miles in radius sun, an entirely black frog was screaming and struggling. Through his mouth, eyes, nostrils and ears, the strongest essence sun fire in the core of the sun drilled into his body, burning all of his internal organs.

Kappa, struggled desperately, attempting to save himself. But Pan Jia finally made her move. She slightly waved her hand and turned the seven sea water into nothingness. The greatest defensive force possessed by Kappa was suddenly gone. Therefore, he could never escape from the sun.

Struggling for half an hour, Kappa finally gave a sad howl.

"Stop, please stop...I...I...please stop for now!"

Chapter 848: Kill Kappa

Ji Hao ignored Kappa's begging and boosted the essence sun power up to continue burning him.

Along with Kappa's shrill howls, Kappa was trapped in the core of the sun. His entire body was set ablaze, and every single cell of his was burning. The cold power accumulated in his body for countless years had already been released completely, and the great spirit blood power came from the hundreds of millions of aquatic creatures had been dispelled as well. By now, the essence sun fire had been burning his body, inch by inch.

Kappa sensed a soul-deep great pain, as if his soul was burning as well.

He cried, screamed, swore that he would do whatever Ji Hao said, and would never, ever want anything that he shouldn't have. By the end, when the enormous frog transformed from Kappa had shrunk to half size, Pan Jia made the move and grabbed Kappa out from the sun.

A few large stars were floating in the sky, letting large streams of, dark blue starlight pour down.

From a distance away, thunderous roars could be heard, as countless evil mermaids and mermen had still been attacking Bao Xiang and his people. Different colored thunderbolts burst along with sky-shaking booms, and even seemed to quake the entire world.

The clear water surface was perfectly still. The water had condensed into a platform, allowing Kappa to huddle on it. Kappa was severely injured by the essence sun fire. Showing his sharp teeth, Kappa looked and Ji Hao and said, "Earl Yao, you little bastard. You defeated me with an outer force, that's nothing! Unseal me if you dare! Fight me with your own power, until one of us die!"

Thin streams of watery light flew around inside Kappa's body like glowing threads. These bone-piercing watery light streams pierced into Kappa's internal organs and sealed all of his powers. By now, he couldn't even move his little finger, and except for speaking, he could now do nothing.

However, after being saved from the terrifying sun, Kappa showed his fierceness again. Angrily, he looked at Ji Hao, attempting to enrage Ji Hao and let Ji Hao fight him. His eyes rolled inside his eye sockets, as he was considering that if Ji Hao was stupid enough to unseal him, should he just run or should he find a way to kill him?

Pan Jia smilingly sat on a water flower and looked at Kappa with narrowed eyes. She looked at Kappa from up to down, with eyes filled with a faint viciousness and curiosity.

Kappa was quite unconformable because of Pan Jia's gaze. He glared at Pan Jia, but right after that, he thought of just now when Pan Jia easily sealed his power, like a giant playing with an infant. He instantly realized that this woman was even more terrifying than the combination of Po and Gui Ling. Therefore, he hurriedly turned around and continued showing his teeth to Ji Hao, but dared not to take one more glance at Pan Jia.

Many people liked to bully the weak but always feared the strong. Among these people, Kappa was an extreme one.

Ji Hao stood beside Kappa, fiddled with an entirely transparent dagger while looking at him with a faint smile. The dagger was thin, as thin as cicada wings, and light as wind. The tagger was a world-accompanying spirit treasure, shining and powerful.

Right in front of Kappa, Ji Hao handed the dagger to one of Gui Ling's disciples, who was the nearest to him and said, "Here you go. I, as your uncle, don't have many nice things. This is a small piece I gained conveniently. Take it."

The female disciple gave a large grin, even squeezing her eyes

into a pair of curved linea. She hurriedly took over the dagger and happily stroked it.

Kappa’s lips even turned purple because of the wrath. He gritted his teeth and said with a cold voice, "This treasure was gifted to me by the third generation of Gong Gong. This belongs to Gong Gong Family. Kid, you take my treasure, you better be careful. Our Gong Gong Family..."

Ji Hao stomped his foot on Kappa’s mouth, breaking every single one of his sharp teeth.

"Revenge? I’ll be expecting it." Ji Hao shook his head at Kappa with his mouth corners curved upwards and said coldly, "But before you take revenge, just tell, how did you discover Pan Jia world? How did you get here? You raised an aquatic army in this place, what do you want to do?"

Laughing with a hissing voice, Kappa showed the whites of his eyes, then scornfully threw a sideway glance at Ji Hao.

"Not telling?" Ji Hao knitted his eyebrows.

"I won’t tell a word. What can you do to me?" Kappa showed a fearless attitude, chuckled and said, "You dare not to kill me, do you? I’m one of the eight senior ministers under Gong Gong’s command. Nominally, I am a minister of the human emperor. You don’t dare to kill me."

Taking a deep breath, Kappa narrowed his eyes, looked at Ji Hao and continued in a cold voice, "I am telling you about the things that will happen in the coming days."

"You can not kill me. Instead, you can only bring me back to Pu Ban City. Whatever excuse you have, whatever accusation you put on my head, you can only hand me to the human emperor. But what did I do wrong? What crime have I committed?"

"Therefore, even the human emperor cant do anything to me. And everybody knows that human emperors can never do

anything about Gong Gong Family and Zhu Rong Family. Zhu Rong Family people are still willing to listen to the human emperor's orders, but what can the human emperor possibly do to our Gong Gong Family?"

"Lord Gong Gong will find out what happened to me very soon and will go straight to the human emperor. In less than a quarter of an hour, I will be freed safely. After all, I am not guilty. What did I do wrong? Nothing, I just discovered a new world, and raised an aquatic army in this place."

"After I am freed safely... Earl Yao Ji Hao is your title and name, right? Whichever clan you are from, whichever noble family name you possess, I will find your hometown. I will crush your father, grandfather inch by inch. As for your mother, your sisters and all women in your clan, I will kill them slowly, very slowly, in the cruelest way, right in front of you."

Kappa transformed back into the human shape from a giant frog. As saliva flowed out of his mouth corners, he looked at Ji Hao and provoked, "Do you know what I will do to your Amma? I will..."

Ji Hao pulled out the nine suns spear and punctured Kappa's head.

Kappa's ceased to talk suddenly. Before the pride in his eyes faded, fear occupied his entire face.

He didn't understand why a small human earl dared to launch a killing move against him. He was one of the eight senior ministers under Gong Gong's command, and Gong Gong Family was a greatly powerful family of Gods. Even generations of human emperors couldn't do anything to this family!

"In recent years, I have become quite soft-hearted." Ji Hao looked at Kappa and murmured, "Not because my heart is truly softened. Instead, because I know that without enough power, reckless, violent moves can only bring disasters to my families, friends and myself. Therefore...I've been laying low and cultivating myself.

tThis is reasonable!"

"But now, do you think I should stay laying low and enduring all this? Who can you possible frighten with the name of Gong Gong?"

Sneering coldly, Ji Hao turned around his palm and set Kappa's body ablaze with a raging fire.

A clearly visible hazy silhouette flashed out of Kappa’s body, screamed and attempted to flee, but Ji Hao grasped it immediately.

Wisps of essence sun fire spurted out. Kappa’s primordial spirit screamed shrilly, cried and begged, promising to Ji Hao that he would tell everything he knew. But without any hesitation, Ji Hao burned Kappa’s primordial spirit into a strand of ash, bit by bit.

Chapter 849: Back to Southern Wasteland

Kappa underestimated Ji Hao, and as a consequence, he died.

Thunder burst out without an end, as Bao Xiang, Kong Chan and their people were still being attacked by evil mermaids and mermen. The golden steel defensive magic formation had already been shaking, seeming to fall apart anytime. They had killed countless evil mermaids and mermen, but facing more and more evil mermaids and mermen surging out from every corner of Pan Jia world, Bao Xiang, Kong Chan and their people were almost exhausted. The number of evil mermaids and mermen around them had only been growing bigger and bigger.

Ji Hao didn't mention these poor people, and neither did Po and Gui Ling notice their existence. Therefore, Pan Jia just smilingly letting those evil mermaids and mermen attack them. No one helped them at all.

Pan Jia didn't even have a home, neither did she have any family or disciples. They just stood on the water surface, watching Bao Xiang and his people cast all kinds of magic to fight against those evil mermaids and mermen.

Watching for quite a while, Ji Hao abruptly began talking. Honestly, Ji Hao told Pan Jia that in the near future, some his friends would come to Pan Jia world. He also straightforwardly told Pan Jia that those people would come to this world for all kinds of benefits, tangible or intangible.

Pan Jia narrowed her eyes, grinningly looked at Ji Hao from head to tow, then turned around and looked at Po and Gui Ling. Afterwards, she slowly proposed her condition — If Ji Hao, Po and Gui Ling are willing to become the protectors of Pan Jia world, she could allow Ji Hao's friends to freely come to Pan Jia world.

As long as the existence of Pan Jia world was not threatened, Pan Jia was willing to share Pan Jia world with Ji Hao's friends. For

example, the dragon-kind represented by Ao Li, could raise an aquatic army in Pan Jia world. If they didn't set up all kinds of great magic formations intentionally and extracted the original natural powers of Pan Jia world with secret methods, Pan Jia wouldn't mind having some more aquatic creatures, such as fishes or crabs, to live in her world.

To Pan Jia, any quantity of aquatic creatures, even non-indigenous ones, would be able to generate a power of Dao. If they lived, bred, died and reincarnated, if they had happiness, joy, anger, and sadness in this world, they would help in improving Pan Jia's cultivation of the great Dao.

If only spirit mermaids and merman and evil mermaids and mermen, which were all generated by her own soul, lived in this world, this world would be way too lonely.

"World protectors?" Ji Hao looked at Pan Jia in shock. Her tail was slowly swaying, and her beautiful smile contained a trace of naughtiness that Ji Hao couldn't see through.

"World protectors!" Pan Jia chuckled, as her sparkling eyes turned to Po and Gui Ling. Glancing at Po and Gui Ling, she said, "If you have other friends, and if they are also willing to become protectors of my world, I won't let you carry this responsibility for nothing."

Remaining silent for a while, Pan Jia seriously nodded and said, "I will dispel all natural powers in this world, except for the water power. Only the purest water power can stay existing in this world. Although it's extreme, it will generate countless possibilities. Quite a lot rare and valuable natural materials and magic herbs with extremely pure water power will emerge in this world. Those things will be useless me, but I can give them to you as your rewards."

Natural materials and magic herbs with extremely pure water power?

Ji Hao grinned. He was pursuing the great Dao of sun,. Therefore, natural materials with water power would be useless to him. However, many of his friends needed those things, like Yu Mu. After all, the nature of Yu Mu's power was rather close to water.

Po grinned as well. As the big brother of Gui Ling and Ji Hao, and the oldest disciple of Yu Yu, many times, his words could even represent Yu Yu himself. Pondering for a while, Po looked at Pan Jia and responded seriously, "You trust us, which is our honor and luck. Since you've already given your offer, my friend, we should make this a deal then. In the future, if you ever face any danger or disaster, my friend, we will definitely come to help, to the best of our abilities."

Pausing for a second, Po grinningly and deeply bowed to Pan Jia and continued, "Ah, I am now asking you a favor already."

Pan Jia grinned, and even her eyes turned into a pair of curved lines. She turned around, looked at Bao Xiang, Kong Chan and the other sixteen cultivators on their side, who were already soaked in sweat, and had been gasping loudly and quickly. Their bodies were all quivering intensively, as the golden steel defensive formation was about to collapse.

"No need to explain, I understand." Pan Jia chuckled, then gently clapped her hands. Instantly, a dark whirl cloud emerged above Bao Xiang and his people's head. Black thunderbolts silently dazzled out of the cloud and slowly descended like boas wriggling towards their preys.

Bao Xiang and Kong Chan roared out simultaneously. They were exhausted already. Therefore, before they could activate their life-saving treasures, the black thunderbolts struck on their bodies, making their fine hair stand up and streams of black smoke puff out of their bodies.

All eighteen of them were struck down. After that, Ji Hao trod on

a cloud and flew over while laughing loudly. Quickly, he stripped the eighteen people and took every single piece of treasure of theirs. Even their spirit treasures, those that had been nourished by their primordial spirits and were hidden deeply inside their bodies, were dug out by Ji Hao with secret methods under Po's guidance.

If Pan Jia and Gui Ling weren't on the scene, Ji Hao would rip the last piece of cloth off from their bodies and make them completely naked, with nothing left to cover their bodies.

After robbing those poor people, Ji Hao, Po, and Gui Ling then started a long conversation with Pan Jia. They planned and arranged a series of things, after which, Ji Hao and the other cultivators bowed and said goodbye to Pan Jia.

As a golden stream of light dazzled into the sky, the Heaven and Earth golden bridge wrapped Ji Hao and the other cultivators up, along with Bao Xiang and his people, who were all fainted. It flew into the sky, flashed across and left Pan Jia world immediately, disappearing in the vast void.

Pan Jia stood on a dense dark cloud with her head raised, looking where Ji Hao and the others disappeared in a daze.

A while later, she murmured to herself, "I sensed the power of Gu and Spirit Wa from them. Are they from the world created by Gu? Did Gu finally make that step? Did he succeed? A large world with endless secrets of creation... Ah, I do envy Gu's power."

"Spirit Wa, Spirit Wa, I haven't seen you for many years. Do you remember me? I am Spirit Jia... Back then, we struggled for survival in the Chaos, together. Ji Hao and the other few kids, they traveled across the Chaos and came to my place, helped my true spirit to remerge. Was this a coincidence or..."

In the Chaos, the golden bridge moved forward swiftly.

Standing on the golden bridge, Ji Hao fiddled with the golden

pestle he took from Bao Xiang. While smilingly wielding the golden pestle, Ji Hao said, "Brother Po, sister Gui Ling, I bet, with ten-thousand vats of wine, I know what Gong Gong wants to do."

"Because I know what he wants to do, I need to back to Southern Wasteland first, to bring my Amma and my clansmen to Yao Mountain City."

"I am going to take a detour. If anything happens on our journey back, brother and sister, I might need your help."

Po and Gui Ling paused slightly, looking at Ji Hao in confusion. ‘Have you figured out what Gong Gong wants already? Well, did you just take a guess or you truly have a great power, a great ability to foresee the future?’ thought Po and Gui Ling.

The golden bridge moved amazingly fast. At last, it penetrated the protective screen of Pan Gu world and bumped into it. Meanwhile, it slightly turned in the air, flying swiftly towards Southern Wasteland.

Southern Wasteland turned larger and larger, closer and closer in Ji Hao’s eyes. When the thriving primitive jungle filled up Ji Hao sight, they had arrived in Southern Wasteland.

After so many years, Ji Hao finally stepped in the Southern Wasteland once again.

Chapter 850: Zhu Rong's Invitation

Southern Wasteland was as stiflingly hot and moist as ever, but Mr. Crow and the pair of baby snakes, who were like flat tires in Pan Jia world, were now instantly invigorated.

Mr. Crow raised his head and gave a resonant caw towards the sky while transforming into a streak of fiery light, dazzling out of Ji Hao's sleeve. He flashed across the air, left shreds of afterimages and smashed the few dense clouds in the air, dispelling an incoming heavy rain.

The pair of snakes each coiled on a shoulder of Ji Hao, largely opened their jaws and inhaled the warm air. Dense smoke puffed out along with fire sparkles, drifting in the air, that made Ji Hao look like a fierce monster that came out of a volcano.

In Pan Jia world, which was a world of water, these three creatures, who had the nature of fire, were nearly chocked. Back at Southern Wasteland, sensing the rich fire power in the air and the familiar scent of Southern Wasteland jungle, their natures were immediately stimulated.

Ji Hao smilingly patted on the heads of the pair of snakes and trod on a fiery cloud, flying forwards. Mr. Crow spread his wings and flew side by side with Ji Hao. The fiery cloud of Ji Hao moved faster and faster, and gradually began tearing the air open and generating thunderous air blasts.

Po and Gui Ling smilingly followed behind Ji Hao. They could understand Ji Hao's feeling.

On the ground, the dazzling fiery light and thunderous air blasts let out by Ji Hao caught the attentions of many Southern Wasteland clansmen. Some Magus Kings rose into the sky, looking at Ji Hao from a distance away.

However, not to mention the dreadful power vibration and great

heat released from Ji Hao, only the glowing Gold Crow fire roaring out of Mr. Crow's body seemed to be completely unstoppable to these ordinary Southern Wasteland Magus Kings. Tens of Magus Kings floated in the air, silently watching Ji Hao fly across the sky. This was a hidden rule in Southern Wasteland, that when a powerful one passed through, as long as he or she don't take the initiative and cause any trouble, no one would be stupid enough to provoke this powerful being.

After all, this was Southern Wasteland jungle, a place ruled by fists and blood.

Gold Black Mountain was right in the front, but things were a lot different from back when Ji Hao left. Over a hundred different sized floating mountains had been drifting around the Gold Black Mountain. Numerous water-tank-thick iron chains that had been glowing with a bright fiery light had these floating mountain tied up, fixing them in the air.

These floating mountains were tens of thousands of meters away from the ground. On these mountains were large pieces of herbal gardens, with all kinds of Southern Wasteland herbs planted in them.

This was the season for a spirit herb called 'white head dragonfly tail' to bloom. A hundred-miles huge floating mountain was entirely covered in bean-thick, finger-long white blooms. A gust of wind blew across from the air and made the ocean of this unique kind of bloom wave, that looked like countless milky-white dragonflies flying in the sky.

Glistening white pollen drifted along the wind and covered a small half Gold Black Mountain, like a white, sparkling rain. The pollen of this spirit herb could strengthen the spirit blood and life-force, and was the main material for 'bone-strengthening soup', 'body-toughening soup' and the other often used magic medicines in Southern Wasteland, and was rather nourishing to all kinds of living creatures.

The pollen drifted down and made countless crows rise into the sky from the mulberry woods under Gold Black Mountain. Large and small crows cawed together while swishing into the sky like an enormous dark cloud. They opened their beaks and inhaled the white pollen as much as they could.

"Caw!"

From a distance away, Mr. Crow showed his golden feathers and three claws. A strong power vibration that was no worse than the power vibration released from any Magus King spread out from his body. Meanwhile, clouds of Gold Crow flame rose into the sky. His bright and resonant caw reached straight to the air and shattered a few thin clouds.

From Gold Black Mountain, from that straight line of enormous, towering mulberry trees, hundreds of fire-red, gigantic crows flew over. They cawed brightly, responding to Mr. Crow, while swiftly approaching along with gusts of scorching hot wind.

Mr. Crow excitedly rushed up and joined those gigantic crows. The group of large crows, which were with a wingspan of over three-hundred meters, happily gave long and excited howls. They flapped their wings and rushed into the sky, formed a circle while swiftly swishing and hovering in the air. At the moment, from their moves, anyone could sense the sincere happiness in their hearts!

Mr. Crow’s bloodline had changed completely. Under Ji Hao’s generous cultivation, he had now become a pureblood three-legged Gold Crow. The sense of power released from his body made all crows in Gold Crow Clan worship him, because that was a sense of the purest, the most original bloodline of their kind.

Quite a few female Crows squeezed to Mr. Crow and rubbed his bodies while cawing, and one could sense an indescribable, warm intention from their bright voices.

"Eh....It’s not spring yet." Ji Hao raised his head and glanced at

the sky. Indeed, this was not spring. What happened to Mr. Crow and the few female crows? But, alright, Mr. Crow was now a pureblood Gold Crow. His descendants would also have an incredibly powerful bloodline. In this case, just let him to have fun with those female crows and make some baby crows!

Leaving Mr Crow, Ji Hao flashed across the air, brought up a golden stream of light and flew towards Gold Black Mountain.

Tens of Gold Crow Clan men rose into the air and blocked Ji Hao's way from a distance away. The leader of these few people was a Divine Magus, with a fierce power vibration releasing from his body. Seeing Ji Hao, he growled resonantly, "Who's back? Eh? Ji Hao?! Ahaha! You kid! Ah, ah, my ancestors' souls, are my eyes broken? You, you're a Divine Magus now?!"

Ji Hao spread his arms and rushed to that Divine Magus while happily yelling, "Uncle Ji Mo! Haha, it's me, I'm Ji Hao! I'm back!"

The group of Gold Crow Clan people laughed out loud. They all trod on fiery clouds and rushed towards Ji Hao. Countless muscular arms drummed on Ji Hao's head and back, beating his chest and shoulders. These Southern Wasteland men were not good at talking. Instead, they could only express the happiness in their hearts with the fiercest body language.

"The best kid in our Gold Crow Clan is back!" Ji Mo laughed wildly loud while slapping violently on Ji Hao's back, causing a loud and muffled series of booms against Ji Hao's bones.

Fortunately, Ji Hao was now a Divine Magus as well, and his physical strength was even better than Ji Mo himself. If the one slapped by Ji Mo were any of the other kids in Gold Crow Clan, Ji Mo would have slapped the poor kid into a meat pie already.

Po and Gui Ling stood far away, looking at Ji Hao, who was surrounded by tens of muscular men. They were surprised.

What a passionate way of greeting, this was way too, scary. Over

a hundred sturdy arms drummed Ji Hao’s body. Were they welcoming Ji Hao home or trying to smash Ji Hao, then make him into a pie?

Before Ji Mo and the others vented their happiness and excitement completely, a sphere of fiery clouds roared over from the south.

From the fiery cloud, an enormous dragon head reached out, glanced at Ji Hao with the hundred-meter radius eyes of its, then began talking with a rumbling voice, "Is Earl Yao Ji Hao Back? Hm, you, it’s right, my master invited you over."

"Your master? Zhu Rong?" Ji Hao paused. He had just arrived in Gold Black Mountain. How did Zhu Rong find out that he had come back?

Chapter 851: Meeting Zhu Rong Again

The fiery cloud rolled in the sky. The fire dragon, which had half of its body hiding in the cloud, flipped its tail and sent up a crimson cloud of smoke, even dyeing the sky red.

The fire dragon stared at Ji Hao with its large eyes while murmuring, "Hm, my master invited you over. Hm, do you have any wine? I traveled all the way, and didn't even take sip of water!

Ji Mo and the other Gold Crow Clan men hurriedly treated the fire dragon with rice wine. Vats after vats, the rice wine was served to the dragon while the dragon opened its mouth, gulped and gulped. In one breath, the dragon engulfed over a thousand vats of rice wine produced by Gold Crow Clan.

Ji Hao seized this short while and hurriedly went home.

The small building was the same as before, but the small yard had become much larger. The ground was paved with flagstones, and the yard was almost filled with wicker baskets, which contained classified and cleaned herbs. Some herbs were already dried in the sun, but some were newly picked, and still had fresh juice seeping from the roots. The yard was suffused by a slightly bitter, yet nice herbal scent.

Qing Fu sat in the yard, with a few nimble-handed, pretty girls sitting around her, helping her with what she had been doing. A large black jade jar was placed in front of her, with a few spell symbols sparkling dimly on it. Qing Fu was holding a blade jade pestle, and had been carefully grinding a 'raging fire thunder vine'.

The thunder vine was soft yet strong. Therefore, Qing Fu had to work pretty hard to grind it. The pestle released beams of black light and sealed the power of the herb, to disable the power of the herb from getting lost during the grinding process.

Ji Hao walked into the yard with big steps. Seeing that Qing Fu

was busy, he slowed down, gently and quietly walked to Qing Fu and squatted. He conveniently picked a fruit from a fire grass in a basket beside him, then threw into his own mouth. The fruit of the fire grass was especially spicy, but with a sweet aftertaste. And the longer one chewed it, the sweeter it would taste. At last, the sweetness could reach straight into one's heart from the tip of the tongue. Fire grass only grew in Southern Wasteland. Therefore, Ji Hao had never seen it in anywhere else.

However, fire grass fruits were rich in fire power. Ordinary Southern Wasteland children would catch a nosebleed if they ate too many fire grass fruits. Therefore, since Ji Hao was a little kid, every time Qing Fu saw Ji Hao sneakily eating fire grass fruits, she would certainly...

A not so heavy, yet not so gentle slap landed on Ji Hao's head. Like always, Qing Fu said to him with a deep, strict, yet warm tone. "No! Fire grass fruits can perfectly cast the moistness and coldness away from human bodies, but you can't eat it as fruits."

Qing Fu stared at Ji Hao with brightly sparkling eyes while raising her pestle, pretending to knock Ji Hao's head with it.

Ji Hao chuckled, took over the pestle and put forth his strength on those thunder vines in the black jade jar. The thunder vines were already halfway ground, and Ji Hao was way more strengthful than Qing Fu. Therefore, as the spell symbols shone brightly on the black jade jar, the thunder vines in the jar were ground into a jar of sticky liquid by Ji Hao following a quick series of clangs.

"Amma, I'm back. Ah, nothing changed in Gold Black Mountain." While grinding the herbs, Ji Hao said bland tone.

"We now have many more children than before." Qing Fu narrowed her eyes and laughed happily, "The few large clans nearby are all willing to marry their girls to our Gold Crow Clan boys. In the recent few years, we are having more and more

children in the clan."

Qing Ru stood up and pulled Ji Hao up as well.

Ji Hao stood straight, while Qing Fu measured the height difference between him and herself. Finding that she couldn't even reach Ji Hao's armpits now, Qing Fu sighed in surprise and said, "Ah, my Ji Hao has grown up. He's an adult now, not a kid anymore...Hmm, come on, tell Amma, have you met any nice girls out there? Which stage are you now at with her? When can I hold the babies of my Ji Hao?

Ji Hao's face instantly turned twisted. Why would the topic suddenly change into this?

"Amma..." Ji Hao murmured weakly.

"Do you know any good-looking girl? If you do, just bring her back and let Amma see...If you don't, the little girl called Man Man is not bad. She's healthy, and her family is powerful. I think she can have many babies."

Qing Fu looked at Ji Hao with her pair of brightly sparkling eyes while she continued especially seriously, "Ah, never mind. Men are always with low efficiency. Amma knows many pretty young girls. Later, you go..."

Ji Hao turned around and ran straight away, leaving faint shreds of afterimages while flashing across the air, rushing out of the yard.

"Amma, Lord Zhu Rong wants to talk to me. If I finish early, I will come back for dinner. Please cook a few boar ribs and roast a few sweet potatoes for me!"

Ji Hao rushed out swiftly. Qing Fu paused, then laughed and shouted, "Leave the pestle, why are you running so fast?"

Clang! The black jade pestle brought up a cold beam of light and accurately fell into the jar. Qing Fu grinned, raised her head and looked at the fiery dragon, which was lying on Gold Black

Mountain and gulping wine, then smilingly nodded.

Po and Gui Ling stayed in Gold Crow Clan while the fire dragon rose back into the sky, brought Ji Hao and flew to the south. Less than three-hundred miles away from Gold Black Mountain, a hundred miles in radius volcano vent appeared among mountains. Ji Hao clearly remembered that this was a pure mountain area without any volcano. But now, a volcano vent appeared in this place, and was filled with boiling lava, with a few smaller sized fire dragons comfortably lying in it and taking a nap.

Above the volcano vent was a dragon-scale-like mirror, floating in a raging fire. The mirror was decorated with patterns of flames, and had been releasing beams of red divine light, shining on the surrounding area. Ji Hao clearly saw the images of countless familiar mountains and rivers flash across the mirror, which meant this mirror had been watching the entire area around Gold Black Mountain. If anyone approached the Gold Black Mountain, he or she could be discovered through this mirror immediately.

"My master sent these few little ones and me to guard in this place. This volcano, my master created it himself." said the fire dragon slowly, "And this mirror, ha, anything that happens in million-mile-radius around your Gold Black Mountain, my master will be the first to know. He will inform us to make the moves and prevent any danger. Hmm, I heard the little kid Man Man is going to marry you, is this true?"

Ji Hao gave a bitter smile, looked at the fire dragon and threw a question back, "Says who?"

The dragon straightened its neck, looked at Ji Hao and responded with a great confidence, "My Master told me! Just make it hurry. It’s good for Man Man to marry, because as a married woman, she won’t come back and bully us again. Or she would just come every a few days and pull off our scales to make weird stuff!"

Ji Hao was speechless.

A scorching hot stream of lava swooshed up for thousands of meters high, on top of which, a fiery gate opened rumblingly.

Ji Hao followed the fire dragon into the fiery gate. At first glance, Ji Hao saw Zhu Rong, who was covered in a long red cloak. Zhu Rong's face was pale, and he had been coughing ceaselessly.

Chapter 852: The Fire Sea Divine Palace

Wearing a vividly red long robe and cloak, Zhu Rong was stunningly handsome. His long hair fluttered without being blown by the wind, while every single hair of his was burning with a raging fire. A glowing red wine calabash was held in his left hand. At the moment, Ji Hao almost mistook Zhu Rong as Yu Yu.

Fortunately, although Zhu Rong and Yu Yu might look similar on the outside, and even their wine calabashes looked the same, Yu Yu was proud, and was far away from the secular world. He was just like a tens of thousands of years old pine tree, standing on top of the highest cliff, elegant and free, without giving even a slight little bit of worldly feeling. Zhu Rong was fierce and potent, like an erupting volcano, and also like a powerful prehistorical beast, releasing a sense of danger all the time. Therefore, Ji Hao blinked his eyes, clearly seeing Zhu Rong, who was coughing loudly.

Zhu Rong's face was terribly pale, and the power vibration releasing from him was unsettled. Coughing intensely for a few times, a few drops of blood hung on Zhu Rong's mouth corner. The blood of the God-kind was mysterious, sucg that the blood coughed out by Zhu Rong burned intensely, transformed into streams of fiery light and was absorbed by his long hair.

Ji Hao took a few steps forward, then the fiery gate behind him closed thunderously. He solemnly bowed to Zhu Rong and said, "Lord Zhu Rong, what happened? Did you fight against top-grade powerful non-humankind beings? Otherwise, who could possibly hurt you?"

Zhu Rong raised the wine calabash in his hand and violently knocked on Ji Hao's head.

Bang! The wine contained in the calabash clattered, which was quite pleasant to hear. But Ji Hao saw countless stars dazzling, while a large swelling quickly bulged on his forehead. This strike

nearly knocked Ji Hao out.

"Lord Zhu Rong? How can you call me that? Hm, change it now. Do the same as Man Man, call me Abba when you're happy, and when you're not happy, call me father, the Fire God."

Zhu Rong then laughed, covered his mouth with his left hand and coughed again. Afterward, he leaned his head, gave a sideway glance at Ji Hao and laughed, "Seriously, when will you and Man Man have a cute chubby baby?" Clicking his tongue, Zhu Rong continued, "Kid, you're way too slow. Back then, when I met Man Man's mother, I made her mine in three days, only three days!"

Ji Hao strugglingly looked at Zhu Rong with a badly twisted face, as if he was looking at a crazy man.

Standing aside, the fire dragon paused, then abruptly lied down, laughing out wildly while rolling on the ground, with its claws holding its belly. Zhu Rong's look changed. He threw a heavy kick on the dragon's head, generated a shrill howl out of that dragon. The dragon was sent flying away by this kick, straight into the air along with a bright stream of fiery light. Ji Hao didn't know where the dragon would be sent to.

"Ha, I was too nice to them, these unruly things even dare to laugh their own master now." Zhu Rong laughed again, scratched his scalp, then looked at Ji Hao's struggling, twisted face and said, "Alright, alright, let's not mention babies now. Hm, just follow me."

A sphere of flame wrapped Zhu Rong up. He transformed into a dazzling stream of flame, roaring into the sky. Followed by a rumbling series of noise, eye-piercing spheres of flame burst in the air. At lightning speed, Zhu Rong flew towards the south.

Where Ji Hao was standing should be a square on Zhu Rong Peak, as a great number of palaces wrapped in raging fire could be seen in the surrounding area, and countless Zhu Rong Family warriors guarded every vital spot. Seeing Zhu Rong flying away, these

warriors all knelt on one knee and growled ‘Goodbye, Master!’. Ji Hao gave a grin, then transformed into a golden beam of light and rushed into the sky. He silently flashed across the air and followed closely behind Zhu Rong.

Zhu Rong flew in the front while Ji Hao followed behind him. The flame transformed from Zhu Rong lit half of the sky up, and even the clouds were burned red. Meanwhile, sky-shaking thunders could be heard without an end, and the strong vibration could make anyone even thousands of miles away feel it hard to breathe. Wherever Zhu Rong flew across, countless living creatures on the ground would kneel and kowtow to him, and even bugs in brushwoods dared not to make any sound.

The golden beam of light transformed from Ji Hao followed behind Zhu Rong closely. He flew swiftly fast, but completely silent. Looking from a distance away, one would find that the golden light transformed from Ji Hao was fast and indescribably sharp, slicing the sky open like a fierce golden sword.

Zhu Rong turned around and glanced at Ji Hao, popping out his eyes in surprise as he said, "Good boy, you’re so weak but can fly so fast?! Am I too old? Or your flying magic is truly so magical?"

Followed by a thunderous boom, a ten-miles long streak of fiery light burst from behind Zhu Rong, as he boosted his speed up by ten times, and left Ji Hao over ten miles behind within a second.

Ji Hao flashed again across the air. He activated his sun power as much as he could, and his body merged into the sunlight. Under the sun, he could reach anywhere he saw within a second, only with a thought.

Zhu Rong flew fast, but Ji Hao chased faster. Flashing across the air for a few times, Ji Hao caught up with Zhu Rong.

Zhu Rong was even stunned by Ji Hao’s amazing flying speed. In shock, he yelled, "Good boy, good boy. You...Haha, what a shame, why aren’t you my son?"

Ji Hao's face turned twisted and dark again. He looked at Zhu Rong, and helplessly responded, "Lord Zhu Ro...Eh, A-Abba, what are you talking about?"

Zhu Rong sighed, showed his teeth while shaking his head, then said, "I am talking in human language, can't you understand? My seventh son is too incapable. I sent him to Pu Ban City and agreed to let him compete for the throne of the human emperor, which I regret now, because he doesn't have the ability!"

Casting a complicated glance at Ji Hao, Zhu Rong shook his head and said, "If you were my son, and if a half of your bloodline was from the humankind, I would certainly support you and help you to attain the throne of the human emperor. Ha, shame, what a shame... My seventh son, that kid...Zhu Rong Tainming? He called himself 'the chosen one'? Without my support, he's chosen by no one!"

Ji Hao was silently shocked. 'So it turned out that Zhu Rong knew everything?' thought Ji Hao.

Zhu Rong Tianming joined the competition for the throne of the human emperor in a big way, and he had been recruiting in a massive scale in Pu Ban City. Besides Bo Qiujia, Priest Corpse and the other supporters, Zhu Rong had also been helping him with that, hadn't he?

Zhu Rong stopped speeding up. Instead, he flew side by side with Ji Hao, high up in the air. A while later, Ji Hao finally couldn't restrain his curiosity anymore and let the question out, "Abba, do you really support Zhu Rong Tianming to compete for the position of the human emperor?"

Zhu Rong wasn't going to lie about this. He responded straightforwardly, "A half of his bloodline is from the humankind. Therefore, he is qualified for that position. Not to mention anything else, only for all the sacrifices we, our Zhu Rong Family, have been making to the humankind, it's reasonable for a human

emperor to emerge from our family."

Ji Hao was confused. He truly didn’t know what sacrifice had Zhu Rong Family been making for the humankind.

Zhu Rong Family was domineering Southern Wasteland. Except for special days, Zhu Rong rarely went to Pu Ban City to meet the human emperor. What could he do for the humankind?

While Ji Hao was wondering, about this, a tremendous lava lake appeared in Ji Hao’s sight. Zhu Rong grabbed Ji Hao’s arm and brought him into the lava. Diving down for tens of thousands of miles, a fire bronze divine palace could be seen in the front.

Zhu Rong smiled and said, "Ji Hao, do you know why can Zhu Rong Family people be the Great Libation of the humankind, generation after generation, and hold the power of sacrifice of your humankind?"

"The reason is in here. Our Zhu Rong Family is secretly suppressing the evils for the humankind... forever."

Chapter 853: Suppressing the Evils Forever

Guided by Zhu Rong, Ji Hao didn't feel anything when diving down. But now, standing in front of this completely sealed divine palace, Ji Hao sensed a dreadful intent of killing from the boundless boiling lava around it.

The lava rolled and boiled around the palace. The lava in here was clear in texture, even transparent like melted glass. Within the lava, cyan, purple, blue, white and black colored flames had been sparkling. The lava was incredibly hot. If Ji Hao was right, the five-colored flame was called five Qi glass flame, ranked top five among all divine flames in the world. Each color of this special type of flame corresponded to a main internal organ of the human body. This type of flame was especially harmful to evil primordial, souls and spirit, and could effectively suppress all kinds of evils and negative powers.

Within the melted-glass-like, transparent lava, countless arm-thick streams of red light had been dazzling around. Looking closer, Ji Hao found that these light streams were shaped like blood dragons, with dragon horns and claws being faintly visible. These light streams were flame spirits generated by nature. Once they matured, they would transform into fire dragons. Ji Hao carefully released his spirit power and slightly touched one flame spirit. Ji Hao's spirit power was purely positive and came from his seed of Dao of sun, but still, the high surface temperature of that flame spirit caused Ji Hao a slight sting.

At first glance, these flame spirits were only swimming randomly around in the lava. But as Ji Hao carefully observed their moving tracks, he couldn't help but have his look changed. The moving tracks of these hundreds of flame spirits were not random. Instead, they had been drawing a series of extremely complicated, enormous pre-world divine spell symbols, which eventually formed a million miles wide, tremendous divine magic formation.

Ji Hao roughly analyzed this especially complicated divine magic formation with the knowledge he learned from Yu Yu's Study of Magus Formation. But soon, he sensed that his primordial spirit power was consumed speedily, which even made him faint. Yet, he didn't even manage to figure out the basic purpose of this great magic formation.

Zhu Rong raised the wine calabash, poured some wine into his mouth, then glanced at Ji Hao, who was swaying because of the dizziness, and laughed, "This nameless great magic formation is alive. Only Fire God and his successors know how to get in and come out from it...We only know how to go in and come out safely, but don't know how to break this great formation."

Ji Hao took a few deep breaths. His spirit blood released a strong warm power to replenish the consumed power of the seed of Dao of sun. Pure spirit power was speedily generated by the seed of Dao, while Ji Hao's primordial spirit quickly regained its power, recovering to the peak state.

Ji Hao was a Divine Magus now. His body was incredibly strong, and every single drop of his blood contained a thriving power and life-force. Therefore, Ji Hao could regain his consumed power much faster than the other Qi cultivators. He dared not to look at the terrifying great formation and the surrounding lava again. Therefore, Ji Hao fixed his eyes on the glowing-red bronze divine palace in front of him.

The divine palace was around ten-thousand meters tall, and was around a hundred miles square. The divine palace was entirely cast from glowing-red bronze, and had an ancient style, looking sturdy and majestic. Probably because it was nourished by the lava and pure earth flame for countless years, countless clear flame patterns had naturally emerged on its surface.

Above the palace, a purple stream of mist poured down. The scorching hot purple mist covered the entire palace, along with the square in front of it. From within the purple mist, fiery

thunderbolts struck down from time to time, raising dazzling fire sparkles and roaring flames from the palace. It caused a thunderous noise that made the surrounding lava wave intensely.

Seventy-two altars were built in front of the palace. On each altar were two red bronze columns, with arm-thick chains coiled on them. Raging fire swished out of the chains ceaselessly while the chains squirmed slightly like boas. The end of every single chain had pierced deeply into a muscular body.

Seventy-two strong and muscular men over ten-meter tall, each stood on an altar between two columns, showing their teeth because of the pain. These muscular men looked like metal statues, the body of each of them penetrated by tens of chains. The chains pierced deeply into their bodies, tightly connected with their bones, and even internal organs.

The fiery thunderbolts descended from the purple mist and struck on these columns from time and time. The thunderbolts blasted and sent huge bolts of lightning into the bodies of these men, along with those chains, making fire sparkles dazzling out of their bodies. A loud, rumbling noise was generated from their bodies, that sounded like the ring of an enormous bronze bell.

These muscular men stood on those altars, between columns, letting the thunderbolts strike and the fire burn them, but none of them had been making even the slightest sound.

What surprised Ji Hao was that these men looked eighty to ninety percent similar to human beings, but they were not human beings. Between their stomachs and chests, on their necks, under their crotch, on their elbows, knees, ankles and shoulders, were shells growing out from the skin. These dimly sparkling, metal-like shells were parts of their bodies. These shells had smooth lines, tightly covering their bodies like soft armors. Twisted spell symbols could be faintly seen on these shells, releasing an ancient, fierce sense of power. Each one of these spell symbols seemed as creepy as crawling centipedes and poisonous snakes.

Ji Hao had never seen spell symbols like these, no matter in Southern Wasteland local magics, books collected by the Magi Palace, or the scriptures gave by Yu Yu, or those secret magics he learned from the non-humankind. Not a single type of spell symbol he knew looked similar to these spell symbols on the shells of those muscular men.

These spell symbols seemed to be especially dangerous and aggressive. Ji Hao only took a single glance at them, but he already sensed an evil power approaching through his gaze. A faint golden layer of essence sun fire automatically began burning on Ji Hao's body, blocking and dispelling that evil power.

Except for those shells, that clearly showed these muscular men were not human beings, they also had sharp horns on their heads. Dark horns with a metal luster were present on their foreheads, that looked a bit like the horns of bulls. The same twisted spell symbols had also been sparkling on their horns. But unlike the spell symbols on their shells, these had been releasing a sharp sense of power, just like blades with trenchant edges, that could even pierce into the sky.

These men were all over ten meters tall, and their horns were around three meters long. Although these horns seemed to be too long and not so convenient, one could easily imagine when these men lowered their heads, fiercely rushing on a battlefield, how terrifying their horns would be.

One of these muscular men, who was tied on the nearest altar from Ji Hao, seemed to sense Ji Hao's gaze and suddenly opened his eyes. His eyes were purely blood-red, filled with insanely strong intent of killing. Except for the insanity and craziness, Ji Hao couldn't discover any other emotion from this man's eyes.

"Human being, kid...I want to bite your head off!" The muscular man laughed loudly. He had layers of sharp teeth in his mouth, that looked like the teeth of a shark. Every single one of those teeth was as sharp as a dagger.

"Suppress the evils forever." Zhu Rong looked at the seventy-eight muscular men and said blandly, "They, and the one in the palace, are the evils that our Zhu Rong Family have been suppressing."

Coughing loudly, Zhu Rong maintained that bland tone and continued, "Follow me, meet that guy!"

Chapter 854: The First Chi You

The seventy-two muscular men chained on altars all opened their eyes. Their faces were twisted, their eyes fierce while they showed their teeth and crazily growled towards Ji Hao. Their resonant voices contained an evil power that could even shake people's souls.

Ji Hao believed that on a battlefiled, ordinary Senior Magi, Magus Kings, and even Divine Magi who had just attained one of two spirit stars, would be frightened badly by the growls of these muscular men and flee desperately. However, the seed of Dao of sun was strong and powerful, while the sun power could naturally break all evil in the world. Therefore, the growls of these men only caused Ji Hao a piercing pain on his eardrums, but failed to deliver any effect on his primordial spirit. The evil power was dispelled by the essence sun fire even before it touched Ji Hao's primordial spirit.

These muscular men growled for a while and found that Ji Hao remained perfectly unaffected by their growls. As a result, the fierceness in the eyes of those men even grew stronger. They ground their teeth, let out a cracking noise while staring at Ji Hao, and shouted loudly, "We will kill you, kid, we will kill you!"

"We will pull out your arm and eat it with black vinegar!"

"I am going to chew his head. This kid's brain must be tasty."

"I want his heart. He must have a strong heart!"

All kinds of vicious languages came out from these men' mouths. They threatened Ji Hao, threatened his families, threatened clansmen and friends. Loudly, they attacked Ji Hao with all kinds of nasty languages, and one of them even began insulting Qing Fu with bestial words.

Ji Hao raised his eyebrows. Before Zhu Rong said anything, Ji

Hao had already leaped up and activated the strength he gained through the cultivation method with nine turns, letting his muscles swell and squirm under his skin like struggling boas.

The nine suns spear was gripped in Ji Hao's hands while releasing a raging fire. The moves of Sky-Opening and Earth-Splitting were launched simultaneously. The nines suns spear raised a sharp, arc-shaped golden light beam, while hacking fiercely on this man's neck.

Puff! This man's neck was cut off by Ji Hao.

The head was even larger than a water tank, which thudded against the ground. Ji Hao sensed a great pain from his wrist, that even disabled him from holding the spear tightly. The nine suns spear flew out of his hand along with a buzzing noise, then transformed into a golden stream of light and flew back to Ji Hao, hovering around him like a living being.

The skin and muscles and bones of this muscular man were all incredibly sturdy. Ji Hao had put forth his strength as much as he could and borrowed the power of the nine suns spear, which was a great pre-world treasure. Although he managed to cut off the man's head, the bones in his hands and his forearms were all shattered.

"What a strong body!" Ji Hao's heart beat quickly while he looked at these muscular men in shock.

"What a great weapon!" The head that fell on the ground opened its mouth and shouted out. He threw a threatening glance at Ji Hao, then a stream of blood spurted out from his broken neck, wrapped the head up and turned it into a stream of blood-red light that flew back to the neck. Within a blink of an eye, the head returned to the neck, as if it was never cut off. Not even a slight wound could be seen on the neck.

"This?!" Ji Hao's pupils shrunk to the needle size, staring at the man and shouted, "Deathless body?"

"All seventy-two of them." Zhu Rong looked at Ji Hao, also in shock. He raised his wine calabash, but forgot to put it near his mouth. Drops of wine flowed out from the opening of the calabash, but Zhu Rong wasn't paying any attention to the wine now.

These muscular men had been chained in this place for many, many years. Day and night, they were tortured by the thunderbolts and earth fire, without having any natural power or food to replenish their bodies. Therefore, they were now much weaker than their peak state. However, even at the weak state, the bodies of these men were still invulnerable. Zhu Rong had brought quite a few top-grade powerful Zhu Rong Family members to this place, but not everyone could manage to break their bodies and truly harm these men. As for cutting off the heads of these men with a single strike, as far as Zhu Rong Knew, only three people had done this before. Those three people were himself, his father and his grandfather!

The three generations of Fire God were capable of cutting off the head of one of these muscular men with a single strike. But among all those elite warriors under Zhu Rong's command, not a single one could do that!

"Man Man has found herself a good man...I have to make them have kids as soon as possible!" murmured Zhu Rong.

Putting down the wine calabash, Zhu Rong called Ji Hao's name and guided him into that glowing-red, completely sealed divine palace, which was constantly struck by fiery thunderbolts.

On the seventy-two altars, the seventy-two muscular men looked at Ji Hao with weird looks. The blood-red color in their eyes grew more vivid, as the intent of killing they released towards Ji Hao grew stronger and stronger. The fierce aura of killing spread out on the square, but none of them cursed Ji Hao ever again.

Although they were deathless, it was still too painful for their heads to be cut off. These muscular men were wild and violent, but

they weren't stupid to ask for pain deliberately.

The gate of the divine palace was tall and especially thick. Zhu Rong stood in front of the gate, put his hands on it, and cast a series of spell with a low voice. Countless red divine spell symbols emerged from the gate while streams of fiery red transformed into lifelike legendary creatures, flying across the gate. After a quarter of an hour, the gate opened slowly.

"Whoever wants to open this gate has to wait for a quarter of an hour." said Zhu Rong blandly, "Even I have to wait for this long, even though I know how to open this gate. And when this gate opens, the divine monument in the Fire God Palace on Zhu Rong Peak, would certainly give an alarm."

"Three days earlier, I was meditating in the Fire God Palace. The divine monument alarmed, so I came here immediately. At that moment, someone was trying to break the seal of the gate. I fought against them, killed three, captured one, while the other two escaped... and I was injured."

Ji Hao looked at Zhu Rong. Only six people intruded, but they injured Zhu Rong?! Zhu Rong was the Fire God, and this place was an ocean of lava. This place was like a small world purely with the fire power, almost like Pan Jia world.

How could Zhu Rong possibly be injured in a place like this?

The gate opened rumblingly. A strong fiery light dazzled out of the gate. Zhu Rong grabbed Ji Hao's arm and dodged aside. Followed by a quick series of puffing noise, tens of swords zipped out of the gate while releasing red lotuses and black flames, crazily hovering and clanging in the gateway, then slowly flew back into the gate.

Watching this, Ji Hao had cold sweat flowing down from his forehead. Such a fierce trap. Zhu Rong opened the gate with the correct method himself, but still, such a deathly trap existed behind the gate. According to the legends, those red lotuses and

black flames could burn literally everything in the world, and turn the entire world back to Chaos. Since those swords could control the red lotuses and black flame, they were definitely pre-world supreme treasures as well.

If anyone didn’t know about the trap and recklessly opened the gate, that crazy wave of hacks that happened just now would certainly take the poor person’s life away.

"Who on earth is being kept in this place?" Ji Hao couldn’t help but ask Zhu Rong.

"The first Chi You…The first leader of Chi You Army of the non-humankind." responded Zhu Rong with a deep voice, "Or you can say, he’s the only, the true Chi You. His head is in this place."

Chapter 855: An Eternal Being

Fire burned ragingly in the palace. Except for the essence sun fire and the other few types of top-grade divine flames, all the other divine flames and spirit flames could be seen in the palace. Different colored fires were so bright and dense, they even seemed to be tangible. The fires burned, and made the space inside the palace quake intensely, seeming ready to collapse anytime.

The fire power gathered in the palace was way too strong, to the extent that every type of fire had even turned conscious, transforming into all kinds of legendary creatures, flying, walking in the palace, or lying on the ground and taking a nap.

Fire dragons, fire phoenixes, fire horses, fire snakes, fire Qi Lin, leopards, tigers, boars...All kinds of creatures could be seen in every corner of the palace. They were all flame spirits, condensed from fires, but without fleshy bodies.

The temperature in the palace was incredibly high. Ji Hao took a deep breath and sensed a hot stream of air surging into his chest through his nostrils. The hot airstream roared inside his chest like an erupting volcano, which Ji Hao spent quite a while to absorb.

Ji Hao had been pursuing the great Dao of sun. Therefore, every inch of his body was filled with the purest sun power, that allowed him to stay unharmed in this palace. Standing in this palace for a short while could kill any ordinary person, and even a steel body would be melt into liquid in this place.

Zhu Rong gave a shout, followed by which, a few flame spirits who had been chasing each other for fun obediently stepped back and cleared a path, leading straight into the inner area of the palace. On the red bronze floor, fist-sized fire lotuses gradually bloomed. Zhu Rong trod on those flowers, walking quickly forwards while telling Ji Hao how to do it.

Ji Hao fixed his eyes on where Zhu Rong stepped and dared not to

make any mistake. Zhu Rong clearly told him that these fire lotuses were also a powerful trap. If he made a wrong step, a poisonous, prehistorical flame would be released. The poisonous flame could kill a person with a single touch, without leaving a chance to cure, unless this person was as powerful as Zhu Rong.

Walking along the path paved by fire lotuses for tens of miles, dense clouds of purple mist could be seen in the front. Fire reached high into the sky, and ninety-nine fire dragons coiled on a fire column that emerged out of a hole in the ground. Five-colored spheres of flame flew all over the ground, and because of the great heat released from the column, even Ji Hao didn't want to approach it.

The temperature was wildly high, burning Ji Hao's skin and causing him a great pain. The Gold Crow cloak was activated automatically and released spheres of golden flame to wrap his body up, fending against the high temperature.

The temperature in the palace had been raised to an unreasonable, unimaginable degree, by the fire column, such that even Ji Hao felt it hard to withstand. Ninety-nine fire columns stood in a strange formation, and every single column had ninety-nine fire dragons coiling around it. Those fire dragons largely opened their mouths, letting out thin threads of transparent, colorless flame.The transparent and colorless flame formed an invisible cage, sealing a water-tank-sized head in midair.

Just like the seventy-two muscular men chained on the square, this head had a pair of sharp, bull-like horns. The face on this head was square and his skin rough. At first glance, this face might seem to be a bit ugly, but if one looked closer, they would discover the specialty of this face. The longer one looked at it, the more charming it would become.

Hearing the footsteps of Zhu Rong and Ji Hao, the eyes on this face suddenly opened, showing a pair of watery eyes in front of Ji Hao, with black pupils. This pair of eyes could even be counted as

beautiful. The eyes formed a strong and magical contrast against the square face. It was like seeing a creature with the body of a muscular boar and the head of a beautiful girl.

Zhu Rong stood before the head, pointed at it and said, "This is Chi You, the first Chi You, the true and the only Chi You. Each of the subsequent leaders of Chi You Army had only absorbed a drop of his spirit blood, and attained a slight part of his original power."

Ji Hao looked at Zhu Rong in shock. Back in Pan Xi world, he encountered the current Chi You, which was an especially powerful enemy. However, such a powerful enemy was created merely with a drop of blood of this original Chi You? In this case, this true Chi You, how powerful was he?

"I'm flattered." said Chi You with a gentle tone, "I admit I have an extraordinary power. But at last, I was defeated by your ancestors. Besides, they tore me to pieces, limb from limb, with five horses. They killed me in such a humiliating way."

Sighing slightly, Chi You looked at Ji Hao and continued a bit pitifully, "Tearing me apart, that I could accept, because I killed many of your people, slaughtered many of your clans. Whatever cruel punishment was to be given, I deserved it." Pausing for a second, Chi You carried on with his eyebrows knitted, "But, there was a slight imperfection. The five horses your ancestors chose were not equally strong, and neither were their moves ordered. As a consequence, my body was split into six parts, but my two legs and two arms were left with different lengths. My wounds were imperfect as well...I've been suggesting that you should let my body remerge, then tear me apart again, perfectly. But why don't you just accept my suggestion?"

The head swayed as Chi You continued murmuring to Ji Hao, "For example, you see, my head, Emperor Xuan Yuan chopped it off himself. But his sword was a bit deflective when he launched the move. As a result, a section of my neck bone was cut at a tilt. You see, my wound is not flat and smooth enough, this is not

perfect."

With a dark face, Ji Hao looked at Chi You, who was complaining all the time. ‘Is this guy an OCD patient? You’re torn into pieces already, why are you still complaining about your imperfect wounds?’ thought Ji Hao. ‘Back in the ancient time, this guy nearly destroyed the army of the alliance of human clans that was led by Emperor Xuan Yuan, and the human civilization in Pan Gu world, was that even true?’

"Zhu...A-Abba!" Ji Hao looked at Zhu Rong and said, "Zhu Rong Family had been suppressing Chi You since generations. This must be a top secret... Why did you bring me to this place?"

Zhu Rong narrowed his eyes, looked at Chi You and said in a deep voice, "I have a presentiment. Recently, I always feel that something bad is going to happen. Tong Gong, your big brother, he has now reached a crucial stage of his cultivation. I can’t disturb him, and the other few of your brothers have all been guarding important places, so they cannot come either. Therefore, I brought you here."

"Take this as a preventive action." continued Zhu Rong seriously while looking at Ji Hao, "If nothing happens, that will be the best. But if anything happens..."

Chi You narrowed his eyes, looked at Zhu Rong and laughed, "If anything happens, what could this kid possibly do to me? I am an eternal being. I have immortal life and a deathless body. The lives of my seventy-two brothers are connected with mine. As long as I am alive, they will never die either."

Laughing again, Chi You continued asking Zhu Rong with that gentle tone, "If any bad thing did happen, what could this kid do? Could he kill me? Could he destroy me?"

Sighing slightly, Chi You looked at Zhu Rong and grinningly continued, "Do you remember the suggestion I made when you were little? Your Zhu Rong Family suppressed me generation after

generation, but in the meanwhile, didn’t you throw yourselves into the cage as well?"

"Why don’t you set me free? Once I have regained my power and conquered this world, I will surely pay you back with heavy rewards."

Chapter 856: A Southern Wasteland Man

The invisible flame burned, and Chi You's head squirmed, changing its shape along with the flame, the lights, and the shadows.

Ji Hao activated the immemorial sun streamer and released the essence sun fire, creating a sharp fire sword that crazily hacked Chi You for quite a while. But, he failed to even break the skin of Chi You's face. Ji Hao then pulled out the nine suns spear, lunged, pierced and hacked with all his strength. Once, he boosted his power up and launched the combined move of Sky Opening, Earth Splitting, Everything Grow, and Everything perish; that was the strongest move he could launch at the current stage.

The nine suns spear, as a pre-world treasure, corresponded with the combined move, but still, even the skin on Chi You's face wasn't broken. On the contrary, the nine suns spear clanged against Chi You's forehead and left an arc-shaped golden light beam in the air. Right next, a terrifying counterforce struck back to Ji Hao like a tsunami, shattered Ji Hao's arms entirely and blasted his arms into two spheres of blood mist.

Divine Magi could regrow their bodies from a single drop of blood. Ji Hao endured the pain while the blood mist quickly gathered back. Within the blink of an eye, the blood mist turned back into a pair of perfectly unharmed arms.

Packing the nine suns spear, Ji Hao looked at Chi You silently. Zhu Rong said that this guy was an eternal being, and this guy also said that he was an eternal being. Although Ji Hao wasn't sure if eternal life truly existed in this world, Chi You's body was indeed incredibly strong.

With a strike launched by Ji Hao with all of his power, even the heads of Xiang Liu, who was a powerful prehistorical creature, could be cut off. But Ji Hao couldn't even break the skin of Chi

You. Exactly how powerful was Chi You?

It was easy to imagine that back then, when Chi You led his army to sweep across the human world, how much effort did Emperor Xuan yuan make, how much price did he pay to capture Chi You alive, tear him apart and seal him, and how powerful Emperor Xuan yuan was himself.

"You..." Ji Hao looked at Chi You and gasped quickly.

Chi You looked back at Ji Hao with his watery pair of eyes and said gently, "In fact, I am not a cruel and violent person. The brains of Zhu Rong Family people are all burned by fire. Little guy, you should think about what I said."

"Zhu Rong brought you here as a preventive action. This means that in the future, you may have the chance to be with me alone. If you can break this seal for me and free me, I will make you immortal like my brothers, once I have regained my power."

"Trust me... At least, I will never lie to a little kid."

Chi You's eyes were bright, his gaze determined and his tone gentle. When he was talking, his tone and facial expression made him more like a courteous, nice man living next door than a legendary, ancient evil being.

A rather infectious man, only with OCD.

Ji Hao shook his head, took a few steps backward, and said in a deep voice, "No matter what you offer me, I won't betray my people for those things and bring them disasters."

Zhu Rong stood aside silently, listening to the conversation between Chi You and Ji Hao.

Chi You chuckled, threw a sideway glance at Zhu Rong and said with that gentle tone, "You're wrong. Do you think I will slaughter human beings for no reason? I have indeed killed countless human beings, but as for those who those followed my lead, I never harmed them."

Sighing slightly, Chi You raised his eyelids and continued with an emotional look, "Actually, I am from Southern Wasteland too. I was a clansman of Jiu Li Clan. Zhu Rong, you cannot deny my family background...When I became the leader of Jiu Li Clan, your Zhu Rong Family was not yet the domineer of Southern Wasteland."

Zhu Rong finally began talking, "Jiu Li Clan doesn't exist in the world anymore. Chi You, blame yourself for that."

"Blame me?" Chi You showed the whites of his eyes, slowly sighed and said, "What did I do wrong? What I did back in the ancient time, which powerful clan wouldn't do the same?"

"You said that human beings should stick together, combine the powers to fend against the enemies. But my Jiu Li Clan people were free and happy. We weren't willing to follow orders, and that was our nature."

"So the war was started, without any evil or justice. Me and my people were defeated, indeed. We weren't as smart as you, we couldn't play those tricks that you did. Therefore, we were defeated. I admit, no big deal."

Ji Hao popped out his eyes. Had Chi You fought against Emperor Xuanyuan already before he followed the command of the non-humankind? Even those secret records kept in the Magi Palace didn't include this.

"As for what happened afterward, can you blame me for that?" Chi You curved his mouth corners down, helplessly looked at Zhu Rong and continued, "Base on your conscience, can you truly blame me for what happened afterward? My brothers and I were defeated, and we were captured alive by the non-humankind. Although we gained great benefits from them, we were also controlled by them. Seriously, you can't blame me for what happened after that."

Chi You swayed his head again, took a circle in the air, seeming

even to be quite joyful, then he fixed his eyes on Ji Hao again.

"Little guy, you saw my seventy-two brothers outside, you saw them. If I was like them, knowing nothing but killing, with my powers, I don't think Emperor Xuan yuan could do anything to me."

"I was just...In fact, for a while, I was just like them, completely under the control of the non-humankind, like a tool. When I was like a machine, I made Emperor Xuan yuan and the alliance of human clans suffer a few overwhelming defeats in a row...But I was lucky, I conquered the thing inside me, and then became an immortal being. But meanwhile, I was conscious again."

Chi You raised his eyelids, heavily sighed and continued, "I didn't think that when I fought like a machine, I almost destroyed Emperor Xuan yuan and his army. But when I was conscious again, I fought in my own style and was defeated, utterly. Am I truly not smart enough? So not perfect... I was gifted with an invincible power, but why didn't I have a brain that could allow me to rival Emperor Xuan yuan?"

'If you were as smart as Emperor Xuan yuan, all human beings would have become slaves of the non-humankind, wouldn't they?' thought Ji Hao.

"You said that you were a clansman of Jiu Li Clan, right? But how did you become immortal?" Ji Hao was curious. Immortal, what kind of stage was that?

"Ah, those non-human beings were silly." Chi You grinned and responded, still in that gentle tone. "Before they came to Pan Gu world, they swept across a large world, that was almost collapsed, and gained a broken stone heart."

"They had run countless experiments with their own people, but no matter Yu Clan people, Jia Clan people or Xiu Clan people, even their slaves and dark-kind warriors, all those people exploded and died after absorbing a slight little bit of the power of that stone

heart. Therefore, they saw that stone heart as an evil thing, and dared not to try it with their own people again."

"I was defeated, and I fled. But I was captured alive by a troop of non-humankind warriors. They tested that stone heart with me, and unexpectedly, my body perfectly merged with the stone heart, the entire stone heart, and I was gifted with immortal life and a deathless body."

Murmuring for quite a while, Chi You looked at Ji Hao once again and said, "I am a Jiu Li Clan man. If I am freed, people who follow my lead will be my clansmen. How can I slaughter them for no reason?"

Chapter 857: Golden Body, Treasure Body

"Save it." said Zhu Rong while looking at Chi You coldly, "This son-in-law of mine is Yu Yu's disciple. You fought Yu Yu and his disciples back then, so you should know about the tempers of his and his disciples."

"That odd Yu Yu? The stubborn one who always protects his disciples unreasonably?" Chi You popped out his eyes, reached out his tongue, licked his lips and said, "Why didn't you tell me that you're Yu Yu's disciple? Why should I waste my saliva on you?"

Shaking his head and sighing, Chi You closed his eyes and murmured, "This crappy place, not even a single drop of water can be found here. You think it's easy for me to save some saliva in my mouth?"

Ji Hao looked at Zhu Rong and remained silent.

As he thought, Zhu Rong knew about Yu Yu. Zhu Rong Family had been keeping their own version of historical records, and still had the records regarding Yu Yu and people like him. Although the humankind had already tried their best to destroy some ancient records, what they did couldn't affect Zhu Rong Family.

"Abba," Ji Hao carefully called Zhu Rong. He was curious, as he wanted to know Zhu Rong's opinion of Yu Yu.

"Yu Yu is a good one. It's a good thing for you to become his disciple." Zhu Rong smiled and said seriously, "Fortunately, it's him. If it were his two brothers...hehe, although I never met them, my ancestors left their words pretty clearly. Those people are proud, and they don't seem to think highly of Gods like us."

Snorting slightly, Zhu Rong narrowed his eyes and continued, "I don't know where they came from. Gods like me, we are generated by natural essences, we are the embodiments of the great Dao of nature... We are noble beings in this world. But, how can they so

proud that they even look down upon us?"

Ji Hao remained silent. The two brothers of Yu Yu were indeed proud, but Ji Hao believed that they did have a good reason to be so proud.

Zhu Rong shook his head and didn't want to waste any time on this topic. He moved swiftly and took a circle around a few fire columns. As shreds of afterimages flashed across the air, as Zhu Rong dragged out a tall man, who had white skin, from behind a fire column.

He threw this man down and let him softly thud against the ground. Then Zhu Rong crooked his ten fingers, quickly ripped off the broken dragon-skin armor worn by this man, and exposed his silver-white skin.

Chi You opened his eyes again, looking at this man with curiosity.

Ji Hao took two steps forwards, went near this three meters tall man, who had silver-white skin that was as smooth as the best jade, even having a faint pearl-like luster. He looked at this man from head to tow while the man opened his eyes, silently looking at Ji Hao as well. Fierce beams of light flashed across this man's faintly golden eyes from time to time.

Once this man opened his eyes, Ji Hao discovered the strangeness about this pair of eyes. No pupils could be seen in that faintly golden pair of eyes. Instead, that was a pair of compound eye, like the eyes of some insects. Countless hexagon shaped compound eye units were in ordered lines, forming this man's faintly golden eyes.

Ji Hao slightly touched an eye of this man and grasped a faint stream of power. Ji Hao couldn't help but gasp in shock — This man's eyes were not natural. Instead, same as his eye of Dao of sun, someone especially powerful made this pair of eyes. However, Ji Hao couldn't figure out what this pair of eyes could do.

Zhu Rong stood aside. He took out another wine calabash and poured some wine into his mouth. The dense aroma of wine spread out as Chi You suddenly turned his head around with his eyes popped out widely, thirstily staring at Zhu Rong. However, he seemed to know that Zhu Rong would never share the fine wine with him. Therefore, even though Chi You's eyeballs were about to pop out from his eye sockets, he didn't say a word.

Gulping a few mouthfuls of wine, Zhu Rong pointed at the man and said, "I don't know how this guy broke the great magic formation outside, but he had indeed reached to this divine palace. Unfortunately, the seal of this palace was set by my ancestors, and the opening method is passed by word of mouth between every generation of Zhu Rong."

"He didn't know how to unseal the palace, but he used a secret unsealing magic that was rather complicated, which even I don't understand, to try to break the seal of this divine palace. I caught him by the gateway and then there was a great fight. Two escaped, and only this poor guy had his limbs broken, and was captured alive by me."

Pointing at the ceiling of the divine palace, Zhu Rong continued with a cold voice, "This divine palace is specially designed to suppress Chi You. Except for flame spirits and living creatures with the fire power, injured living beings could never recover in this place, not even by a little bit. So I threw him in here."

Ji Hao squatted beside the man and gently pressed his finger on the man's golden eyeball.

The man fiercely glared at Ji Hao and let out a heavy breath, but still didn't say a word.

"Did you torture him?" Ji Hao glanced at Zhu Rong.

"Sure, do you think that I'm a softhearted man?" Zhu Rong took another few gulps of wine, helplessly sighed and said, "But what I did to him was all useless. This guy seems to feel no pain. I did all I

could, but I couldn’t make him talk."

Pointing at the man’s head, Zhu Rong continued in a deep voice, "In the aspect of soul, like all Gods, my soul and my body are an integrity. Therefore, I couldn’t go too far on the cultivation of soul, which means I can not directly torture his soul. Therefore, I brought you here, to see if you can do anything to him."

Ji Hao looked at this expressionless man and pondered for a while. Then, a dim stream of light flashed across his palm. He cast a primordial-spirit-shaking magic that he learned from Yu Yu’s scripture. With this magic, a Qi cultivator could shake the primordial spirit of a living being out of its body, that would allow this Qi cultivator to capture the primordial spirit.

Buzz! Followed by this noise, a dense, colorful stream of light was released from this man’s head. Ji Hao’s magic was broken by this strong light stream, and didn’t manage to deliver any effect.

"Eh?" Ji Hao looked at this man in surprise. Through the magic, Ji Hao clearly sensed that this defensive light released from his body also came from an outer force, and didn’t seem to be natural and real, just like his eyes.

"You’re quite interesting." Ji Hao looked at the man, laughed and said, "Do you want me to do the work or you will just tell us what you know now?"

"Ignorant kid." The man finally began talking. His voice was cold and strong, sounding like the clangs of two pieces of frozen gemstone.

"Do what you can." The man closed his eyes, "What can you do to me?"

Ji Hao raised his head and looked at Zhu Rong.

Zhu Rong slightly nodded.

Ji Hao took out a sharp jade dagger. On the edge of the dagger, a few silver spell symbols had been sparkling brightly with a cold

light. He sliced the man's skin open with the dagger tip.

A loud noise was generated. Ji Hao felt that he wasn't cutting human skin, rather he was cutting an iron board. This man's skin was incredibly strong, such that Ji Hao put forth all of his strength to finally cut that skin open.

From under the silver-white skin, beautiful lights were released. The flesh, muscles and bones of this man were all crystal transparent, with different colors. His muscles were like pink crystals. Blood was like flowing, cyan-colored, sparkling liquid, while his bones were like golden glass. As for his internal organs, those were even more vividly colored, glistening like gemstones. It didn't seem like a fleshy body at all.

This man, his entire body was like a puppet, crafted by Xiu Clan masters with all kinds of rare gemstones. He was nothing like a human being.

Chapter 858: Human Weapon

Zhu Rong Mountain reached straight into the clouds and was entirely glowing red. No matter in the daytime or during the night, Zhu Rong Mountain would be like an enormous torch, releasing inexhaustible light and heat that shone on the surrounding area.

On top of the mountain, in a great hall that was entirely carved out of a whole piece of flame gemstone, Po squatted beside the man who was captured alive by Zhu Rong. He was slowly pressing his fingers on the man's skin, inch by inch, from the head to the bottom of the feet.

Ji Hao stood aside, carefully watching Po's moves.

Po's fingers seemed to be normal, yet, the colors of all his fingernails had changed. Red, white, black, cyan, yellow, the colors of his fingernails had constantly been changing while countless tiny spell symbols emerged ceaselessly from his fingertips like bolts of lightning, drilling into the man's skin. Wherever Po's fingers reached, the man's skin turned transparent like a crystal. Po's secret magic allowed the others to clearly see the inner structure of the body of this man.

Gui Ling stood beside Ji Hao, lowered her voice and explained to him, "This is 'big world and small world devil and God secret sealing magic' created by our big brother himself, especially for dealing with all kinds of spirit treasures and holy weapons. No matter natural-crafted treasures or artificial ones, this magic is effective against all kinds of magic treasures."

Zhu Rong stood in the distance, raised his wine calabash and, took a few gulps of wine from time to time.

With envy, he observed the magical changes of the man's skin delivered by Po's fingers while murmuring to himself, "Gods... hehe, we're just a bunch of boorish fellows. Except for playing with our spears, swords, and blades, we're far weaker than some of

the others in other fields."

Taking a large gulp of the wine, Zhu Rong lowered his eyelids and continued murmuring, "After all, human beings are chosen to be dominators of this world. Therefore, the bloodline of Zhu Rong Family was allowed to merge with the human bloodline. In this way, we can at least avoid extinction in the future."

"But Gong Gong, hehe, how many years has it been? He still believes that he can stand high above all human beings, insisting on maintaining the purity of the Water God bloodline. Look, look, the population of his family is reduced, generation after generation. For the youngest generation, Gong Gong Wuyou is the only direct descendant. Gong Gong, you can be proud indeed, but what can you do with your pride? When you no longer have any descendants, all that you've earned with your efforts would land in the hands of the others."

Narrowing his eyes, Zhu Rong fixed his eyes on Po's moves, while slightly raised his voice and said, "Shame, shame, my seventh son is not a talented kid. Otherwise, if he could become Yu Yu's disciple as well, I could worry less about him."

Po slightly paused, then continued checking the man's body, as if he heard nothing. Gui Ling's smile froze for a short moment as well, then she continued explaining Po's sealing magic to Ji Hao while conveniently teaching Ji Hao some basic hand motions and spells of this magic.

Ji Hao smilingly glanced at Zhu Rong, 'You surely want Zhu Rong Tianming to become Yu Yu's disciple, but Yu Yu might not want to be his Shifu! After all, Zhu Rong Tianming is following the guidance of Yu Yu's enemies at the moment, hehe.' thought Ji Hao.

Clang! Po crooked his fingers, and following his move, a piece of bone popped out from the man's little finger and clanged on the ground for a few times. The skin of that man remained perfectly

unharmed, but a piece of finger bone was drawn out of his body by Po, and even Ji Hao was stunned by this.

That piece of bone was as big as a finger of an ordinary human being, crystal clear like a piece of glass. Po took out some small chisels, knives and hammers, and the other few tools that were crafted by himself. He knocked, cut and sawed this piece of bone for quite a while. Afterwards, Po turned around his palm and let out thousands of type of natural divine flames, spirit flames and ordinary flames to burn this bone. After the flames, Po took out thousands of type of divine water, spirit water, and ordinary water to soak this bone. Then came lighting bolts, thunderbolts, fierce gale, sand and dust, and all kinds of powers generated from the basic five natural elements. Po used all of the above on this piece of bone, worked pretty hard for a couple of hours, but this bone still remained glistening, without being harmed even a little bit.

"What a magical thing." Po finally began talking. "This man's bones seem not to be natural. Instead, his bones are like artificial treasures. The marrow inside his bones does not seem like natural marrow either. It is like natural essence, such as ten-thousand years old earth milk, providing life-force for his body."

"Hmm!" Po then gave a loud and muffled snort, then flicked his finger and sent out dazzling streams of light into that bone.

Puff! Followed by this loud noise, this bone suddenly exploded into countless tiny light spots, that then turned into a three-thousand-meter radius light screen, rotating slowly around the people on the scene. Inside the light screen were countless different sized spell symbols in groups, forming a series of magic formations. The last move made by Po had completely revealed the secrets of this man's bones.

Ji Hao hadn't been working too hard on Yu Yu's Study of Magic Formation. But after all, he was a strangely lucky genius, and he had been receiving the power of faith from countless Yao Mountain people, that allowed him to dive into the mysteriousness

of the great Dao of nature with an especially high efficiency. As a consequence, he had been improving more speedily than the other cultivators, on the cultivation based on the great Dao of nature. Therefore, despite the fact that he hadn't been paying extra attention to the study of magic formation, he had indeed reached a considerable level on that field already. Among Yu Yu's young disciples, those who had learned the art of magic formations for hundreds, even a thousand years, might not be better than Ji Hao in this field.

As the light screen sparkled, Ji Hao took a glance at those spell symbols and magic formations in the light screen, and saw through around ninety percent of them. Many of those magic formations were new and creative. Those magic formations were well designed, with all kinds of functions, including absorbing natural powers, transforming natural resources, improving the defensive power, improving the speed, sturdiness, healing ability...Over ten-thousand magic formations with different functions could be found in the light screen, and the functions of these magic formations covered all kinds of situations that could happen in battles and fights.

"His internal organs are stoves that can transform the natural powers into energy, while his limbs and bones are magic formations, turning the natural powers into attacks." Po looked at this man, smiled coldly and said, "Every piece of bone of his is a killing magic formation, while every meridian of his is a seal. Lethal powers are contained in every corner of his body. He's not a human being, and neither his body is a fleshy body. Instead, he is a human weapon made with countless powerful natural materials."

Po then pointed his finger heavily on his man's head and turned the head transparent instantly. No brain could be seen inside the man's head, and only a large, dimly golden bead was seen spinning and rotating. Within the bead, the silhouette of the man was faintly visible, sitting with crossed legs. Countless extremely thin

beams of light flew out of the limbs of this man, connected with the silhouette through the bead.

"His soul has merged with the bead, and the bead is the core of the great formation based on his body, while his soul is the spirit of the great formation."

"He has no sense of pain or fear, neither is he afraid of the soul-searching magic. No soul-targeting magic can ever touch his soul, unless we destroy this bead. But once this bead is destroyed, his soul will collapse."

Po praised sincerely, "Such an ingenious design, the designer must be as powerful as our Shifu."

Chapter 859: A Powerful Magic

As powerful as Yu Yu?

Ji Hao sensed a piercing coldness from behind his neck while his scalp was numbed as well, such that even his hair were straightening up. This expressionless man, did Po say that he was a human weapon made by someone as powerful as Yu Yu?

Po's eyes shone brightly, as if he was a starving wolf which had its eyes fixed on a bloody piece of fresh meat. A fierce power vibration released from Po's entire body, and that power vibration made Ji Hao feel strange.

All this while, Po had been a gentle, nice and generous person, that Ji Hao had never seen Po showing such a strong desire towards anything. Obviously, this human weapon had aroused Po's strong interests.

With natural materials, turning a living being into a weapon, who had no sense of pain and fear, and even the soul-targeting magic could do nothing to it, was a nearly perfect weapon. Such a magical 'tool-crafting' method had made Po more than just excited.

"Under our elder uncle's command are some yellow scarf warriors for his disciples to use." murmured Po. "Those were spirit creatures or healthy human beings who willingly took the secretly concocted golden pills given by our elder uncle, then had their bodies remolded by jade, gold, bronze and all natural materials and cultivated for a hundred years. After that, they attained incomparably great strength, and their bodies are now as tough and sturdy as peak-level Divine Magi."

Zhu Rong's eye corners twitched intensively, then cast a complicated glance at Po, as if Po was a ghost.

'Yu Yu's elder brother cultivated yellow scarf warriors himself,

and within a hundred years, he made those warriors as powerful as peak-level divine magi?! Such a great creative power...He deserves to be one of those famous prehistorical beings in the world, and one of the top-ranked, terrifyinglu powerful beings on the ‘never-offend’ blacklist made by Gods in Pan Gu world.’ thought Zhu Rong.

Ji Hao carelessly looked at Po. With the power of Yu Yu’s elder brother, not to mention peak-level Divine Magi, he wouldn’t be surprised at all even if Po told him that his elder uncle could make Supreme-Magus-level yellow scarf warriors.

Po then continued, "My two uncles and my Shifu have different specialties. This secret ‘warrior-cultivating’ magic of our elder uncle, I’ve been admiring it for years. But our elder uncle only teaches it to his disciples, and that’s why I never asked him to teach me. I have no reason to disgrace our Shifu after all."

Excitedly patting on the face of the man, who lied on the ground and was disabled from moving, Po grinned and said, "What a great treasure! Although it’s slightly weaker than our elder uncle’s yellow scarf warriors, it’s similar to those yellow scarf warriors, and quite ingenious. If I can dig thoroughly into the secrets of his body, I can also create a secret magic to pass down to my disciples as well in the future."

Gui Ling also showed passionate look. The number of yellow scarf warriors under the command of Yu Yu’s big brother was not big, yet every single one of them was incredibly powerful. If Po could really dig thoroughly into the secrets of this man, in the future, every single Yu Yu’s disciple could have one or a few yellow scarf warriors to command when they traveled across the world. How wonderful would that be?!

Ji Hao’s look slightly changed as he shouted in surprise, "Brother, how’s the power of this thing?"

Po glanced at the man lying on the ground, slightly knitted his

eyebrows and responded, "Hmm? Roughly as powerful as a high-level Divine Magus."

Both Po and Ji Hao looked at Zhu Rong. Ji Hao asked in confusion, "Abba, only six high-level Divine Magi, how could they ever hurt you?"

Zhu Rong raised his calabash, poured the wine into his mouth and then laughed bitterly, "If those were only six high-level Divine Magi, I could crush them all by simply turning around my palm. But they were with a powerful weapon. That was a greatly powerful magic talisman, and even I could not stop it...If I weren't with the strong defensive treasure that was passed down from my ancestors from the ancient heaven, I would have probably ended up much worse than this."

Ji Hao, Po, and Gui Ling glanced at each other, and couldn’t say a word for quite a while.

Zhu Rong had a powerful defensive treasure that was from the ancient heaven. Inherited treasures of Zhu Rong Family must be top-grade pre-world supreme treasures, but under the protection of such a treasure, Zhu Rong was still injured by six high-level Divine Magi, who were even weaker than peak-level Divine Magi. How strange was this?

The greatly powerful magic talisman mentioned by Zhu Rong, who made that?

As the magic talisman was powerful enough to hurt Zhu Rong, its creator must be incredibly powerful as well.

The atmosphere in the hall became quite strange, as everyone on the scene had been thinking about the same thing. In this world, people with such a great power, who had been hiding in deep corners of Pan Gu world, could be counted on one’s fingers. But the ones who might do things like this, as sneaking into the divine palace with Chi You sealed in it...Whatever he or she did that for, Chi You was an enemy of the entire humankind, the whole Pan Gu

world. This meant that by simply doing this, whoever sent the six human weapons had already touched their bottom line.

"Can it be them?" Ji Hao looked at Po and asked.

"Don’t say it." Po cautiously looked at Ji Hao and said, "For people as powerful as our Shifu, Ji Hao, you have to remember this. Normally, don’t even mention their names unless you have to. Otherwise, who knows what will happen unexpectedly?"

‘What will happen unexpectedly?’ Once Po let out these few words, the man lying on the ground howled out.

That hysterical howl was generated from a soul-deep pain, which would make any living being want to die.

The body of the man exploded into countless grains. Like an expanding nebula, those faintly glistening grains spreading towards all directions. Countless sparkling grains gathered together and quickly condensed into a series of spell symbols.

A buzzing noise could be heard without an end. Following that, these sparkling spell symbols gathered into groups while streams of light dazzled between each group. Within a twinkling of an eye, a great teleporting magic formation, which was over three miles squared, was formed!

A human weapon changed into a teleporting magic formation all of a sudden. This was indeed an unimaginable change. Ji Hao was stunned completely. With what method could such an amazing change be delivered within such a short span of time?

This ingenious, amazing change must be designed at the beginning of the design of this human weapon, and all spell symbols of this teleporting magic formation must be hiding inside the body of this human weapon. But a teleporting magic formation was so complicated, how could it be torn apart and hidden in a human body? What a great controlling force and advanced technique did that require?

Neither Zhu Rong nor Po could manage to take the move to stop it, as a weird gust of wind blew out of the teleporting formation, along with a strange aroma.

The wind was warm and contained a dense aroma. It blew onto Ji Hao's body and made him feel that his body was softened, while an itchy happiness drilled directly into his marrow through his pores, disabling him from boosting any power up.

Numerous beautiful silhouettes walked out of the teleporting magic formation.

Long hair and long dresses fluttered in the wind. Around ten stunningly beautiful girls trod on flowers and walked quietly out of the teleporting magic formation. These girls were breathtakingly beautiful, as tall as Ji Hao, with slim body shapes. They each held a white jade pipa, as they gently crooked their fingers, while a magically beautiful melody was played.

Ji Hao lost his eyesight temporarily. The seed of Dao of sun suddenly burst with a dazzling light while Pan Jia sun automatically released a raging fire, wrapping Ji Hao up.

Swoosh! Strong sound waves bumped against Ji Hao's body, that sent him flying away.

Zhu Rong, Po, and Gui Ling growled out simultaneously, then all vomited blood.

The pipa, a Chinese stringed musical instrument somewhat resembling a guitar.

Chapter 860: Flying

Ji Hao thudded against the wall of the divine palace, making a dense layer of fiery light emerge from the palace. Ji Hao's head buzzed loudly. He sensed a great pain from his neck, and also heard a loud creaking noise from his bones.

Merely a series of sound waves had almost made both Ji Hao's body and soul collapse. One had to mention that at the current stage, Ji Hao was a genuine Divine Magus. His power of Dao or his physical power and spirit star power were now all at the level of Divine Magi. In addition to that, he had learned many powerful magics from Yu Yu, and the moves of Sky-Opening, Earth-Splitting, Everything Grow and Everything Perish from the mysterious man. Then there was also the Mantra Dan with Nine Secret Words that he brought from his previous life...

With all of the above together, Ji Hao was hundred percent confident that he wouldn't lose to any peak-level human Divine Magus. However, these beautiful girls came from an unknown place, and had actually thrown Ji Hao into such a bad situation without giving him a chance to fight back.

"No, something's wrong. The pipa?" Ji Hao popped up his eyes, as his eyeballs shone with a bright golden light. The eye of Dao of sun opened between his eyebrows and released a dazzling golden light beam towards those girls.

'Are you joking? Pipa? Musical instruments like that...Nowadays, many remote clans are still using stone tools, doing the slash-and-burn cultivation. Even for the top-grade human clans, wind musical instruments like flute had just been invented, and those newly invented wind instruments were things only top-grade rich people like Gong Gong Wuyou could have.

Currently, the most commonly used musical instrument of the humankind was the drum! In both battles and ceremonies!

Pipa? Ji Hao had never seen pipa in Pu Ban City, because at present, human beings didn’t have such a musical instrument! Not only the humankind, but even the non-humankind also didn't have it!

Yu Clan people had always been pursuing a high quality of life. They had thousands of kinds of musical instruments, with different sizes and functions. Many of those musical instruments were especially ingenious and exquisite. Nevertheless, the non-humankind didn’t have pipa as a musical instrument!

"What are you?!" Ji Hao growled in rage. A dim stream of light flashed across the surface of his body, as the Pan Xi divine mirror was fully activated to protect him.

A beautiful girl abruptly came to Ji Hao. The girl enchantingly smiled to him, and he could even sense the warmth that came from that pair of eyes of hers. She let out a breath with a faint aroma towards Ji Hao, then began talking with a sweet and soft voice.

"What a handsome man. Do you think I’m pretty? Do you want me to play a melody for you? The melody is called Flying Dancing."

"Flying?" Ji Hao shouted harshly, "I’ll beat your soul out of your body, and let it fly into the sky while your body falls to the ground!"

Casting a resonant roar, Ji Hao straightened his right arm and hacked directly towards the girl along with a stream of essence sun fire, as if his arm was a sharp blade. He launched the move of Sky-Opening and hacked straight towards the chest of the girl, but didn’t have the time to make the rest three moves.

The girl gave a smile. She drifted backward along with Ji Hao’s moves, as if she was completely weightless. Her dress fluttered beautifully in the air and exposed her pair of jade-like lower legs. Her toenails were painted red with flower juice. Her feet slightly swayed, then countless transparent, glistening datura blooms drifted out.

The golden blooms released a dense aroma while countless blooms emerged before Ji Hao's feet, seeming like a blanket of flowers.

The girl held the pipa behind her body while her fingers gently pulled the strings, generating a quick series of melody, striking at Ji Hao like a storm. While playing the pipa behind her body, the girl slightly twisting her slim waist. Her dress raised into the sky and sent up puffs of sparkling golden powder.

Surrounded by the golden powder and blooms, the girl danced airily. Her moves were gentle and small, as she had only been slightly turning her head and shaking her shoulders, twisting her waist or raising her feet. Yet, a sense of beauty was naturally released from her body, and that stunning beauty could even imprint the souls of any ordinary human being.

Just like the aroma of a tasty bottle of wine that had been stored for countless years, the beauty of the girl spread in the air, slowly yet strongly.

Ji Hao shouted out in a deep voice while quickly waving his arms, casting Yu Yu's evil-suppressing calming magic on himself. Streams of Yu Yu's divine light transformed into light screens and covered his body. The surface of the divine light screen rippled, as the sparkling golden powder released from the girl spread on the light screen, devouring it.

Puff, puff, puff, a slight noise could be heard without an end.

After every puff, a calming magic spell of Ji Hao would be broken. At first, a puffing noise would only be caused after the time for each breath, but soon, the puffing noise could be heard without an end.

Ji Hao's fingers were even cramped. In every span of a breath, he cast around three-thousand calming spells on himself. Such a high degree of defense could even allow Ji Hao to unhurriedly face a full-power wave of attack launched by a peak-level Divine Magus.

But following that quick series of puffing noise, the golden light covered on Ji Hao’s body was all broken. Next, the dim light stream released by the Pan Xi divine mirror quaked intensively, and then, along with a buzzing noise, a terrifying attack was sent out from Ji Hao’s body.

Bang! A part of a wall of the hall beside Ji Hao was shattered all of a sudden. An enormous, hand-shaped hole appeared on the three-meter-thick wall, which was cast from divine gold. The shape of the hole was as same as the shape of the beautiful girl’s hands.

"Eh? A supreme treasure?" The girl paused for a second while she smiled so sweetly, with her sparkling eyes fixed on the dim light on Ji Hao’s body.

"Break!" Ji Hao gave a deep shout, waving his hands and casting a thunder magic with all of his power. Forty-eight dazzling thunderbolts descended from the sky, fiercely and directly striking to the girl’s face like sharp swords.

"Pretty boy, you’re so cruel. Why don’t you just fly with me, be happy with me?"

The girl shook her body and easily dodged all thunderbolts released by Ji Hao, then pounced. Gently and airily, she pounced to before Ji Hao’s face. A strong aroma came right onto Ji Hao’s face, making Ji Hao feel drunk in both his body and soul.

Ji Hao was paralyzed once again, and couldn’t put forth any strength.

The seed of Dao of sun and Pan Xi sun automatically activated again. Dazzling golden light surged through his body, burning all the aroma that Ji Hao inhaled.

"Ji Hao! Be careful! These things..." shouted Po from the side, "They’re not things!"

Po had five streams of clear mist rising from his head. The three

lotuses were spinning on the mist, with a hazy silhouette sitting with crossed legs on each lotus. Countless water-drop-like drops of golden light were pouring down from his head, forming a splendid light screen that shielded Gui Ling and himself inside.

Ji Hao clearly saw that within the mist cloud above Po's head was a faintly visible floating tower.

Every single door and window of that tower had been releasing a seven-colored, beautiful light, pushing the surrounding air to surge like water, striking towards those beautiful girls along with colorful light streams.

Chapter 861: Sky Devil?

The tower should be one of the most powerful treasures possessed by Po. Ji Hao couldn't see the shape of the tower clearly, but merely the power vibration released from it made Ji Hao tighten his entire body, as his seed of Dao instinctively alarmed him of the danger. It was just like a newborn chicken abruptly seeing the shadow of an eagle flashing across the ground, which would instinctively sense the danger. This was the feeling given to Ji Had by the tower.

Ji Hao widely opened his eyes and clearly saw countless splendid, colorful streams of light gathered into rapid torrents, roaring down along with the power that was great enough to even shake the whole world. The ten beautiful girls were swallowed by the colorful torrents, without being able to even try to dodge.

The splendid colorful light froze suddenly, and every stream of light transformed into an evil-suppressing spell symbol. Countless spell symbols shone brightly in the air. The shine of those spell symbols was clear as water, looking like colorful crystals, that sealed those beautiful girls like coffins.

The girl in front of Ji Hao was also sealed by a colorful crystal block that was transformed from a light stream. The crystal block was enormous, like a hill, while the girl's stunned face was clearly visible in it, like a bug in amber. The crystal shone brighter and brother while countless tiny spell symbols sparkled in it. Colorful beams of light dazzled across the air along with a dreadful power, striking onto the bodies of these beautiful girls from all directions.

Abruptly, warm and clear tears flowed out of the eye corners of the girl in front of Ji Hao, as she pitifully looked at Ji Hao and talked to him with a weak, soft and sweet voice, "What a merciless man! Can you please save me?"

This enchanting voice drilled into Ji Hao's head. Ji Hao was

protected by the Pan Xi divine mirror, but the moment he heard the girl's voice, he was already affected.

A strong stream of warmth gushed directly towards Ji Hao's lower belly. Ji Hao's spirit blood gathered in the spot three inches lower than his lower abdomen, but he couldn't help it. His skin turned extremely sensitive, such that a gentle breeze and the falling dust could cause him a great pain, as bad as being hacked with a blade or ax.

"You!" Ji Hao stared at that girl in shock. The girl was sealed in the crystal, yet she wasn't disabled from moving at all. Beautifully and elegantly, she twisted her waist slightly, raised her foot and exposed half a lower leg, that was snow-white, smooth as jade...

Ji Hao gave a muffled moan, then, he shamefully realized that he had just ejaculated. Meanwhile, his life-force uncontrollably surged out of his body like a flood. Spirit blood rapidly flew in his blood vein while the warmth in his lower belly grew stronger and stronger, but his body turned softer and softer.

Ji Hao was scared to death. His life-force was being lost at such a crazy rate, and if he wasn't a Divine Magus but an ordinary Qi cultivator, if he didn't have that strong body and thriving spirit blood, he would have been drained by that girl within the span of a few breaths!

"Seal!" Ji Hao gnashed his teeth and growled.

Tens of acupoints around his lower belly were tightened, momentarily sealing his life-force and stopping it from continuously leaking out. Ji Hao felt that his body was aching and limp. With a blushed face, Ji Hao looked at the girl in the crystal while hurriedly setting a fire and burned out the thing that came out of his body.

Ji Hao worryingly glanced at Po and Gui Ling, as he truly didn't want them to see what happened to him just now.

Zhu Rong took a suspecting glance at Ji Hao, but right after that, he didn’t have the time to worry about him. Zhu Rong threw his wine calabash away, then transformed his body into a sphere of fire, swooshing all over the sky. Wherever he reached, sparkling pipa strings would zip out of the air, piercing towards him like sharp needles, along with thin and faint space ripples.

Zhu Rong’s body had transformed into intangible fire, without any bone or flesh. Therefore, no matter how hard the enemies attacked, the fire would sway at most, but Zhu Rong would never be harmed like this.

After transformed into fire, Zhu Rong became the first one who had taken an invincible position in this fight. He hovered around the hall, and within the blink of an eye, hundreds of thousands of different types of fire, including divine flames, spirit flames and all kinds of evil and negative fires descended like a storm.

Except for the essence sun fire and the other few top-grade fires, Zhu Rong controlled the original power of all kinds of fires in the world. He turned all those fires into a sky-devouring flame sea and roared down from the air, bumping against those sparkling pipa strings and generating muffled, thunderous booms.

The fires surged and released a great heat. Pipa strings screamed across the air but failed to cause any harm.

Ji Hao looked at Zhu Rong, but the girl sealed in the crystal in front of her called him once again with that sweet soft voice, "Young man, do you think I’m pretty? You’re so cruel, why don’t you let me out?"

The girl moved her arms and started waves of ripples in the crystal. The sealing crystal, which was created by Po with all her power seemed to not exist at all, as it couldn’t cause any effect on the girl’s moves. Ji Hao watched the girl slowly reach her snow-white arm out of the crystal.

"This isn’t right!" growled Po aside, "Even if you’re all as

powerful as my Shifu…Even my Shifu can’t break this seal of mine so easily…You…What are you?!"

Slim silhouettes flashed across the air while the ten girls sealed in the crystal disappeared simultaneously.

Bang! A girl suddenly appeared behind Po, with her pipa dazzling with a seven-colored light. The girl had the pipa raised high, then smashed heavily down onto Po’s back.

Po didn’t dodge, neither did he have to time to dodge. He cast a magic and made himself as sturdy as a mountain, then took the strike with his back. He swayed slightly while a dark-yellow light flashed behind him, and next, he shouted in surprise, "Eh? So weird, so weird. You’re not so powerful, but how can you be so hard to deal with?"

Before his voice faded, the other girls pulled the strings of their pipa together. A quick series of music came like a thunderstorm that didn’t give Po and Gui Ling anytime to react. They quivered and vomited blood once again.

The pipa music vibrated Po and Gui Ling’s primordial spirits. Even though their primordial spirits were all under the protection of supreme treasures, the pipa music seemed to directly reach the cores of their souls. The music was invisible, but could drill into every corner of their souls. They protected their primordial spirits with powerful treasures, tried to suppress the evils with their powers, but still they were both injured by the music in a moment.

Ji Hao popped out his eyes. Looking at the girl in front of him, who was slowly coming out of the crystal bit by bit, a thought popped out in his head all of a sudden.

In his previous life, and from a Daoist book, he had read a description about the ‘outer space Sky Devil’, given by some powerful beings.

‘From unknown places, going to unknown destinations, they

abruptly come and go, with a faint, magical aroma, with heavenly girls scattering blossoms; flying, dancing, with hundreds of dragons hovering in the sky, with all kinds of supernatural phenomenon that can't be named one by one. The power of sky devils aims at the primordial spirit. It comes along the wind, and fades along the wind as well. Wherever the wind blows across, a dark fire will burn the primordial spirit, and an evil sound will affect the heart. Evil shadows will flash and evil light will break the Dao. All these are fake."

'Outer space sky devil? These were outer space sky devils! It can't be wrong!' thought Ji Hao.

Recalling the book he read in his previous life, Ji Hao gave a resonant shout. Then, a sun rose from his head into the sky. The Pan Jia sun floated in the hall, shining with a golden, bright light.

Chapter 862: The True Face of Sky Devil

Sky devils were terrifying, because they were invisible and traceless.

One didn't know where they came from, or where they would go. They came like a gust of wind, and would also leave like a gust of wind. They were raised in one's heart and came through the mind. They were not defendable, as everyone had weakness in the heart, through which, sky devils could drill in immediately, strike the primordial spirit and harm the foundation of the cultivation of Dao.

Walls could not stop sky devils; cities with strong defenses were just the same as flat areas in the eyes of sky devils. Countless layers of magic formations could deliver no effect to sky devils, and numerous seals were nothing to sky devils.

The scariest thing about sky evils was that they came from one's heart and through the mind. Therefore, even if one protected yourself with countless walls, magic formations, and seals, with a slight carelessness, with a single thought, sky devils could come straight into one's body, and the primordial spirit would be harmed already.

In front of sky devils, all walls, magic formations, and seals were ineffective. Many times, those were completely useless. Except for some extremely rare and powerful treasures that could suppress sky devils especially, the other treasures or weapons could barely do anything to sky devils, even if those treasures could turn the ocean inside down, move stars in the sky, or even destroy the world and replace it with Chaos.

The information regarding sky devil flashed through Ji Hao's mind. Over quite a long period, these traceless sky devils were the most frightful things to Qi cultivators. Countless powerful cultivators were destroyed and killed by sky devils. Therefore,

many special records regarding how to deal with sky devils existed in Daoist books, as well as some creation methods of weapons and tools that could effectively suppress sky devils. However, in Ji Hao's previous life, magic barely existed in the world, and Ji Hao couldn't even find the materials to make those tools and weapons. For this reason, he had only memorized those creation methods but never actually made one of those weapons and tools.

At the moment, he saw Po and Gui Ling unable to do anything to the sky devil despite their powerfulness, such that Po could only take the attacks launched by the sky devil with his own body. Such a passive way of fighting...Ji Hao couldn't help but wonder if this was the first time for Po and Gui Ling to encounter a sky devil.

The Pan Jia sun floated above Ji Hao's head. Looking from a distance, the sun seemed to be a three meters in radius fire sphere that wasn't too large in shape. However, the closer one got, the huger the fire sphere would seem to be.

The air around Ji Hao's body had magically layered up. Consequently, the area ten meters in radius around him was now actually hundreds of thousands of miles in radius. The power of the Pan Jia sun had been compressed to an extreme level as it floated above Ji Hao, shining with a dazzling golden light. The golden light suffused the entire hall, filling every single corner just like water.

Dazzling light shone on the entire hall, after which came the water-clear essence sun fire, burning intensively. It filled every inch of the space of the hall without leaving any blank.

The power of the sun was purely positive and could naturally destroy all evils, along with largely suppressing sky devils. Ji Hao filled the entire hall up with the essence sun fire, right after which, a shrill series of howls could be heard, as those beautiful girls all froze in the air and couldn't move anymore. Next, their skins began breaking and falling off, while their blood and flesh began corroding, turning into ash. Soon, the ten girls turned into ten pale

skeletons, floating in the air, each holding a splendidly glowing pipa while laughing with creepy voices.

Ji Hao fixed his eyes on these skeletons, and found out that the standing positions of these skeletons were around ten meters away from the standing positions of those beautiful girls just now!

"Good magic," Growled Po angrily, "You have actually tricked my eyes, and even misled my spirit power. I didn't even figure out your true locations, no wonder this tower of mine couldn't seal you."

Ji Hao locked his fingers together and gave a deep shout.

His shout burst beside Po and Gui Ling's ears like thunder, making those two angry and anxious cultivators quiver instantly. Po and Gui Ling felt like someone had just poured a bucket of iced water onto their heads, that allowed their bodies to cool and their minds to calm.

Gui Ling's eyes shone with a dark light as she looked around, laughed and said, "Brother, you figured it wrong again. These skeletons are not their true bodies either. Everything is unreal. We're all fooled by our own eyes."

Po paused, and his facial muscles twitched intensively while his face blushed. He gritted his teeth an said, "I'll be too ashamed to face Shifu now, I'll truly be too ashamed to face Shifu now. What is this? How can it be powerful enough to trick our eyes?"

The ten skeletons laughed loudly. Blue fires rose from their eye sockets while blood-red tears flowed out, dripping on the ground through their sharp chins. They raised their pipa together and wielded. Immediately, their pipa transformed into bone whips which were thickly covered in thorns. Loud clapping noises were generated as those skeletons gently wielded these bone whips. Meanwhile, large streams of green flames roared out from those bone whips.

Within the blink of an eye, those beautiful girls became scary skeletons. They flew in the air, surrounded by the essence sun fire while laughing loudly with sharp, creepy voices.

Ji Hao stopped looking at these skeletons. Instead, he turned around and looked at a corner of the hall.

"Can you please show your real face?"

The essence sun fire suffused the entire hall, and any strange power would cause an intense reaction of the essence sun fire. Through it, Ji Hao sensed something different from that corner.

A clear voice could then be heard. The voice sounded like the voice of a young girl, yet also like a young man. But if one listened more carefully, one would be able to discover the calmness of middle-aged people, and the oldness of old people, from the voice.

This voice made Ji Hao's heart itchy, because he discovered too many things from it. Hearing this voice was just like hearing the first cry of an infant, but from this first cry, one could also hear the whole life of this infant. One could hear the infant die in old age a hundred years later, and also hear the unsettling screams of the ghost of the infant coming out of the grave.

Ji Hao's face trembled. This thing's voice could even be counted as the supreme sound of evil, that the primordial spirit of any relatively weaker Qi cultivator would be harmed by this voice.

"Truly impressive, for breaking my magic in this way."

A sphere of light, that seemed to contain all colors in the world, puffed out from the corner. A slim silhouette gradually emerged from the light. This 'man' was strong as a man, yet gentle and beautiful as a woman. His skin was as tender as the skin of a baby, yet his eyes showed the wiseness and calmness of an elderly man.

His face was covered in a faint layer of colorful light, under which, his face changed constantly. Countless different faces showed alternatively under the light, gradually merging into a

unique, quite charming, yet indescribable face.

Incalculable oddly-shaped flowers that were ever discovered in Pan Gu world emerged from the light, airily rotating around him and making him as beautiful as a dream.

Meanwhile, a faint and magical aroma spread out, filling up the entire hall.

"This is a wonderful, wonderful world." That ‘man’ looked at Ji Hao and said blandly, "So many living creatures, so many fresh delicious preys. My people just can’t wait to come."

Narrowing his eyes, this ‘man’ continued slowly, "We’ve been searching in the boundless chaos for countless years, and finally found such a thriving world again. This is our luck...But it’s your misfortune."

Chapter 863: The Rising Evil Flame

"Prey?"

Po's face was badly darkened. But before he said anything, Gui Ling gave a resonant roar from the side.

She was a prehistorical turtle. Back in the prehistorical era, she was one of the most powerful living creatures in Pan Gu world. According to the legends, she even fought against the oldest dragon and the oldest phoenix. She was one of the top-grade predators, staying on top of the food chain of Pan Gu world ever since the start of time. Except for a few especially powerful beings, living creatures in the whole world were her prey.

But, did this strange being from an unknown place say that all living beings in Pan Gu world were his prey? By saying this, he despised Gui Ling, who was a powerful living being; he offended and provoked her greatly. Therefore, Gui Ling took the first move, raised the black jade ruyi held in her left hand and smashed it straight down towards the man's head, leaving a dark stream of light in the air. Meanwhile, she swung her left arm and threw three dark-colored water thunder bombs out silently.

"Powerful creature, your blood and soul has aroused me."

The man smiled faintly and said with that clear and beautiful voice of his; the voice was manly, girly, young and also old.

Facing Gui Ling's attack, he flicked his left little finger and released a dark stream of light as well. Following the moves of his finger, that tens of meters long, thumb-thick black light stream rolled up, fiercely clashing against Gui Ling's jade ruyi.

A thunderous boom was generated. The man stayed perfectly unmoved while Gui Ling trembled and took three steps backward in a row, as if she was struck by a thunderbolt. The three water thunder bombs silently flew to the man's face. He smiled, slightly

crooked his left finger and flicked, sending the three bombs far away, before the bombs exploded.

Buzz! Buzz! Buzz! Following three muffled noises, the water thunder bombs blasted on the wall of the hall quietly, without emitting any light. Nevertheless, three three-hundred-meter radius holes were opened up on the purely golden wall of this divine hall.

Looking out of the three holes, Ji Hao couldn't help but have his heart beat faster.

No blue sky and clouds could be seen on the outside. Instead, Ji Hao saw a splendid light hovering in streams. Floating in the light, were countless different sized, golden and transparent datura blooms, and standing in the middle of each bloom was a beautiful girl.

Those girls were holding all kinds of musical instruments, playing, dancing and singing in those flowers. Their slim and curvy bodies were glowing with a bright, warm light, while releasing waves of magical, enchanting power, roaring towards Ji Hao. By simply taking a quick glance at the outside, Ji Hao felt that his primordial spirit begin shaking. Ji Hao was frightened. He hurriedly activated his seed of Dao, released a dazzling golden light to protect himself.

The entire hall was surrounded by that sky-swallowing evil power, as if the hall was isolated from Pan Gu world, and everyone in the hall was now under the control of this man.

Po and Gui Ling also saw the abnormal scene outside the hall. Same as Ji Hao, their looks turned especially serious as well. Without knowing how, they were trapped in this strange magic, which proved that this 'man' was truly immeasurably powerful.

Zhu Rong showed his human body again. Beside him, a meters thick flame screen rose silently. This colorful flame screen seemed to be simple, but in fact, it was formed from tens of thousands of

different types of rare flames in Pan Gu world; it was variable and powerful.

Sparkling pipa strings zipped out of the air one after another, fiercely striking on the fame screen and generating a loud sizzling noise. The strings were soon burned out by the flame screen. However, more and more strings zipped out of the sky, screaming and coiling around the flame screen, violently attacking without a break. Gradually, Zhu Rong's face was darkened as well.

Ji Hao couldn't see Zhu Rong's body anymore, because around his body were countless extremely thin, sparkling strings interweaving, constantly causing a shrill swishing noise. But with Zhu Rong's power, Ji Hao didn't need to worry about him.

Calming himself down, Ji Hao then looked at that man, cupped his hands towards him and said, "Ah, I didn't know your name yet. Can you tell me your name?"

That 'man' paused slightly. The dark light stream released from his little finger was hacking towards Gui Ling. Hearing Ji Hao, he frowned, then shook his head and responded, "Name? This...is too useless to my kind. We don't need a name to differentiate each other.

With a humble yet proud smile, he raised his head, sighed and said, "You people are shallow, you don't understand our existence. We are formless, intangible, we are even traceless. Time and space mean nothing to us, we're just a 'concept'."

'They're just a concept...' Ji Hao silently pondered over the man's words, trying to understand him.

They were intangible and formless. Therefore, ordinary attacks were not effective on them, no matter hacking with blades of attacking with magics.

Time and space meant nothing to them. Therefore, it was almost impossible to attack their true bodies, no matter through what

method.

They were just a ‘concept’, aiming at the souls and primordial spirits of people. Therefore, if one wanted to attack them and kill them, one would have to start from their ‘mind and thought’. Invisibly and tracelessly, they could harm the souls and primordial spirits of Qi cultivators. Therefore, one could also launch counter-attacks invisibly and tracelessly. This was also the best way to deal with sky devils, mentioned in the Daoist book Ji Hao read in his previous life. Or in other words, this was a way learned from sky devils by powerful human beings.

Ji Hao took a long gasp, boosted up his Qi and spirit blood. Gradually, the power vibration released from his body became strong and regular, while the power of his spirit blood was perfectly gathered in his body, without leaking out by even a little bit. Ji Hao fixed his eyes on that ‘man’ and said blandly, "Ah, no name? Indeed, names are not important, but are you sure that you can deal with so many of us all at once?"

The Pan Jia sun floating above Ji Hao’s head suddenly dimmed down, as all sunlight had compressed into a thumb-thick beam, surging into the nine suns spear pulled out by Ji Hao.

Attaining the nearly inexhaustible sunlight from the Pan Jia sun, the nine suns spear shone dazzlingly while countless spell symbols emerged from its body. Those almost tangible, purely golden spell symbols hovered crazily fast around the spear.

With a slight fear, that ‘man’ looked at the spear. As a powerful weapon that had absorbed the power of the sun, the spear could largely suppress his power.

However, Po made his move before Ji Hao.

"Brother, chill... Let me try his power." Po sounded angry as well. This ‘man’ had been seeing him as prey, but who was he? He was Priest Po! He had been living freely in this world for countless years ever since this world was created. Even the most powerful

beings in this world would not talk to him like that!

This was the very first time for Ji Hao to see Po release all of his power.

Po straightened his ten fingers, and from the tip of each finger, a dreadfully sharp sword light dazzled out. Ten sword lights sliced the air open, flashing towards that ‘man’s head, seeming to cut the whole world into bits.

Ji Hao realized that Po was truly worthy of being the first disciple of Yu Yu, that the sword light released by him actually sensed rather similar to Yu Yu’s sword formation. By merely watching from a distance, Ji Hao felt that his primordial spirit was going to be swallowed and ground by the sword light, which was truly scary.

That ‘man’ chuckled, then the black light stream released from his left hand slightly shrunk, clashing against Po’s ten sword lights.

Following a thunderous gang, Po quivered intensively, then staggered backward.

That ‘man’ laughed out loud while swiftly flicking his ten fingers, sending waves of sword lights out, striking towards Po like rain.

Chapter 864: Unassailable

Ji Hao was frightened and Po was shocked, while Gui Ling screamed out from aside.

While chuckling, that ‘man’ released waterfall-like waves of sword light with a splendid glow, dazzling down towards Po’s head.

The tower floating above Po’s head released a dragon-like, tremendous stream of power, vigorously roaring around, bumping against the sword light waves. A buzzing noise could be heard without an end while large streams of Yu Yu’s divine light were releasing from those colorful crystal blocks gathered above Po’s head, transforming into magnificently glowing mountains and islands, protecting Po.

The sword light released from the ‘man’s fingers curved in the air and struck those colorful crystal blocks. Beams of light splashed out like a pouring rain while those glowing images of mountains and islands upon Po’s head shattered one after another, then reemerged constantly.

Within a single second, tens of thousands of splendidly glowing mountains and islands shattered altogether. Before Po could react, tens of thousands of beams of sword light fiercely struck on Po’s body.

The simple long robe worn by Po was torn apart, transforming into countless gray-yellow cloth butterflies, flying all over the sky. Po took in a long gasp, pointing his finger forwards. Those cloth butterflies suddenly blasted and turned into extremely thin and bright beams of light, dazzling towards his body. Before the next wave of sword light struck on his body, those countless light beams had already woven into a stunning, luxurious long robe that was thickly covered in the patterns of stars, mountains, and rivers. Stars glowed and moved on the robe, seeming to be real, with a Tai

Ji diagram embroidered on the chest, and Ba Gua diagram on the back.

Po snorted coldly and seriously while his long hair fluttered without being blowing by any wind. The long hair quickly coiled itself up into a bun, then a golden-purple, lotus-shaped crown emerged from the air, steadily buckling the bun. Next, a purple mist rose from the crown straight into the air and crushed the thousands of beams of sword light released from that ‘man’ within the blink of an eye.

Followed by a loud buzz, a nine-story, six-angled tower emerged from the mist. Every angle of the tower had golden lights or bronze bells hung on it. Dense purple mist was puffing out from those golden lights ceaselessly, while those bronze bells were letting out resonant and bright rings.

Po was now holding an ancient styled bell on his left hand, that was wrapped in a strong stream of Chaos power and embossed with a stellar map, and a ruyi in his right hand. The ruyi in his right hand glowed as bright as the sun, while releasing a destructive Chaos power. Added with the tower floating above his head, three supreme treasures glowed resplendently and circled Po up.

Ji Hao swallowed his saliva with difficulty while looking at the three supreme treasures of Po in a daze.

The Pan Xi divine mirror quaked intensively inside Ji Hao’s body. Without a doubt, these three treasures of Po were all at the same level as the mirror; all these three treasures were pre-world supreme treasures, each with forty-nine natural inhibitions.

Ji Hao was an incredibly lucky boy. With his luck and the help and guidance provided by the mysterious man, he attained the Pan Xi divine mirror, which was a top-grade supreme treasure. Po seemed to be so humble at ordinary times, that he never mentioned any supreme treasure he had. But at the moment, he

showed three supreme treasures all at once, seeming to shake the whole world.

"Amazing, my big brother!" Ji Hao couldn't help but shout out sincerely. Po was truly a powerful being who lived since the prehistorical era. Back when this world was just created, Po had found his own Dao. Not to mention his power of Dao, not a single ordinary cultivator could ever bear comparison with him, only because of all these supreme treasures he possessed.

Po gave a faint smile, while a dense and strong starlight roared out of the bell in his left hand, striking towards that 'man'. At the same time, countless beams of Chaos sword light randomly dazzled out of the ruyi in his right hand, flashing towards that 'man' as well. Meanwhile, the tower above his head was spinning, destroying the surrounding area. Zhu Rong's divine hall was crushed into bits, and the entire mountaintop of Zhu Rong Mountain was almost stirred into a pot of paste. It seemed that Po was going to relay the Chaos for real.

"Be careful, Priest Po!" Zhu Rong worryingly growled aside, "Don't break my dojo!"

Po paused slightly, then slowed down a little bit. That 'man' seized this opportunity, flashed across the air and transformed into an indescribable being that was like a shred of shadow, a gust of wind, but also like a thought, or a faint trace left in the universe. Strangely, swiftly and magically, that 'man' reached to Po.

"Die!" Following a deep shout gave by that 'man', his both hands reached out at lightning speed, hacking down towards Po's head and chest along with ten beams of sword light.

Po was protected by the three amazing supreme treasures, yet, that 'man' easily broke the protection of the treasures and reached to Po. Ji Hao, Gui Ling, even Po himself were all shocked, while the 'man's pair of hands had already hacked on Po's body for hundreds of times like a spinning wind wheel.

The purple golden lotus crown sparkled on Po's head while the luxurious robe worn by him released splendid streams of glowing mist. Additionally, lotuses drifted out from Po's mouth, each lotus wrapped in water-clear Yu Yu's divine light.

The sword light released by that 'man' broke the purple mist that came from the crown, dispelled the glowing mist rose from the robe, and even lotuses drifted out of Po's mouth were cut into pieces. Followed a thunderous series of noise, Po was hacked on the body for hundreds of times, and was sent out flying.

"Big brother!" Ji Hao moved, dashing towards Po while leaving a golden beam of light in the air.

That 'man' moved as swiftly, pouncing on Ji Hao along with countless beautiful curvy silhouettes. However, Ji Hao wielded his arm and let the nine suns spear release a sky-shattering sizzling noise. It forcibly tore the space apart and sent out a golden arc light, towards the 'man's head.

This strike was generated by all of the power of the spear, added with the immense essence sun fire came from the Pan Jia sun. Additionally, Ji Hao launched the move of Sky-Opening along with this strike. The golden arc light vibrated intensively, swaying from left to right. The moving track of this arc light seemed to be random, but it actually flowed some natural law of Pan Gu world, completely disabling this 'man' from dodging.

This strike launched by Ji Hao was almost the Dao itself. Through the strike, he clearly told the 'man' that as long as he was still in Pan Gu world, he would certainly be hit!

This was the most perfect attack Ji Hao had launched ever since he learned the move of Sky-Opening from the mysterious man; this strike was flawless, and was even beautiful.

That 'man' paused briefly, then slightly sighed and said, "Such a beautiful move. You're able to launch such a perfect attack, which means the scene will be stunning when I chop off your head!"

Following the slight sigh, Ji Hao saw and with a soul-deep shock and fear that his arc light froze in the air. Then, as a golden glow flashed across the air, that arc light turned around, striking towards himself in an unstoppable way.

Ji Hao was deeply confused. What happened? Why would a full-power attack launched by him strike back at himself?

"Ji Hao! Move!" Gui Ling roared out while she clapped her hands and sent out a thick, turtle-shell-shaped shield, shielding Ji Hao behind.

Clang! A deep mark appeared on the shield. A strong force pushed the shield quickly backward, thudding loudly against Ji Hao's chest. The Pan Xi divine mirror activated automatically, sending the shield immediately away.

A muffled moan was squeezed out from the throat of Po. Po was sent flying out, but abruptly, a large and thick shield appeared before his head, that made his head bang heavily against it, leaving a human-head-sized hole on the shield.

Po and Gui Ling vomited blood simultaneously. Both of them looked at that 'man' without being able to say anything.

In both terms of attacking and defending, this 'man' was so powerful and fierce; he was almost unassailable.

Chapter 865: The Sword Formation Kills the Devil

Time flew swiftly.

The divine hall was already destroyed by the three supreme treasures of Po. By now, the sky was covered by a bright, beautiful glow, while countless datura blooms flew all over the sky. Each bloom had a breathtakingly beautiful girl standing on it, singing and dancing while releasing a strong evil power, to shake the spirits of Dao.

Ji Hao kneeled on the ground while gasping quickly. He sensed an overwhelming pain from the area between his chest and stomach. He was protected by the Pan Xi divine mirror and the Gold Crow cloak, but still was injured by that terrifying attack launched by himself. Some thin rips had even appeared on the edges of the Gold Crow cloak, which was crafted by Yu Yu himself.

A destructive power broke Ji Hao’s muscles and crushed his bones through the cloak and the mirror, injuring his internal organs. At the moment, every corner of Ji Hao’s body was aching so much, and his head was heavy. The seed of Dao of sun was dim, like a candlelight in the storm, seeming about to die anytime.

Pain, Ji Hao had never suffered such a great pain.

He gasped deeply while the thriving life-force was boosted up in his body like a roaring ocean. The physical wounds were healed speedily, as a golden light dazzled out of the Pan Jia sun, transforming into a stream of power, surging around Ji Hao’s body. Soon, the dim seed of Dao of sun began glowing brightly again.

"You evil thing, die!" Ji Hao shouted ragingly out while he raised the nine suns spear again and hacked down, generating a dazzling beam of light.

His eyes were out of focus while his mind was unclear. He could see nothing but those beautiful, attractive silhouettes. He could hear nothing but those silver songs and laughs of those evil girls. The nine suns spear was lunged over and over again, as Ji Hao felt that he was like an orange which had its last bit of juice being squeezed out.

Another destructive power came and landed on Ji Hao's chest. The Pan Xi divine mirror send away a big half of that power, yet the remained small half struck right on Ji Hao's body.

The Gold Crow Cloak gave a shrill scream. Finally, after a series of heavy strikes, this powerful cloak that Yu Yu made for Ji Hao, couldn't take the harm anymore, and was shattered. Countless golden light beams burst from Ji Hao's body. Staring at he collapsing Gold Crow cloak, Ji Hao's heart primed, then the sadness occupied his heart.

The last piece of the cloak transformed into a puff of golden light spots in Ji Hao's hand, dissipating along the wind. All of a sudden, a fierce sword intent, which had been hiding deep inside the Gold Crow cloak, reached up into the sky. Ji Hao's vision was blurred. He seemed to see an enormous mountain in front of him. The mountain was generated from the sword intent, and that indescribably terrifying sword intent had spread out. Wherever it reached, everything was destroyed.

A raging growl burst in Ji Hao's spiritual space.

"Wake up! You bunch of silly little things!"

The mysterious man stood on the gray round platform, his whole body glowing with a blue light. From his pair of eyes, the blue light dazzled to tens of miles far like two bolts of lightning. He stood in Ji Hao's spiritual space and cast a resonant growl. That strong and powerful voice of his even quaked Ji Hao's spiritual space and almost killed the light of the seed of Dao of sun.

Under the effect of the mysterious man's growl and that sword

intent from the cloak, Ji Hao suddenly woke up. He shook his head and finally saw the surrounding area clearly.

Po and Gui Ling were both affected quite strongly by the evil power, yet, they were in much better state than Ji Hao. Especially Po, after all, he was under the protection of three supreme treasures. At the moment, the glows of the three supreme treasures of Po were dim, yet Po still seemed to be calm and clean, unlike Ji Hao, who now looked like a drowning mouse. Gui Ling had also activated her most powerful treasures. She had attained quite a few powerful treasures from Pan Jia world. By now, those treasures floated above her head, releasing thick and dense watery mist to shield her.

The sword intent from the cloak didn't just wake Ji Hao up. Po and Gui Ling had both boosted up their spirits, that the power vibrations released from them turned stronger and stronger, sharper and sharper.

"Sister Gui Ling, brother Ji Hao, just now, when this thing showed his real body, we had been enchanted already." growled Po harshly, "All moves we made were used by him to attack ourselves! If Shifu didn't hide that life-saving sword intent in our little brother's cloak, we might still be lost in the endless illusion, without being able to free ourselves!"

Ji Hao spat out some saliva mixed with blood, then gnashed his teeth and said, "No wonder I was injured so badly. Even under the protection of the mirror, I couldn't even stop vomiting blood! It turns out that he attacked me with the powers of my brother and sister!"

Po and Gui Ling glanced at Ji Hao quite embarrassedly, then each gave a bitter smile without saying anything.

Gui Ling raised her left hand and showed a clearly visible tidy cut on her black wide sleeve. Then with surprise, she laughed bitterly towards Ji Hao and said, "Ji Hao, this robe of mine is not a great

piece, but it’s indeed a natural-crafted treasure. You cut with a single move. The power of this robe, added with my own cultivation of Dao, failed to stop it from happening. How on earth did you gain that great power of yours?"

Ji Hao’s face was blushed slightly. Looking at the broken sleeve, Ji Hao remained silent.

That ‘man’ sat in an ocean of flower with crossed legs. With surprise, he looked at that amazingly powerful sword intent spreading from above Ji Hao’s head, sighed slightly and said, "Such an impressive sword intent. I’m afraid, its owner has already reached the extreme of the Dao of killing. With one more step forward, things will be truly uncontrollable."

Shaking his head, that ‘man’ sneered and continued, "If it weren't for this sword intent, you would have killed each other already. Shame, what a shame."

Ji Hao sneered as well and said, "Since we’re not dead, then you should be."

That ‘man’ slightly tilted his head, looked at Ji Hao, smiled in an enchanting way and asked in surprise, "Eh? What else can you do? Can you just show me? Just now, this little boy’s sword lights were quite amazing. This girl’s treasures are powerful too. Even you, you little thing, your moves were special. But, nothing more than that...What else do you have?"

Ji Hao snorted coldly. He stomped his foot against the ground and let the gray colored blueprint of the sword formation fly out from his body. The blueprint released the Chaos power and soon covered the entire area with a radius of a million miles. Four sword lights dazzled out of Ji Hao’s body and flew to the east, north, west and south. Next, sword lights descended like raindrops.

Those girls standing on blooms screamed out simultaneously. They were hit by the descending sword lights. Their beautiful bodies were punctured, set ablaze with raging fire, and within few

blinks of an eye, they were burned into ashes.

Four tremendously powerful sword light flew inwards while Po, Gui Ling, Ji Hao and Zhu Rong, who also managed to free himself from waves of attacks, each stood on a corner of the sword formation.

"One of my ancestors has left a record, according to which, Yu Yu's sword formation can destroy Gods and saints, and even destroy the world." laughed Zhu Rong quite excitedly. "Back then, that ancestor of mine once helped Yu Yu to hold a gate of this sword formation, today. I can finally feel the powerfulness of this sword formation myself. Wonderful, how wonderful!"

That 'man' sitting in the bloom ocean stared at Yu Yu's sword formation stunned. In the next moment, his body transformed back into that indescribable state as he attempted to flee. However, the four sword lights flew inward and met in the center of the sword formation, generating a shrill scream immediately. At the moment, the splendid, seemingly boundless glow covered on Zhu Rong Mountain collapsed, being crushed completely along with the screams of that 'man'.

Once the glow covered Zhu Rong Mountain was dispelled, a quick alarm could be heard from a distance away.

Zhu Rong's look changed instantly.

Chapter 866: Intruding the Divine Palace Again

Hearing the alarm, Zhu Rong’s look changed suddenly.

Stomping his foot in rage, Zhu Rong growled, "How dare they intrude once again?!"

Flashing across the air, Zhu Rong transformed into a streak of fiery light, dazzling into the sky. Half a sky was burned red by Zhu Rong while countless fist-sized flame balls descended from the sky, blasting before even reaching to the ground, causing a thunderous series of booms.

Ji Hao, Po, and Gui Ling paused briefly. Without having the time to see if that ‘man’ was killed by the sword formation for good or had fled with some powerful magic, they all leaped into the sky, transforming into light stream or treading upon watery clouds, and followed closely after Zhu Rong, flying south.

With the flowing sunlight flying magic, Ji Hao transformed into an extremely thin beam of sunlight, silently flying forward. He glanced at Po and Gui Ling from time to time. At the moment, Po and Gi Ling hadn’t been staying humble and laying low like always. Instead, they both showed their real powers.

From an unknown source, Po took out an entirely jade-white short sword and controlled the sword with his primordial spirit. He transformed into a fierce sword light which dazzled across the sky. His moving speed was incredibly high, that stunned Ji Hao completely. Within the twinkling of an eye, the sword light transformed from Po flew a long distance away, then as it flashed again through the air, Ji Hao couldn’t see Po anymore!

Gui Ling now had a ten-thousand-mile in radius hazy turtle silhouette floating above her head. That tremendous turtle slowly raised its foot and took a step forward, after which, Gui Ling’s

body slightly moved. But in the very next moment, tens of thousands of miles were already covered by her.

With the flowing sunlight flying magic, Ji Hao's flying speed had already reached an extreme level; he had already met the up limit based on his current power. But still, he couldn't catch with Po and Gui Ling.

Ji Hao was shocked. Normally, Po and Gui Ling were so generous, humble and free, seeming to be far away from all kinds of worldly affairs. They had always been unhurried and graceful, that Ji Hao had never seen them be angry.

This was the first time for Ji Hao to see Po and Gui Ling like this. Seeing them dashing away, Ji Hao couldn't help but feel sad for the poor ones who would fall into their hands later. Encountering an angry Po and Gui Ling, hehe, Ji Hao truly wanted to see how would those poor things end up.

Shaking his head, Ji Hao stopped casting the flying magic. Instead, he let the Heaven and Earth golden bridge swish out of his forehead. A dim golden light tore the space open, as Ji Hao's body flashed and disappeared suddenly. In the next moment, Ji Hao directly showed up above the lava ocean that Zhu Rong had brought him to once. The golden bridge was amazingly powerful, such that when Ji Hao arrived, none of the other three had arrived yet.

In his spiritual space, the mysterious man, who had sat back down and crossed his legs, abruptly shouted out, "Be careful, you have powerful enemies here! Little thing, this time, the enemies are truly powerful. You have to be extra careful!"

Before the mysterious man's voice faded, a strong gust of wind came from behind Ji Hao. He hurriedly leaped away, raised a stream of flame and rose into the sky, flying up hundreds of meters high. Turning around, Ji Hao widely opened his eyes and looked down. Ji Hao saw a muscular man, whose body was glowing with

splendid colorful light, that made him look like a piece of jewelry. The man was holding a large staff with a dragon-head on it, while viciously staring at Ji Hao.

It was this muscular man who attacked Ji Hao from his back just now. With an unknown method, this man managed to avoid Ji Hao's spirit power and approached him before he discovered him.

"Impressive! Take this!" Ji Hao opened his eye of Dao of sun and released lava-like dense streams of essence sun fire. The essence sun fire streams rolled and wove in the sky, while numerous thunder spell symbols with purely positive power silently emerged from the fire.

That three-meter tall muscular man moved, dashing straight towards Ji Hao while leaving shreds of afterimages in the air. It seemed like under his feet was a long stair, such that after he took each step towards Ji Hao, a beautifully glowing, golden, translucent datura bloom would emerge under his foot.

This guy was tall and sturdy, yet, his moves were gentle, nimble and airy, looking like a dance of a beautiful young girl. That fifteen-meter long dragon-head staff was wielded fiercely by him, but his moves looked just like a girl doing a ribbon dance in the wind.

"You b*stard thing!" Ji Hao began taking a guess.

The golden essence sun fire struck on this man's body while those thunder spell symbols blasted, releasing spheres of golden thunderbolts. Waves of purely positive sun power roared across the sky. Ji Hao's long hair fluttered in the wind while he floated in the air, staring deeply into the golden fire.

Before the explosive fire and thunderbolts faded, a muffled swishing noise could be heard from behind Ji Hao once again.

Ji Hao flashed away while the golden bridge zipped out from between his eyebrows, bringing him to over ten miles away in a

flash. He turned around and took a glance, and his fine hairs immediately stood straight up in shock. The spot he was standing in was now surrounded by seventeen muscular men with glowing bodies, who came from an unknown source.

The fire dimmed, and then the man, who was attacked violently by Ji Hao just now, flew into the sky as if nothing had happened to him at all. Eighteen muscular men lined up in two lines and formed a strange formation, all staring covetously at JI Hao.

"Are you...possessed?" Remaining silent for a while, Ji Hao asked straightforwardly.

The eighteen men' eyes sparkled dimly while a strange aroma spread out from their bodies. Around them, colorful glows flowed in streams, and soon, the entire area with a radius of ten miles was covered up by the colorful glow, making these muscular men look like Gods descended from heaven.

"Little one, the sword formation of yours is quite fierce." said one of the eighteen men slowly, with that extremely strange voice that Ji Hao couldn't possibly forget, that sounded like men, women, also like young people and old people. "You have killed me once, which is impressive, isn't it? But it's useless... Want to kill us for good? That's not so easy."

Ji Hao paused instantly, then he looked at that man and shouted, "Where the hell are you from?"

Although Ji Hao knew that these men could be outer space sky devils that he read from a Daoist book in his previous life, he still wanted a definite answer.

The man smiled faintly, preparing to answer Ji Hao's question. But a streak of fiery light dazzled over as Zhu Rong rushed up in a great rage.

Looked at the eighteen muscular men standing while facing Ji Hao, Zhu Rong nodded and pointed out his finger. A tremendous

wave of lava immediately rose from the lava ocean. The lava was split into two, showing a tens of thousands of miles long chasm. Through the splashing lava, Ji Hao saw a few especially beautiful woman, who had colorful mist coiling around their bodies, standing by the gate of the divine palace. Magical lights and mist rose from their hands, as they were trying to break the seal of the palace and get in.

Chapter 867: Possess The Body and Take the Soul

"You damned thing!" Zhu Rong shouted out ragingly while wielding his right hand. Down below, the lava waves rose into the sky and wove in streams. They formed an enormous ax that hacked down towards these few beautiful woman along with great heat.

Facing Ji Hao, the eighteen muscular men chuckled. These men looked so manly, yet the laughter that came out of their mouths were soft and sweet, and could even drill into one's bones. Meanwhile, they trod on golden blooms and drifted down.

Their moves seemed to be slow, yet they flashed into the chasm in a second. Eighteen muscular men wielded their weapons simultaneously and created a hundred miles in radius light screen, fending against the enormous ax.

The ax landed on the colorful light screen while Zhu Rong gave a deep roar.

Buzz! Eighteen golden lotuses abruptly flashed across the air. These lotuses gradually flew into the sky and released fierce beams of lights, screaming down like a heavy rain. The great power contained in the ax was torn into small streams and sent into different directions by these lotuses. Eventually, the ax transformed into eighteen glowing-red streams of flame, diving into the lava ocean.

The lava ocean began quaking intensely. The eighteen flames exploded, raising a hundred miles tall wave. Waves of lava roared towards all directions, and eighteen ten-thousand miles in radius blank spheres appeared in the lava ocean! Nothing existed in the eighteen blank spheres anymore, as the lava was turned into nothingness without leaving even a trace. Zhu Rong's power transformed into a raging fire, glowing dazzlingly while releasing a

burning heat, as it floated on the lava ocean. The overpowered light and heat twisted the surrounding air and made the air collapse, showing countless thin cracks of the space, which was being coiled around by a milky-white bright light. Gradually, a black light devoured everything.

Ji Hao looked at Zhu Rong in shock. Judging by his easy movements, he didn't launch this strike with all of his power, however, even after splitting into eighteen and being partially neutralized by the great defensive magic formation based on the lava ocean, the strike launched by Zhu Rong still delivered such a destructive effect. Ji Hao imagined the scene that would happen if such a strike landed on cities like Liang Zhu City or Pu Ban City, which had the most people, and couldn't help but quiver intensely.

When a cultivator reached Zhu Rong's level, he or she could truly destroy a country with a single move.

An ear-piercing noise could then be heard. Po and Gui Ling arrived one after another. Without being surprised, they nodded to Ji Hao, who arrived the first, then lowered their heads and looked down.

They saw the red bronze divine palace floating on the lava. Po said in a cold voice, "Ignorant, evil beings, this evil-suppressing divine palace was built by many powerful beings, including our Shifu, with the martial power of Emperor Xuanyuan's Xuanyuan sword, and the great powers of nature."

Smiling coldly, Po continued tauntingly, "This divine palace is connected with the stars and the earth meridians. No outsider can ever open it, unless all stars in Pan Gu world fall, and all earth meridians break..."

Po couldn't finish his speech, because right now, right in front of him, the gate of the divine palace let out a loud 'dong', and was pushed slightly open. The few beautiful woman stood by the gate turned around and threw an enchanting glance at Po. Then, one of

them laughed with a soft sweet voice.

"You are so not experienced. No tangible thing can stop us. Whatever great magic formation this is, it’s full of weaknesses, just like a sifter in our eyes. Ah, why should I talk so much to you? It’s all meaningless to you anyway. You lowly beings, depending on fleshy bodies and primordial spirits, you can never understand our greatness and scariness!"

‘Lowly beings, depending on fleshy bodies and primordial spirits?’

Ji Hao looked at them with a darkened face. Lowly beings?

Wielding his arms, the gray sword blueprint spread out once again and released an overwhelming Chaos power. Four sword lights with different colors dazzled into the sky. Ji Hao looked at the few beautiful woman, sneered and said, "Do you think that you’re so powerful? Try my Shifu’s sword formation then!"

The eighteen muscular men and the few beautiful woman all had their looks changed instantly. A beautiful woman flashed into the divine palace while screaming, "Stop them! Damn it! How can they even have such a powerful killing weapon?"

Before her voice faded, a stream of flame swooshed out of the divine palace. Countless flame arrows swished out in a formidable wave, causing a shrill noise that resounded across the square in front of the palace. Those men with bull horns tied on the altars were affected by the flame arrows, howling and cursing in anger.

The few beautiful women couldn’t react timely. As a consequent, those flame swords pierced straight into their bodies. Countless flame arrows flashed over, and not too many spaces were left between these arrows. These arrows almost merged into a flame stream while striking violently onto these woman’ bodies.

These arrows were triggered to attack whoever opened the gate, even when Zhu Rong opened the gate with the right way. But just

now, these few woman opened the gate forcibly with some powerful magics. That magic they used was powerful and strange, and caused damage to the seal of the divine palace. Therefore, the palace had launched a dreadful counterattack.

These beautiful women could all cast great magics, yet they were still quivering and shivering in the storm of flame like a tender plant in a storm. Puffing noises could be heard ceaselessly when their bodies were punctured by the flame arrows. One could see countless holes were left on their bodies one after another, and from those holes, colorful mist drifted out.

An immense power began spreading out from the divine palace. This power was strong and formidable. It was positive, and represented the whole world as it crushed down in an unstoppable way.

Such an overwhelming positive power could suppress all evils. The few women were disabled from moving, and could only let countless flame arrows pierced through their bodies, that made them scream in pain.

A quarter of an hour later, the flame arrows zipping out of the gate of the divine palace faded gradually. Followed by a thunderous ‘dong’, the gate slowly opened. Numerous enormous flame dragons guarded the broad space behind the gate with their bodies coiled, staring at the group of evil beings outside the palace, coldly and fiercely.

"Not experienced?" taunted Zhu Rong, "Who is not experienced exactly? Is this evil-suppressing divine palace so easy to break?"

The few beautiful woman were almost turned into skeletons by the thunderstorm-like wave of flame arrow. They lied on the ground while gasping weakly. Hearing Zhu Rong, they raised their heads together, glaring at Zhu Rong.

"Stupid, you lowly beings, you’re truly so stupid !"

A series of chuckle came from the sky. That silvery chuckle made Ji Hao feel drunk, both in his body and soul. Following the chuckle, thin streams of colorful mist swiftly descended from the sky and flashed into the divine palace. Within the mist, a beautiful curvy silhouette was faintly visible. Next, everyone on the scene clearly saw that, the silhouette easily passed by those flame dragons and came to Chi You’s head.

"What an amazing body, a deathless one? It’s mine!"

This silhouette laughed sweetly while rushing up straight into Chi You’s head.

Chapter 868: The Cauldron and The Original Spirit

"Abba, brother, sister, you go deal with the one inside!"

Ji Hao activated Yu Yu's sword formation. He wasn't powerful enough to trigger all of the sword formation's power, but he successfully sealed the area with a radius of a hundred thousand miles. The four sword lights with different colors flashed across the whole space while Ji Hao shouted to Zhu Rong, Po, and Gui Ling.

Zhu Rong, Po, and Gui Ling didn't have the time to think too much. Instead, they each released their powers and tore the space open, moving into the divine palace in a flash. They clearly understood that if the great powers of these mysterious beings were added with the deathless body of Chi You, a disaster would definitely come. If that truly happened, all living beings in Pan Gu world, no matter the non-humankind or humankind, would face a destructive disaster.

They broke into the palace, and then the gate of the palace suddenly shut. Countless flame streams rose from all directions and circled the divine palace up. All kinds of natural fires wove into a giant web, covering the entire area up.

Ji Hao stood in midair, silently looking at the eighteen muscular men and the six seriously injured women on the square outside the palace.

"Little thing, you're interesting, but a hero will always die the first, and will always be the most miserable one after death." said a muscular man who was holding a golden staff. Looking at Ji Hao, this man laughed with a soft and sweet voice, then continued, "We've seen countless heroes, so we know how heroes will end up like."

"Little thing, don’t try to be a hero. Why don’t you just...be our slave?" Another muscular man looked at Ji Hao with sparkling eyes. He was frightened slightly by the four fierce swords light that had almost covered the whole world. Therefore, his tone was especially gentle and mild.

"Although we will destroy all living creatures wherever we go, exceptions can exist." said the man with a smile, "For example..."

A hissing noise came from the square as these few women tremblingly stood up. One of them waved the skeleton arm and screamed, "Cut the crap! Just kill him! Tear his soul apart! I want the largest piece!"

Thin streams of mist coiled onto these women’ bodies. As the faint, colorful mist rose, their broken bodies began recovering speedily. Soon, they turned back into breathtakingly beautiful women.

The eighteen muscular men stopped talking to Ji Hao. Instead, they raised their weapons, flashed to before his face and encircled him.

Ji Hao locked his fingers together and prepared to trigger the sword formation. From the spiritual space, the mysterious man’s voice could be heard, "You can’t kill these things...Hm, try that!"

Ji Hao paused slightly. Three muscular men had their bodies expanded to a double size while wielding their golden staff, dragon-head staff and fiery ax, fiercely hacking onto Ji Hao’s body.

Ji Hao gave a deep shout. The Pan Xi divine mirror released a dim stream of light and flashed across the surface of his body. Next, these three weapons hacked on the bodies of another three muscular men. Along with their screams and shouts, the three muscular men were sent flying far away by their own people.

Ji Hao narrowed his eyes. Guided by the mysterious man, he put all his attention on the small caldron in his lower abdomen, which

was now clearly visible and almost tangible. The three-legged, round-shaped small caldron glowed with a faint light while releasing streams of strong yet warm power, spreading in Ji Hao's body making him feel comfortable.

These sky devils were especially hard to deal with. Physical attacks could do no harm to then, the sun power or thunder magics could only deliver limited effects on them. Could this small caldron really defeat them?

The eighteen muscular men rushed to Ji Hao together. On the square outside the palace, the six beautiful women chuckled and raised countless flower petals while waving their crystal sparkling jade pipa, playing a beautiful melody. Meanwhile, they rose into the sky and airily approached Ji Hao.

The mysterious man began talking again, "Just try it. Yu Yu's sword formation has sealed the space, so none of the others can easily find out that you've triggered it. Besides, I will hide the power vibration for you. Thus, no one in the world can find out that you used this treasure. Just try it, I don't believe that these things are truly invincible."

Ji Hao nodded. He opened his mouth and let a colorful stream of low flying out of his mouth. For the first time, the small caldron, which had been hiding inside his body for all this long, came out of his body along with the glow.

The small cauldron hovered in the wind and quickly expanded to ten meters tall from the size of a fist. The three-legged round caldron was with a simple, ancient style, without any embossment on its body. However, inside it, clouds had been rolling while countless layers of spell symbols had been forming speedily. From time to time, the translucent caldron had images of stars, mountains, rivers, plants and animals flashing across its surface.

The images flashing on the caldron included almost everything in Pan Gu world, as if the whole world was showing on the

caldron.

Once the caldron came out, a thriving, energetic and vigorous life-force was released. Ji Hao didn't recognize it, and neither could he describe it. Afterwards, the eighteen muscular men and those six beautiful women all screamed out desperately and hoarsely while turning around and fleeing at their highest speed, just like weak chicken seeing a hungry tiger.

With an unknown language, they howled shrilly and screamed something, but Ji Hao couldn't understand it.

The lid of the caldron flew up and released a five-colored clear stream of light, dazzling into the sky for hundreds of meters high, then falling down towards all directions like a fountain. All those muscular men and beautiful women were caught by the light.

These things struggled as hard as possible, leaving hazy afterimages in the air, seeming to fly away anytime. However, the light released from the caldron seemed to be able to suppress their powers perfectly. Ancient styled patterns rotated on the surface of the caldron while these people screamed and cried as they were sucked into the caldron.

The caldron spun for a few times in the air, then shrunk back to the size of a fist and flew back into Ji Hao's body. A five-colored flame surrounded the small caldron while the lid quaked slightly and screams and wails could still be heard from the caldron. The five colored flame grew stronger, and gradually, a strange yet amazing aroma was released from the small caldron, slowly merging with Ji Hao's body.

Ji Hao's seed of Dao of sun suddenly began quaking intensively. The magical aroma was absorbed by the seed of Dao. Ji Hao popped out his eyes in both surprise and shock. He found out that the original power of his soul, which was the core and the most important source of his primordial power, had been speedily improving and boosting at an amazing, unreasonably high rate!

"Ah, their foundation turns out to be the most important original spirit power...But where did they get their powers? I have to spend some time to find this out."

The mysterious man murmured while his figure gradually faded in Ji Hao’s spiritual space.

Ji Hao didn’t have the time to talk to him. Instead, he hurriedly sat down, crossed his legs, and with all of his powers, began absorbing the original spirit power that had been ceaselessly surging into his body.

Chapter 869: Above the Common

Human beings had souls; each human being had three souls and seven spirits. Spirits were the outsides, while the original souls were the insides.

Back in the stage of a fetus gestating in mothers' wombs, a human being merely had a slight true spirit contained in the body. But where would the three souls and seven spirits come from? The slight true spirit of a fetus was also the original soul of a human being. It would be nourished by the mother's spirit blood and natural powers and grow stronger like a seed, gradually generating the three souls and seven spirits. Therefore, the original souls were the base and the core, while the three souls and the seven spirits were like branches and leaves.

If the souls and spirits of a cultivator were damaged, even if all his or her three souls and seven spirits were destroyed, as long the true spirit remain unharmed, the original soul would be able to survive. Thus, this cultivator could reincarnate, live another life and start cultivation again.

The original soul was mysterious, such that ordinary human beings could not see it or look into it. Only greatly powerful beings who could see through the mysteriousness of the whole world and understand the ultimate secrets of the great Dao could be able to trace that slight trace of original soul in the great Dao of nature. Powerful beings like this could reach a corner of the secrets of original souls, but only through countless years of severe cultivation.

Therefore, among all those powerful beings in the world, many could destroy people' souls and spirits. A large number of Magi Palace Magi were able to easily destroy the souls and spirits of enemies, but speaking of destroying the true spirits and killing the original souls, only a few in the whole world could do it.

Only a top-grade powerful being could cultivate the original soul.

Only a top-grade powerful being could destroy original souls.

For the so-called top-grade powerful beings, even if they weren't as powerful as Yu Yu and his brothers, they could only be slightly weaker than them. At least, with Ji Hao's current power as a Divine Magus, he couldn't sense his own true spirit. Normally, in his cultivation, Ji Hao could only sense the changes and improvements of his souls and spirits from primordial spirits.

This was as if Ji Hao had been carefully cultivating a tree. Every single day, he could see the tree grow a couple of inches taller, and more leaves growing out from the branches. But with his current power, he could not see the roots of this tree underground.

But today, as the round cauldron in his body was continuously transforming those sky devils into that magical aroma for Ji Hao's seed of Dao of sun to absorb, Ji Hao now clearly sensed that, deep inside his primordial spirit, some weak and slight thing had been growing and changing.

An extremely fresh and sweet juice had been generated from that slight thing, being absorbed by the seed of Dao of sun without an end. Ji Hao felt like his physical body didn't exist anymore. His body felt so light that it even seemed to fly up, and his soul was too relaxed and conformable.

Additionally, a great confidence grew from Ji Hao's heart.

Powerful, he felt more powerful than ever, and he was becoming more and more powerful.

In his previous life, he was named Qing Long. He cultivated himself severely and created the Mantra Dan with Nine Secret Words. As a result, his soul power was much greater than ordinary people. After reincarnating, he was born in Southern Wasteland and named Ji Hao. Ji Hao was born with a much stronger original soul than all ordinary people.

If the power of the original soul of an ordinary human being was one, the power of Ji Hao's original soul could reach a hundred to two-hundred.

With a powerful original soul, Ji Hao's souls and spirits were naturally strong, that gifted him a sharper sense of natural powers and allowed him to cultivate himself with a high efficiency. Therefore, ever since Ji Hao became Yu Yu's disciple and started his cultivation of great Dao with Yu Yu's guidance, he had been improving at an amazing rate. However, Ji Hao's cultivation efficiency was only much higher than ordinary cultivators.

Compared with Po, who was one the first batch of living beings in this world, Ji Hao didn't know about Po's exact background, and even didn't know what kind of creature he was. But Po's original soul was incredibly powerful, tens, hundreds of thousands, millions or even tens of millions of times stronger than Ji Hao's original soul!

Compared with Gui Ling, Gui Ling was a well-cultivated turtle born in the prehistorical era. Her real body was tremendous, and to control such a tremendous and strong body, how powerful did her soul need to be? Therefore, Gui Ling's original soul was also millions of times stronger than Ji Hao's original soul.

Although Ji Hao's cultivation efficiency was incredibly high, in comparison with Po, Gui Ling and the other disciples of Yu Yu, that cultivation efficiency of his might even be pathetically low! If Po and Gui Ling concentrated on their cultivations, the improvement they achieved through every single breath might be equal to the result Ji Hao gained through tens of years of severe cultivation.

This was not about body conditions, this was purely about the differences of talents. Ji Hao was indeed talented, yet he was an ordinary human being, while Po, Gui Ling and the other disciples who followed Yu Yu since the prehistorical era were all extraordinary, and they once were famous, powerful prehistorical

beings! If one compared Po and Gui Ling to a seed of a divine tree, Ji Hao was only a bean seed. Planting these two seeds in the soil and letting them root and grow, the seed of the divine tree could grow to hundreds of meters tall within twenty-four hours while the bean seed could only grow to a foot tall within the same period of time, and that was already its upper limit!

Ji Hao was indeed especially fortunate. What he learned all these years allowed him to slowly improve the limit of this talent through cultivation. But that would be a long and extremely slow process, because he needed to transform and change from the base of his soul.

Nevertheless, at the very moment, those sky devils were digested by the small caldron, transformed into the most original and purest original soul power and directly nourished Ji Hao's original soul, making him stronger, and forcing him to improve and change.

Ji Hao was born like a seed of bean, but nourished by the power transformed from those sky devils, his original soul had started growing and improving. Gradually, he became like a seed of shrub, a seed of arbor...Step by step, he was evolving, reaching closer and closer to the level of seeds of divine trees.

The improvement of his original soul triggered the improvement of Ji Hao's primordial spirits and seed of Dao.

The size of the seed of Dao of sun hadn't changed, and the sun power contained it had either grown, but the color of it turned purer and purer, clearer and clearer. On the surface of the seed of Dao, numerous beautiful golden chains emerged one after another.

These golden chains shone dazzlingly, and were condensed from countless mysterious, ancient-styled spell symbols which were filled with pure positive power. These golden chains were the embodiments of the great Dao of sun. Every chain proved that Ji Hao had completely understood a part of the great Dao of sun and

had reached a new level of his cultivation based on the great Dao of sun. His power hadn't improved, yet, in terms of quality, Ji Hao's power had changed thoroughly.

Ji Hao could also feel that his spirit power became more and more sensitive while his mind turned clearer and clearer. Before, he used his spirit power like how a giant wielded an iron stick to smash his enemy. But now, he was like a powerful being with thousands of hands, and that thick iron stick had been turned into thousands of needles. He could now manipulate the thousands of needles all at once to embroider a detailed piece of art.

Gradually, Ji Hao's original soul had swollen to an extreme extent. The small caldron was still transforming those sky devils as eighteen to nineteen percent of those sky devils hadn't been digested yet.

Chapter 870: Dimond Cuts Dimond

Yu Yu's sword formation gradually stopped working.

Ji Hao stood in midair with a golden glisten in his eyes. If one looked closer, one would find countless tadpoles-like spell symbols wriggling in this golden light, happily and quickly. By merely watching these spell symbols, one would feel a strong warmth.

In his spiritual space, a golden glow had reached to every corner. Before, Ji Hao's spiritual space was empty, only with a faint gray mist drifting around. But now, the gray mist had gone, and that magnificent golden glow had suffused the entire space.

The seed of Dao of sun was like a tangible golden ball, floating within the golden glow. Countless thin golden chains swiftly hovered around the seed of Dao. Occasionally, raging golden flames would roar across these chains.

Ji Hao raised his head, looking at the sky. In his eyes, the sky seemed to be thickly dotted with tiny holes, such that with a single glance, he could faintly see the traces of natural laws. He then lowered his head and looked at the ground. On the ground, countless faintly visible streams had been flowing rapidly, coiling around. Before, he couldn't see all these, but right now, as his original soul had been improved, his true spirit had broken the limit of 'ordinary living beings', after which, he could now clearly sense the flow of natural powers on the ground.

The eighteen muscular men and the six women, these twenty-four sky devils had been digested completely by now. The power transformed from them allowed Ji Hao's original soul to been through a thorough change, to evolve into a 'divine being' from an 'ordinary being'. In terms of potential, Ji Hao had already reached, and even slightly surpassed the level of Po and Gui Ling.

"These sky devils are actually supreme treasures to me, the more the better!"

Ji Hao held his hands behind his body, narrowed his eyes and looked down at the gate of the divine palace.

As Ji Hao flicked his finger and pointed upwards, a needle-sized golden light beam flashed across, dazzling to three-thousand miles away from Ji Hao's fingertip along with a puffing noise. Immediately, the especially sturdy space of Pan Gu world was burned broken, showing a three-thousand miles long black rip.

The space was penetrated.

This rip was slightly curved, similar to the arc Ji Hao created every time after he launched the move of Sky-Opening. Normally, even if Ji Hao launched Sky-Opening with all of his power, he couldn't possibly create a rip in the space for three-thousand miles. But now, as his original soul had improved and both his primordial spirit, seed of Dao and spirit power had been through a thorough change, he could now even turn the rotten into miraculous by manipulating his power of great Dao.

Just now, with a slight little bit of his power, he achieved the result that he could never attain even by using all of his powers before.

Smiling faintly, Ji Hao gently flicked his fingers. Those fingers shook like blooming petals while countless extremely thin light beams screamed out like a thunderstorm. Along with a quick series of puffing noise, countless black space rips appeared before Ji Hao's eyes.

The number of the space rips was so large, and the space between each rip was so small, that at last, the area with a radius of three-thousand miles around Ji Hao looked even like a black sphere.

If anyone bumped into this area at the moment, his or her body would certainly be torn apart by these space rips. For causing such a severe damage to the surrounding space, the power Ji Hao used only equaled the power that would be consumed for launching an ordinary thunder magic before.

"My power is truly inexhaustible now. I don't even need to worry about the power consumption during fights now!" Ji Hao stopped, and the countless space rips around him quickly healed themselves. He then lowered his head and murmured to himself, "Wonderful, just wonderful. With my current power, no matter how many enemies come...The number of enemies now means nothing to me, unless they can kill me with a single strike."

The effects of his attack had changed completely. Ji Hao calmed down and looked into his own spiritual space. His mind was now as clear as a crystal piece. Within a single second, countless thoughts could flash across his mind. Ji Hao started to read an especially profound article in one of Yu Yu's scriptures, regarding how to control the powers of mountains and rivers with primordial spirits. With the methods introduced by the article, a cultivator could even move a mountain and turn an ocean upside down.

Ji Hao had read this article once when he had some spare time. But back then, Ji Hao only felt that this article was very hard to understand. Even with the great faith power that came from countless Yao Mountain people, he could only read the article at a poorly slow speed. After all, he was pursuing the great Dao of sun, and this method regarding how to control the powers of mountains and rivers didn't fit his cultivation of Dao.

But today, right now, as Ji Hao narrowed his eyes and pondered briefly, he completely understood this profound article with seven to eight hundred characters within the span of a breath. Such an amazing learning efficiency even shocked Ji Hao himself and made him speechless.

"Move!" Ji Hao cast a resonant grow while slightly wielding his right hand towards a towering mountain in thousands of miles away, on the edge of the lava ocean.

The ground silently quaked while that mountain disappeared from its original spot, then momentarily reappeared under Ji Hao's feet. The enormous mountain fell into the lava and raised a

sky devouring flame.

Ji Hao looked at his own hands in a great surprise.

He didn’t use his strong physical strength, neither did he activate his power of Dao. Instead, he used the method mentioned in the article, and with a tiny little bit of power, he triggered the power of earth meridians and made this mountain move itself to where Ji Hao wanted it to be.

This was not physical power, this was true magic!

Ji Hao now sensed a great pleasure, given by his ability to control nature. He looked at his hands and sincerely murmured, "This... This is the feeling a true Qi cultivator should have, isn’t it?"

Murmuring for a while, Ji Hao then sighed and continued, "I didn’t think brother Po and sister Gui Ling were actually so powerful!"

Right after that, Ji Hao couldn’t help but quiver intensively while his face turned especially dark. Po and Gui Ling were powerful prehistorical beings, with immeasurably great powers. Their original soul powers were equally great as Ji Hao’s current original soul power, but still, Po and Gui Ling couldn’t deal with those sky devils...

"I survived from the hands of those sky devils only because... Hehe, just as I thought, the more treasures you have, the easier you can save your own life!" Ji Hao showed his teeth in the lingering fear, then a sharp beam of light flashed across his eyes.

"Good, good, good, a big one is still inside. I have to figure out a way to take it out!"

"These sky devils are disasters to the others. But to me, they’re great fortunes!"

Laughing coldly, Ji Hao flashed across the air and airily teleported himself to the divine palace, slightly patting his hands on the gate.

The gate opened instantly, then Zhu Hong’s voice came out.

"Kid, are you okay?"

While snorting, Zhu Rong continued yelling, "Come in and watch the show. These two devils have met their rivals!"

Chi You’s gentle and clear voice could then be heard, "You little fire boy, you’re right. This evil thing can indeed be counted as my rival."

"It’s just…Are you trying to kill my soul and occupy my body? It’s not as easy as you think, isn’t it?"

Chapter 871: Cross Bite

Fire rose in huge streams while fire dragons roared, coiling around each other. Chi You's huge head had been slowly moving up and down.

Ji Hao, Po, Gui Ling and Zhu Rong stood tens of meters away, nervously but with a weird excitement, watching all kinds of supernatural scenes happening around Chi You's head with their breaths held.

The space with a radius of ten meters around Chi You's head was covered with a splendid light, and was filled with coiling colorful mist. The mist formed a dense cloud above Chi You's head, that looked like an upside-down mountain. On top of the cloud were tens of small and exquisite towers, decorated with beautiful beads on the tops, releasing a bright light.

From the cloud, colorful water drops had been falling, dripping on the ground along with colorful light streams, creating a silvery melody that was quite pleasant to hear. Those water drops blasted into stunning golden datura flowers on the ground one after another.

The pistils of those golden flowers were black, beautiful and evil. In the core of the pistil of every golden flower, a dim halo had been slowly spinning, seeming to devour the souls of people entirely. On each flower, one or a few beautiful girls with thin silk dresses had been singing and dancing. These girls were holding all kinds of musical instruments, playing excellent melodies that had never been heard in Pan Gu world before. When they were dancing, their thin dresses rose, fluttering in the air, vaguely exposing their bodies.

Within that area, with a radius of merely ten meters, more and more colorful water drops fell on the ground while more and more flowers bloomed, and more and more beautiful girls showed up.

Even though all the flowers and girls didn't leave that small area, this area seemed to be boundless, as it contained more and more flowers and girls but still allowed Ji Hao and the others to clearly see every detail of these flowers, every single move of each girl.

Such a powerful magic, no one on the scene had ever seen something like this.

Po and Gui Ling looked at this small area, seeming to be pondering something while watching more and more flowers and girls showing up in that area, but seemed to be not crowded at all. Gradually, on each of their hands, a small sphere of light began sparkling. It seemed that Po and Gui Ling had already partially learned some powerful magic.

Zhu Rong glanced at the light spheres on Po and Gui Ling' hands. He shook his head, seeming to feel bored, then focused on Chi You's head.

He was the Fire God. He followed the natural Dao of fire and had the power of fire. He could easily control all kinds of fires in the world, but his power could only be related to fires. Except for magics based on the fire power, he could never learn any other magic. Therefore, he didn't want to waste any time trying.

As for Ji Hao, he turned one of his eyeballs and looked at the light spheres on Po and Gui Ling' hands with one eye, and at Chi You's head with another, trying to figure out the secret of this magic.

Currently, Ji Hao's original soul was powerful, that gifted him a great ability of learning. From everything showed by Po and Gui Ling and that sky devil, Ji Hao had indeed learned something.

Countless tiny sized, beautiful girls surrounded Chi You's head. They laughed sweetly, singing with silvery voices and dancing with soft moves. They tried their best to show the beauty of their bodies, did whatever they could to seduce Chi You's true spirit, to make him fall into the endless desire.

As long as a slight little bit of desire emerged in Chi You's mind, the sky devil inside his head would turn the fire of desire into a sky-devouring evil flame, burn Chi You's true spirit, swallow his original soul and occupy his body.

Chi You narrowed his eyes, smilingly watching the great show performed by countless pretty girls.

After around two hours, Chi You abruptly burst with a praise, "What a beautiful dance, sexy, charming, but shame, what a shame. I have no wine to drink! A tasty wine is needed for a moment like this!"

Zhu Rong laughed loudly out, then threw out his wine calabash.

Chi You opened his mouth and gasped. From the opening of the calabash, a stream of wine flew out. Along with a clattering voice, Chi You gulped over a hundred liters of wine, then sincerely praised, "Tasty!"

Chi You narrowed his eyes, seeming to be enjoying the aftertaste of the wine, then he looked at Zhu Rong and said, "Hmm, you're much better than your ancestors. In the future, when I free myself, I will spare your Zhu Rong Family bloodline from destruction... Think it as me paying for this wine today!"

Zhu Rong's face turned dark. Then he sneered and said, "Did I give you the wine for expecting payback? Free yourself? Chi You, you will not be free!"

Chi You snorted coldly and murmured, "I am immortal, deathless and invincible...This crappy palace of yours, how can it never break? Suppress me, an immortal being, with something that will eventually go rotten... I bet you can imagine the result, even with your butt."

Zhu Rong opened his mouth, but didn't know how to response.

Ji Hao silently nodded. Chi You's words were rude, yet quite reasonable. If Chi You was truly an immortal being with a

deathless body, how could this evil-suppressing divine palace ever seal him forever?

The sky devil’s voice could then be heard as it said, "I’ve already found your original soul. Do you still have the mood to drink wine?"

Chi You gave a mysterious grin and also said slowly, "Have you found my original soul? Really? No joking? Ah, then I’ll hesitate no more! You’ve spent so many efforts to make such a great scene. Hehe, thank you for that!"

Chi You’s pair of eyes suddenly turned dark blood-red, crazy, violent, evil and cruel, without showing a trace of humanity.

"Idiot, I don’t know what you are, but my original soul has already merged with my body! As long as my body remains existing, my original soul will never die! You tried so hard to look for my original soul, how stupid!"

"Since you bumped in yourself, you shall be the food in my mouth!

Chi You opened his mouth and took a deep gasp. Countless golden flowers and beautiful girls, that mountain-shaped cloud floating above his head, the tens of exquisite small towers, along with all supernatural scenes created by the sky devil, all transformed into a stream of light and flew into Chi You’s mouth.

Meanwhile, a destructive power spread out from Chi You’s head. The light stream dimmed immediately after it flew into Chi You’s mouth, while a scream came out from Chi You’s head, as the sky devil cursed in a soft voice.

A colorful stream of light dazzled out of the spot between Chi You’s eyebrows and expanded to tens of thousands of miles long. The sky devil attempted to run, but an enormous blood-red swirl silently emerged between Chi You’s eyebrows. The tail of the colorful light stream was grasped into the swirl, then the swirl

began spinning, slowly yet strongly, crushing the light stream inch by inch like a milestone.

The light stream was disabled from dazzling away. Therefore, it twisted and changed, transforming into a huge golden datura flower. The pistils of the flower reached into the swirl, spinning in the reverse direction. The flower and the swirl crushed and devoured each other.

Following a series of ear-piercing creaking noise, large puffs of fire sparkles were generated from between the flower and the blood-red swirl.

Chapter 872: Unexpected Possibility

Chi You and the sky devil were now in a stalemate. Both of them had activated their original power to harm and devour each other, and by now, neither of them could move.

Zhu Rong quickly rubbed his hands and raised raging flame streams, coiling around the surrounding fire columns. Fire dragons roared deeply and resonantly, letting out dense smoke from their mouths and nostrils. Fire layered up and compressed quickly, turned into paper-thin pieces of fiery light at last, twisting and dazzling in the air.

Ji Hao didn't know what magic Zhu Rong had just cast, but Gui Ling and Po raised their eyebrows simultaneously.

This was called the 'universe fire seal', secretly passed down from Zhu Rong Family's ancestors. According to the legend, this magic was the most powerful, the fiercest magic of the Fire God Family, as the ministry of war of the ancient palace. Only powerful beings who had thoroughly understood the great Dao of Fire could cast this universe fire seal. This magic was incredibly powerful and especially violent. Within its coverage, everything would be turned into fire, and all fires would be under the control of the one who cast the magic.

Without same level power or especially powerful treasures for protection, anyone affected by this magic would be turned into fire, both in the soul and the body. Within the effective range of this magic, the life and death of all living beings would be under Zhu Rong's control. He could kill everyone with a single thought. For such a great power, one could only describe it with the word 'shocking'.

Po and Gui Ling once witnessed the powerfulness of Gods under the command of Fire God from the ancient heave. Therefore, they surely knew how powerful this magic was.

"Zhu Rong...He’s Zhu Rong after all!" praised Po sincerely, "No matter how, he possesses the purest Fire God bloodline. Just as I thought, we can never underestimate Zhu Rong."

While sighing, Po gently clapped his hands, with his fingers nimbly flicking. A layer of Yu Yu’s divine light covered his face while black and white lotuses that looked like Tai Ji diagrams drifted out from his fingertips one after another. Those lotuses drifted and hovered in the air like water ripples for a while, then silently merged with the air. Next, this divine palace was granted a mysterious sense of power, as if both the space and time in the palace had been through some indescribable change.

Gui Ling breathed deeply, looked at Po and said, "Brother, you’re so powerful. I can never be as great as you. I can only take out the bulky body of mine."

After finishing speaking, Gui Ling sat down on the ground. The power vibration released from her was restrained gradually, turning weaker and weaker. At the moment when her power vibration disappeared completely, a thin crack suddenly appeared on top of Gui Ling’s head. From the crack, a dark stream of light dazzled into the sky, and then, a tremendous black turtle silently showed up in the light.

Ji Hao looked at this tremendous turtle stunned. He couldn’t tell exactly how large this turtle was, but this divine palace that was enchanted with an extremely powerful magic and was almost boundlessly broad had already been filled up by Gi Ling’s true body.

Following a deep snort, the turtle’s four sky-pillar-like feet slowly landed on the ground. The ground quacked slightly while puffs of cold white mist rose from the turtle’s feet. Meanwhile, countless ice-cracks appeared in the air along with a slight cracking noise.

With the tremendous body and immeasurably great power, Gu Ling had just now forcibly torn the space broken and completely

sealed this whole area with the terrifying coldness. Thus, unless one could break Gui Ling's true body and unseal the space, no living being could ever escape from this area.

"Hmm, in terms of the thickness of shell, I've never lost to anyone yet!" Gui Ling, the enormous turtle, opened her jaws and let out a frosty breath onto Chi You's head.

Gui Ling was proud. Her true body was incomparably huge while her shell was unimaginably thick and sturdy, with an indescribably great defensive power. Some supremely powerful people in this world were indeed able to break her true body and break out from this sealed space, but Gui Ling didn't believe that this sky devil could do it.

Not to mention the fact that this space was also sealed by the magics cast by Zhu Rong and Po, Gui Ling had only given a supportive seal.

Ji Hao watched all these, pondered for a while and laughed. Wielding his hand, Ji Hao let the Pan Xi divine mirror fly out of his head and release a dim stream of light, covering Gui Ling and himself inside.

Ji Hao then laughed, "Sister Gui Ling, I'll just smartly add another layer of seal upon yours. Let's see if they are powerful enough to break all these seals of ours. I truly doubt it."

That was what Ji Hao said, but in fact, Ji Hao truly hoped that the sky devil, who was now fighting against Chi You, could escape. The sky devil broke into the divine palace and attempted to occupy Chi You's body. This proved that she must be a top-grade important one among all the sky devils, and she was certainly much more powerful than the ones guarding outside. If Ji Hao could throw her into the small caldron, how many benefits would he gain?

However, facing Po, Gui Ling and Zhu Rong, Ji Hao dared not to let them know about the small caldron, because the mysterious

man had warned him. He clearly understood that as a powerful treasure which was able to transform sky devils into original soul power to improve the ordinal souls of living creatures, this small caldron could drive any powerful beings crazy, if they knew about it.

"Can you devour me?" Chi You gave a scornful laugh and said.

That large datura flower slightly trembled and responded, "What a stupid one with thick skin! With enough time, I might even crush your original soul! Hehe, I've already known enough about you!"

said the sky devil coldly, "You're nothing but a lucky..."

Chi You interrupted the sky devil and continued, "Shut up, I'm asking you. Can you devour me?"

The sky devil remained silent for a while and responded confidently, "With enough time, I can devour the original soul of any creature in the universe. Even if you're truly an immortal being...When I summoned the powerful beings of our kind to descend in this world, you will perish."

Proudly giving a laugh, the sky devil continued slowly, "I'm not afraid to tell you that among those living beings who claimed to be immortal, some had fallen in the hands of the powerful beings of our kind. You can do nothing to me, and to the powerful beings of our kind, you're nothing but a grain of dust. You're not even worth mentioning."

Ji Hao's Po and Gui Ling and Zhu Rong had their faces quiver simultaneously.

This sky devil they were facing right now had already caused them enough of a headache. But according to her, some of her kind were much more powerful than her. Was this even true? Was she bluffing, trying to frighten Ji Hao and the others, or she was simply telling the truth? Did powerful beings like that truly exist among sky devils?

Before Chi You said anything, the sky devil slowed her move down and continued, "Why don’t we..."

The blood-red light released by Chi You and the colorful light released from the sky devil sparkled quickly, but didn’t cause any sound.

"The devil is treacherous. Everyone, be careful!"

Before Po’s voice faded, Chi You abruptly burst with a resonant laugh and said, "Good, good, in this case, what is the worst that could be even if I let you become an unexpected possibility of this world? I am imprisoned in this place. To live is no better than to die...Maybe, you are my only hope!"

The blood-red light released from Chi You dimmed down. Then suddenly, he opened his mouth and let out a blood-red ax along with a sky-shaking power vibration. Following a thunderous bang, the blood-red ax exploded and turned into countless beams of blood-red light, dazzling towards all directions.

The air quacked while those blood-red light beams blasted. Ji Hao and the others all triggered their protective treasures to ensure their own safety.

Following a series of silvery laughter, that stream of colorful light, which had fought against Chi You for quite long, disappeared in an unknown way, without leaving a trace.

Chapter 873: Search For The Devil Million Miles Away

"Jiu Li devil ax! How can you have it?!"

Zhu Rong shouted out while swiftly waving his broad sleeves, sending dazzling streams of fire descending from all directions, crazily burning the spreading blood-red light. A strong bloody scent could be sensed from the air. Under the effect of this bloody scent, Ji Hao felt dizzy, as if both his soul and body were turning rotten.

Po and Gui Ling moved immediately. Yu Yu's divine light shone brightly between their eyebrows while their great spirit powers spread out towards every direction, rippling the air while searching for the sky devil.

With their powers, their spirit powers could reach to millions of miles away within a blink of an eye. But within a million miles in radius, the sky was blue and unclouded, and nothing abnormal could be detected.

Ji Hao looked at Chi You, whose eyes had turned back to normal. The eye of Dao of sun between Ji Hao's eyebrows was suddenly opened, releasing beams of sunlight, staring at Chi You. Clearly, Ji Hao saw extremely thin wisps of blood-red mist dissipating inside Chi You's head. The blood-red mist was transformed from the Jiu Li devil ax. The enormous blood-red ax launched an amazing strike just now and covered the sky devil to run, then immediately transformed back into a stream of blood-red mist and drilled back into Chi You's head. The ax collapsed, turning into countless tiny streams of blood-red mist, merging with the cells of Chi You's brain.

Soon, the ax transformed into a series of spell symbols on Chi You's brain cells, seeming to be nothing special, mixed with the other spell symbols with unknown functions in his head. One

would have to cut Chi You's brain into tiny pieces, split his brain cells one by one and dig deep into them, taking out every single one of those tens of thousands of tiny spell symbols on each cell. Otherwise, no one could ever find the devil ax.

"Amazing!" Ji Hao looked at Chi You, praised sincerely while giving Chi You a thumbs up with both of his hands.

Chi You was indeed worthy to be the greatest villain in Pan Gu world who caused Emperor Xuanyuan so much headache. With the help of a group of top-grade powerful beings, Chi You was finally suppressed, but even as a suppressed one in the divine palace, Chi You still had his great abilities that could still cause everyone a bad headache.

Chi You narrowed his eyes, smiled gently and said to Ji Hao, "Don't blame me. This place is way too boring. I haven't seen thriving plants for a long time, and haven't touched the strong and beautiful bodies of Jiu Li girls for many, many years ...Therefore, I am willing to add an unexpected possibility to this world."

Zhu Rong, Po and Gui Ling each cast a complicated glance at Chi You, shook their heads and said nothing. Instead, they rushed straight out of the palace.

Ji Hao understood their feelings. In their eyes, Chi You was the worst villain in the world, who could commit all manners of crimes, and was guilty of the most heinous sins. Therefore, no matter Chi You did, that would be reasonable. Helping a nameless evil being escape, this was nothing to Chi You. Even though this evil thing had just attempted to kill Chi You's original soul and occupy his body, and could be counted as Chi You's enemy, Chi You shouldn't help her run. But since Chi You was a big villain, he could do anything without a good reason. Zhu Rong, Po and Gui Ling weren't willing to waste any time to talk to Chi You regarding what he had done.

"Just behave yourself!" Ji Hao also gave a complicated glance at

Chi You, then turned around, transformed into a golden beam of light and dazzled out of the palace. While moving, Ji Hao yelled in his spiritual space, "Oi, old man, do you think this cauldron in my body can digest Chi You as well? Would I become an immortal being as well if I digest him with this caldron?"

The spiritual space was golden and bright, yet the mysterious man didn't give any response.

Ji Hao shrugged while taking a last glance at Chi You.

At this moment, Chi You had his eyes popped out, looking at the seventy-two muscular men chained on altars outside the palace, through layers of flame.

Ji Hao paused, because he saw that Chi You's eyes were filled with tears. With the tears gushing out from his eye sockets, Chi You looked at the seventy-two muscular men, who were constantly tortured by thunder-flames. Ji Hao clearly saw the affection in Chi You's eyes, and that pure and strong affection even shocked Ji Hao.

"Affectionate or merciless...Chi You, ah, Chi You!" Ji Hao rushed out of the palace, then a raging fire rose from behind him, blocking Chi You's eyesight. Followed by a deep dragon roar, the gate of the palace closed loudly, with countless red spell symbols sparkling on the gate.

The lava ocean, which was split up by Zhu Rong's divine power, began merging back together. Roaring streams of lava surged into the chasm.

Ji Hao rushed out of the lava ocean, trod on a golden stream of light and stood in midair. Po and Gui Ling had left, and Ji Hao didn't know where they went, while Zhu Rong stood in midair, waiting for Ji Hao. Seeing Ji Hao, Zhu Rong hurriedly pointed at two directions and said, "Ji Hao, Priest Po, and Priest Gui Ling had gone in these two directions to search for the sky devil. I will go this way, and you go that way. Be careful when chasing the evil

thing."

Pausing for a second, Zhu Rong continued harshly, "Remember, you have to remember, if you see the devil, protect yourself...Ha, you have the sword formation! If you see the devil, try your best to kill it. If you receive a distress signal from us, come as fast as you can."

With eyes showing fierceness, Zhu Rong continued in a cold voice, "This is Southern Wasteland. Even the seal we created together couldn't stop the devil. If she starts a massacre here in Southern Wasteland, our Southern Wasteland would be facing a disaster! Ji Hao, you must be careful, careful... be extra careful!"

Warning Ji Hao cautiously, Zhu Rong then cast a resonant roar towards the sky and transformed into a raging fire. The roaring fire compressed, turned into a thousands of miles long fire phoenix, raised countless swiftly spinning whirlwinds while screaming towards where he pointed at earlier.

Ji Hao paused briefly, then gnashed his teeth and let the Heaven and Earth golden bridge dazzle out from between his eyebrows. The golden bridge released a dim golden light, carried Ji Hao up and flashed away.

With the amazing speed of the golden bridge, tens of thousands of miles were covered by Ji Hao within a second. Then, another ten-thousand miles were left behind.

Extremely thin streams of spirit power penetrated the space like sharp blades, carefully sweeping across the surrounding area and searching for the escaping sky devil. But while searching, Ji Hao laughed bitterly in his heart. The sky devil was traceless. Even the seal created by Zhu Rong, Po and Gui Ling join-handedly couldn't trap it, how could they even find a trace of that sky devil now by blandly searching in this vast Southern Wasteland?

However, as Zhu Rong said, this was Southern Wasteland, the foundation of Zhu Rong Family, and also was the base of Ji Hao's

clan. Even by risking his own life, Ji Hao could not allow the sky devil to whatever she wanted in Southern Wasteland.

Sky devils were fierce and cruel. They lived on souls of human beings. If they were allowed to be rampant in Southern Wasteland, Ji Hao was afraid that Southern Wasteland would truly be destroyed.

Ji Hao tried his best to release his spirit power and search forward. Without knowing how, his spirit power had actually covered the area with a radius of million miles, and wherever his spirit power reached, he could detect everything, even including a grain of dust or sand.

Searching for twenty-four hours like this, a boundless water area abruptly appeared in the front.

Volcanic islands floated on the boundless water surface, like stars in the sky. Many volcanos had been erupting intensively, letting out dense black smokes, making the water surface quake ceaselessly.

Standing high up in the air, Ji Hao saw a towering linden tree standing straight on a beautiful large island in the front, in the furthest place he could see.

Chapter 874: Encountering Priest Mu

This place was called the ‘Flowing Flame Sea’, and was a famous scenic spot in Southern Wasteland.

Flowing Flame Sea was a sea, but filled with countless volcanos. Volcanos in the sea erupted all year round, sending fires into the sky and releasing lava to boil the sea. As a consequence, this sea was constantly boiling. Except for some strong creatures with especially great life-force, no aquatic creatures could live in this sea. Because of the lava and smoke released from the volcanos, on the volcanic islands and under the water, plants with the nature of fire had been growling, while none of the other types of plants could grow in this area.

Therefore, seeing a linden tree standing on an island from a distance away, Ji Hao felt a bit strange. Especially that, looking from where Ji Hao was, the tree was merely around three-meter tall, but Ji Hao was tens of thousands of miles away from the tree. From such a long distance away, Ji Hao saw the tree with a single glance, and felt it was so towering.

"Something’s wrong!" Ji Hao murmured as he turned around and attempted to leave.

The golden bridge released a dark golden light and rose into the air, bringing Ji Hao swiftly away. In the next moment, after a sudden dizziness, Ji Hao shockingly realized that he had moved to upon the sea surface, less than a hundred miles away from the linden tree.

"Something is really wrong!" Ji Hao shouted out, packed the golden bridge and let out a layer of golden light, surrounding his entire body. With all his power, he dashed backward.

Puff! The space was torn apart while Ji Hao bumped out from the rip of the space, and had his head thud against the ground. As a Divine Magus, his head was incredibly hard, such that he knocked

a deep hole out of the ground and raised a large cloud of dust.

"Little friend, you're too polite, too polite. No need to kowtow to me."

A slight and weak voice came from the front, right after which, a strengthful hand pressed on Ji Hao's shoulder and slightly pushed. Ji Hao couldn't help but be sent up into the sky. He shook his head hard and got rid of the dust around his head, then fixed his eyes on the front area.

The linden tree was right before his eyes, entirely green, like a jade statue. Under the tree, was a scrawny old man with a small bun on his head, and was sitting on a straw hassock. The old man's lips curved downwards, giving a strong sense of bitterness. His slouched eyelids were dropped, that made him seem to be weak and powerless, like a person with a serious illness. Ji Hao felt quite uncomfortable to look at him.

Glancing at this old man, Ji Hao felt rather not good because of the bitter look of his. All of a sudden, Ji Hao seemed to grasp all the bitterness and painfulness that came from billions of times of reincarnations of countless living beings, and an unprecedented bitterness and sadness slowly rose from his heart. Ji Hao sensed a sharp pain from his heart, then he burst into tears.

The old man looked at Ji Hao silently. The gray and broken cloth worn by him fluttered in the air without being blown with any wind, as if he hadn't eaten anything for a long time. Weakly, the old man said to Ji Hao, "What a talented boy. By simply seeing my face, you understood the secret of the great Dao, that the lives of all living beings are bitter. My little friend, we are destined to meet each other. Come, come here, kowtow to me and be my disciple!"

Hearing the old man, Ji Hao sensed nothing but a strong bitterness from his heart. Next, the bitterness spread out from all his internal organs, then reached his mouth and spread on his tongue. He felt like a hundred thousand gall bladders, and a

million kilograms of Coptis chinensis had been compressed into a small bowl of liquid, and that blow of liquid was poured into his mouth, while he was forced to hold the liquid in his mouth and carefully taste it.

This indescribable bitterness almost made Ji Hao's soul collapse. Sticky cold sweat oozed out of Ji Hao's pores, and even the sweat had been releasing a dense, bitter scent.

With tears flowing out of his eyes almost in streams, Ji Hao forced himself to stand straight, looking at the old man in shock.

Linden tree, and an old priest...

Ji Hao seemed to think of something, but he was now entirely soaked in the horrible bitterness, and his brain worked as slow as a snail. He felt like he was recalling the old man's name right now, but no matter how hard he tried, he couldn't do it, neither could say the name out.

"You...you..." Ji Hao tremblingly pointed his finger at the old man.

"All living beings are bitter, and the seal of bitterness is boundless!" The old man's lip corners curved downwards, as well as his eye corners. His entire face was dropping. In Ji Hao's eyes, even the bones of this old man were weakly dropping.

Bitter, miserable, a strong sense of sadness and despair was released from every corner of this old man's body, transforming into a thick screen that firmly locked Ji Hao in it.

A strong gale blew across the sea. Behind the old man, the linden tree swayed slightly. Countless leaves shook on the tree, and every single leaf seemed to contain a tiny world, with countless frightened, sad and despairing faces sparkling in it. This linden tree seemed to contain all miserable people in the world, and had been replaying countless pathetic lives, all soaked in bitterness.

A great amount of saliva gushed out from Ji Hao's salivary gland.

The bitter saliva flew out through his mouth corners. He opened his mouth widely and let the clear and extremely bitter saliva surge out ceaselessly. His strength went away bit by bit along with the bitter saliva, that made his body soft and weak, causing a limp in his knees, even making him kneel down.

"The sea of bitterness is boundless, but mercy can serve as a boat." The old man narrowed his eyes, smiled to Ji Hao and said, "Come, be my disciple. You will feel no bitterness anymore! I am Priest Mu, I will be your Shifu!"

Ji Hao looked at the old man in a daze, then abruptly began laughing idiotically.

The tangible seed of Dao released dazzling golden light while those chains transformed from power of the great Dao swiftly rotated. Purely positive and violent sun power was released from the seed of Dao and immediately filled Ji Hao’s body.

The Pan Jia sun was under the control of the seed of Dao, giving out strong streams of warmth, flowing around Ji Hao’s body and fending against the bitterness. Especially thin beams of golden light dazzled out from Ji Hao’s body, and added a beautiful golden luster to his skin. Even his hair turned slightly golden, looking like threads of gold.

The old man slightly frowned, then an even stronger bitterness struck down straight onto Ji Hao’s head, like a fierce bolt of lightning.

Ji Hao chuckled, widely opened all three eyes of his, then gave a resonant roar. He pulled out the nine suns spear with his right hand and launched the combined move with all his power.

A splendid golden arc light struck down towards the old man’s head while Ji Hao growled, "Bitter? Bitter my..."

Ji Hao tried to use a dirty word to express his anger, but before the word was let out of his mouth, an unstoppable natural will

suddenly descended, sealing his mouth and tongue, disabling him from saying that.

However, this full-power attack he launched tot he old man was perfect. The nine suns spear buzzed deeply while landing on the old man’s head and touching that small bun, almost in the same moment when Ji Hao pulled it out.

The old man sighed and murmured, "Bitter indeed!"

He waved the broad right sleeve of his gently towards the nine suns spear while his left hand pulled out a vividly green branch from an unknown source, slapping towards Ji Hao’s chest while leaving a soft green light in the air.

Chapter 875: Priest Mu Sheds Blood

When Priest Mu launched the move, his face was filled with bitterness. The strong bitterness could bring despair to anyone in the world and kill the desire of attacking of any living creature.

His pair of eyes shone with a green light, clear and flawless, and seemed to be seen through with a single glance. Yet, that pair of eyes of his also contained turbid and complicated lights, boundless, endless and faintly visible, such that no one could find any truth from those eyes.

Seeing the definite opposites, Ji Hao felt that even his soul was tearing apart. The Pan Xi divine mirror activated itself to protect Ji Hao, which was why he survived. Without the mirror, Ji Hao's soul would have collapsed right on the spot because of the immeasurable light in Priest Mu's eyes, and he would die immediately.

However, as a dim divine light flowed around Ji Hao's body, the Pan Xi divine mirror automatically sent away the soul and spirit attack launched by Priest Mu with his eyes, to protect its owner.

In the next moment, the sky darkened, the stars dimmed, and within the area with a radius of a million miles around the island where Ji Hao and Priest Mu were standing, everything released a strong sense of bitterness. Islands, seawater, lava, fire, dust and those strong magical aquatic creatures living in the sea that lived in the boiling water, all perished because of this terrifying sense of bitterness.

Ji Hao quivered, then blood spurted out from his eyes, ears, nostrils, and mouth. With a body that belonged to a Divine Magus, the blood flew backward once it sprayed out and was all reabsorbed by Ji Hao's body without leaving a single drop outside. It soon remerged with the flowing blood streams in his body

Priest Mu's soul and spirit attack was dispelled. Even though the

surrounding area of the island had turned chaotic, the fierce soul and spirit attack launched by him was indeed neutralized by the Pan Xi divine mirror.

Priest Mu's sleeve gently touched the nine suns spear, but the spear slightly brushed against the sleeve along with a mysterious arc, dodged his move and hacked on his head.

The small bun was cut open by the spear along with a puffing noise. Strands of black and shining long hair, that had a green luster, airily rose. The bun was broken, causing Priest Mu's long hair to flutter in the air, then hang loosely on his back,

Through the bun, the spear continued reaching to his scalp.

From around two-inch away from Priest Mu's scalp, the fierce airstream brought up by the spear had already slightly dented Priest Mu's scalp!

Priest Mu was shocked. His look changed instantly, and his eyes popped out widely, glaring at Ji Hao fiercely. He was already a top-grade powerful being in the whole Pan Gu world. One could even say that as long as Pan Gu world remained existing, he would never die. With his cultivation, even if all stars in Pan Gu world descended and smashed on his body simultaneously, not even a hair of his would be harmed. Nevertheless, a strike launched by Ji Hao had actually dented his scalp?

This was just like a tiny ant making a giant dragon vomit blood with a gentle kick!

Priest Mu stared at Ji Hao in shock while vividly green divine light swiftly gathered towards him. Streams of green colored divine light that contained an immeasurably great power quickly surged back into Priest Mu's body.

When the nine suns spear was around an inch far from Priest Mu's scalp, the vividly green branch in Priest Mu's left hand had already slapped on Ji Hao's chest. It seemed to be gentle, but

actually was as heavy as a violent bolt of thunder.

The Pan Xi divine mirror activated and released a dim light gathered on Ji Hao's chest. The light then transformed into a three-foot square thick mirror, facing the branch in Priest Mu's hand.

Ji Hao launched his own move as well. He took out the few defensive magic talismans, which were made by Priest Dachi, Yu Yu's big brother, and brought to him by Priest Xuan Du. Without any hesitation, Ji Hao crumbled all those jade talismans. Divine light spots drifted down from between Ji Hao's fingers while black and white streams of mist swooshed into the sky, forming a spinning Tai Ji diagram behind Ji Hao!

The branch slapped down while the mirror transformed from the light, released from the Pan Xi divine mirror, was shattered into pieces, completely silently. The mirror was slapped into pieces while the green branch gently hit on Ji Hao's chest along with a vividly green light.

Ji Hao sighed and resigned himself to his fate. He then closed his eyes, wielded the nine suns spear with a single hand, and continued hacking down with all of his powers.

Priest Mu looked at the black and white Tai Ji diagram behind Ji Hao, his wrinkled face filled with an extremely bitter look. With a low voice, Priest Mu murmured, "Dachi, my friend, good, good... Just let me see what you have got."

In Priest Mu's hand, the branch waved, seeming to be slow but actually incomparably fast...Meanwhile, although the moves of the branch were especially fast, the moving track of every single leaf on it was clearly visible. Priest Mu injected his great power into the branch holding in his hand, and within that green light, the branch seemed to break the limitations of time and space in a perfect way, then strike on the Tai Ji diagram, that was now spinning with Ji Hao at its center.

The sea slightly quaked, then a giant amount of seawater was evaporated.

The black and white Tai Ji diagram showed a few slight cracks while the green branch holding in Priest Mu's hand let out a series of popping noise. Following that, at least fifty leaves shattered and withered, falling from the branch. All this happened in just a moment, and before Priest Mu could make any reaction to the withering branch, Ji Hao's nine suns spear had already hacked heavily on Priest Mu's scalp.

Purple mist puffed up from Priest Mu's head and transformed into layers of flame-shaped light screen, rising one after another, neutralizing the power of the nine suns spear. However, this was a full-power combined move launched by Ji Hao. The spear swished down towards Priest Mu's head through a mysterious arc track, nimbly and easily dodged the layers of light screens rising from Priest Mu's head and magically, directly landed on Priest Mu's head.

Puff! Priest Mu's scalp was cut open as blood surged out along with coiling purple mist.

Priest Mu was dumbfounded, staring at Ji Hao as if he couldn't believe it.

Blood flowed down from his scalp in streams, quickly making his coarse robe wet, letting purple mist rising from his robe.

"You, you hurt me..." Priest Mu murmured to himself. He just couldn't believe it.

"Hmm, just a scratch though!" Ji Hao looked at Priest Mu and gave an embarrassed smile.

Indeed, that was just a scratch. After the nine suns spear broke Priest Mu's scalp, and before it touched Priest Mu's skull, the power of the spear had been consumed up, and it couldn't go anywhere further.

Not only that, a great counterforce struck through the spear, causing Ji Hao an unbearable pain from his arm. The bones and muscles of his arm were smashed already, and if he hadn't been trying his best to hold that arm of his together, it would have exploded long ago.

"Just a scratch?" More and more vividly green colored divine light surged back into Priest Mu's body.

Bitterly, he looked at Ji Hao, dipped his finger into the blood flowing down from his head, then said slowly, "A kid, has hurt my body...Even if Dachi, Qing We and Yu Yu came together...Kid, die!"

Priest Mu raised the branch high and violently smacked down towards Ji Hao's head.

Chapter 876: Follow The Sound Here

Priest Mu launched a move with anger, and the vividly green branch had turned withering yellow.

A strong bitterness came straight at Ji Hao's face. It made Ji Hao feel like being soaked in the juice of bitter melons for tens of thousands of years, that his blood and flesh, and even soul had all become especially bitter. At the same time, the overwhelming sense of misery had somehow penetrated the time and space. It seemed to make Ji Hao drown in the endless bitterness for millions of lives, as if he could never be saved.

If this strike truly landed on Ji Hao's body, the next millions of lives of his would be incredibly miserable.

"Old man, you're too cruel!" Ji Hao forcibly boosted up his own spirit power, released a bright golden light from his body while withstanding the strong bitterness that came from every single cell of his. The immemorial sun streamer rose from his head and released the essence sun fire, which condensed into countless golden fire swords, dazzling towards the branch in Priest Mu's hand.

Priest Mu's true body was a pre-world linden tree, a divine being among all plants in the world. The essence sun fire was the most powerful type of fire in the world, and could naturally suppress Priest Mu's power. However, Priest Mu was immeasurably powerful, and his power seemed even to be inexhaustible. As he slightly flicked the branch held in his hand, the golden fire swords released from the immemorial sun streamer quivered simultaneously, then shattered in the air, without leaving a single fire sparkle.

With his hair hung loosely on his back and his face covered in purple blood, Priest Mu shouted out viciously, "Cruel?! Ignorant little kid, you...you...you have actually hurt my scalp...Even Yu

Yu…he…he…he couldn’t…"

Ji Hao gripped the nine suns spear with both of his hands. His shattered arm had recovered already. Looking at the branch wielded over by Priest Mu approaching his body, Ji Hao responded blandly, "My Shifu’s sword is much sharper than this spear of mine. Haven’t my Shifu cut your scalp yet?"

Priest Mu’s pair of eyes shone with a bright green light as he glared at Ji Hao and yelled coldly, "Your Shifu and all his disciples are a bunch of unreasonable, stubborn people!"

While this short conversation was happening, the branch in Priest Mu’s hand had already reached Ji Hao’s chest. Priest Mu gathered his power as the green light continuously surged into his body from all directions. The yellow color of the branch in his hand grew more and more vivid, until the branch became like a yellow jade statue.

Priest Mu stopped talking, and by now, he wanted to do nothing but to smack Ji Hao to death.

He wanted not only to crush Ji Hao’s three souls and seven spirits, but also to perish his true spirit, which was also his original soul. He wanted Ji Hao to die miserably in the endless bitterness while screaming, crying and begging. He wanted Ji Hao to disappear forever, without a chance to even reincarnate.

Ji Hao sensed the strong intent of killing from Priest Mu. He took a deep breath, then the Heaven and Earth golden bridge released a dim golden light and dazzled out from between Ji Hao’s eyebrows. With the power of the golden bridge, Ji Hao attempted to dodge this lethal strike launched by Priest Mu. However, the branch held in Priest Mu’s hand released a terribly strong suction force, trapping Ji Hao like a black hole. No matter how hard Ji Hao tried to activate the golden bridge, he couldn’t escape with the golden bridge’s power, despite the power of the golden bridge. After all, Priest Mu was way, way more powerful than Ji Hao.

Priest Mu looked at the golden bridge and gave a faint grin.

Even his grin gave a strong feeling of bitterness and misery. His appearance was still acceptable if he did not grin, but once he grinned, anyone who saw him would want to vomit blood. Seeing Priest Mu's grin, Ji Hao immediately figured out that back in the Chaos, this old man fought against Yu Yu over the heaven and earth golden bridge. As a result, he and his brother suffered a fierce series of hack launched by Yu Yu, then escaped. But today, Ji Hao just sent the golden bridge right into his hand!

'Damn it!' thought Ji Hao.

Ji Hao stared at Priest Mu while the Pan Xi divine mirror swooshed out from his head without concealing itself anymore, releasing a Milky-Way-like, magnificent stream of black divine light. It descended from the sky along with a strange buzzing noise and heavily fell on the branch held in Priest Mu's hand.

Puff! The divine power of the mirror was activated, under the effect of which, the branch in Priest Mu's hand, that was powerful enough to kill both Ji Hao's body and his soul, suddenly turned into a nicely smelling lily. The white petals of the lily didn't contain any power. The lily gently patted on Ji Hao's body and sent a puff of petals up, letting a cloud of pollen and drops of dew fall on Ji Hao's body. This scene was just weird.

Priest Mu looked at Ji Hao in a daze, then suddenly raised his head, fixing his burning eyes on the Pan Xi divine mirror passionately.

"This treasure, it's destined to be ours!" Priest Mu's lips were even trembling because of the excitement. The golden bridge was already a supreme piece that he had been dreaming of. It was powerful enough to lay a sturdy foundation for his sect to raise and to thrive. But this Pan Xi divine mirror was so powerful and magical. That branch wasn't his spirit treasure indeed, but it was carefully made from a branch that came from his true body. This

branch could be hundreds of times more powerful than ordinary natural-crafted treasures.

Being swept across by the divine light released from the mirror, such a powerful weapon had actually, directly changed in form. It was changed thoroughly, in both terms of magic power and physical structure.

Such a power, such magic, so amazing!

"This treasure isn't from this world." Priest Mu looked at Ji Hao with a big grin, and the strong bitterness was flowing in his grin, along with every single wrinkle of his, looking so weird.

"Saint Pan Xi's spirit treasure from Pan Xi world." Ji Hao didn't want to conceal the truth. Instead, he frankly told Priest Mu about the history of the Pan Xi divine mirror, then continued, "My Shifu might come and launch hundreds of thousands of hacks on you if you try to snatch my treasure. If you're not afraid of that, feel free to do whatever you want."

Pausing for a second, Ji Hao then confusedly looked at Priest Mu and murmured, "So strange. Even though I have powerful treasures, I shouldn't be able to harm even a hair of yours. Old man, you're a bit too weak, don't you think so? Hmm, you're not really here, are you?"

Priest Mu smiled and responded, "Even though I am not really here, this clone of mine is ten percent as powerful as the real me. It's more than enough to deal with kids like you. Just now, I was searching for an evil thing in this world. That's why I was slightly careless and allowed you to hurt me. But now, I won't show any mercy anymore."

As he grasped in the air, another branch flew into Priest Mu's hand. Priest Mu then stood up, looked at Ji Hao and said coldly, "Even if Yu Yu is right here, I will kill you today... you reckless, arrogant little kid."

Priest Mu looked at the golden bridge, then looked at the Pan Xi divine mirror, then glanced at the nine suns spear and the immemorial sun streamer. Afterward, Priest Mu sighed slightly and said, "The more powerful you become, the more harms you will do. Little kid, I can’t let these treasures stay in the hands of an evil being like you."

The branch flicked in his hand while Priest Mu began moving. Along with a bright green light, the branch swished towards Ji Hao.

"Even Yu Yu himself can’t save you now!"

While launching the attack, Priest Mu cast a resonant and frosty growl.

"Really? You old b*stard!"

A bland, bone-piercing cold voice came from a distance away. Meanwhile, a water-clear, light-green beam of sword light, that was filled with thriving life-force, dazzled over, penetrated the forehead of Priest Mu and blew his head up.

Chapter 877: Bullying Act

"Shifu!" Ji Hao laughed out in surprise.

Priest Mu's body began shaking while a green light dazzled out of his neck. It transformed into tens of linden leaves, hovered for a wile then formed into a new head of his. However, the bitterness on his face was gone. Instead, anger and shock showed on his face.

"Yu Yu! You..."

Priest Mu screamed with a hoarse voice while another water-clear, light green beam of sword light dazzled windingly over and struck straight down, splitting Priest Mu's body into two.

A silhouette flashed across the air. That was Yu Yu, wearing his vividly red long robe, carrying a wine calabash with the left hand and a cyan-colored sword with his right hand. He dashed swiftly to Ji Hao, then blew towards the broken body of Priest Mu.

A strong gust of wind screamed though Priest Mu's broken body, even pulled up the towering linden tree behind him, and shredded it.

Following Priest Mu's scream and shout, his body collapsed and transformed into a green mist stream. It coiled in the air for a while, then silently shrunk and turned into a fist-sized, crystal linden seed, glowing brightly with a red light as it fell in Yu Yu's hand.

"Hehe, Ji Hao, my good disciple, this is your fortune!" Yu Yu gave a big grin, curved his eyes into a pair of lines while proudly measuring the weight of the seed with his hand.

Priest Mu was a pre-world linden tree, a top-grade powerful creature that was born in the Chaos. Every single branch and leaf of his contained an amazingly great power of creation. After every 129600 years, a linden seed would grow from Priest Mu's true body, and every seed would be cultivated into a clone of his.

With 129600 years of time, a linden seed could grow, that meant every clone of Priest Mu was cultivated with 129600 years of severe efforts! However, who was Priest Mu? The result gained through 129600 years of severe cultivation by ordinary Qi cultivators could never be mentioned in the same breath as the power attained by Priest Mu through 129600 years of severe cultivation.

When Priest Mu cultivated himself, the improvement he attained through every single breath might even equal to the result gained by an ordinary Qi cultivation through a hundred years of severe cultivation. Besides, when a linden seed was cultivated into a clone of his, this clone could also continuously cultivate itself to improve its power constantly.

Twenty-three golden lines were faintly visible on the linden seed held in Yu Yu’s hand. This meant that this clone of Priest Mu had cultivated himself for at least twenty-three times 129600 years!

"Good disciple, my good disciple, you’ve actually made a clone of that crappy wood bleed all over his face!" Yu Yu gave an even larger grin and showed his beautiful, white teeth, shining brightly under the sunshine.

Yu Yu conveniently pointed at the linden seed. Instantly, a cyan-closed beam of sword light fiercely penetrated the seed, and then a shrill howl could be heard from the seed. The slight part of the true spirit of Priest Mu that was hiding inside the linden seed was neatly crushed by Yu Yu with a single strike.

"You are truly my good disciple. Hehe, how can anyone bully my disciples?" Yu Yu was truly delighted and pleased. His disciple cut Priest Mu’s scalp and made him bleed all over his face!

Even though that was only a clone of Priest Mu, but who was Ji Hao? Which level was Ji Hao at currently? And who was Priest Mu? Which level was he at?

Ji Hao was powerful enough to cut Priest Mu’s scalp. Although that was only a clone, this fact was still enough for Yu Yu to flaunt

in front of everyone for ten-thousand years, and make Priest Mu feel so ashamed, even too ashamed to come out of his room for... Hmm, three months?

Yu Yu showed his teeth. Thinking of the shamelessness of Priest Mu and Priest Hua, Yu Yu's face turned slightly dark.

"My good disciple, this treasure is yours now. Go absorb its power, hehe... It's enough for you to reach the grade of peak-level Divine Magus!" Yu Yu glanced across Ji Hao's body, nodded and continued, "Hmm, you have a good foundation, much better than ordinary human beings...But no matter what, this was a clone of that old bastard. It should be more than enough for you to promote yourself to the level of peak Divine Magi!"

Flicking his finger, Yu Yu transformed the seed into a green stream of mist and sent it into Ji Hao's body. Without any extra work to be done by Ji Hao, the seed automatically began burning inside Ji Hao's body. Burned by the essence sun fire, the dense green spirit power quickly transformed into golden light streams, surging into the few Magus acupoints around Ji Hao's heart.

The golden light streams merged together, and gradually, a few tiny golden stars began growing. The number of these tiny stars was speedily growing. The power contained in a clone of Priest Mu was immense, and soon, over seventy speedily expanding golden stars were generated in Ji Hao's body.

By the time this linden seed was burned out and those golden stars attained enough power, they would become new spirit stars! Not long after, in a month at most, Ji Hao would become a powerful Divine Magus with nearly eighty spirit stars.

In his spiritual space, the mysterious man's voice came, "This linden seed can indeed make any other Divine Magus grow into a peak-level one. But, little thing, it's far from enough for you! If you can go get thousands of linden seeds from Priest Mu, those would be enough for you."

Ji Hao’s mouth corner twitched. He pretended he heard nothing.

What a joke! Seriously, what a joke! Snatching thousands of clones from Priest Mu? If that happened, Priest Mu would truly put up a desperate fight against Ji Hao!

Yu Yu grinningly looked at Ji Hao and said, "Normally, I wouldn’t do such a thing as pulling up seedlings to help them grow. But this time, you largely hurt that old bastard’s feelings. For that, I will have to award you with a good one!"

Slapping heavily on Ji Hao’s shoulder, Yu Yu maintained that big grin on his face while he continued, "Besides, this old bastard asked for it. His linden seed continued a great life-force and power of creation. It can improve your physical strength and your cultivation as a Magus, and that too without any future trouble!"

Yu Yu smiled and carried on, "Only top-grade treasures like this will I use on my own disciples. The other medicines or magic herbs mostly will cause future problems. So, I will never let my disciples to improve their cultivation by taking medicines."

Ji Hao clearly understood that what Yu Yu said represented his attitude.

He would never spoil things due to excessive enthusiasm. But if his disciples could do what Ji Hao did today, as making one of his archenemies lose face and attain a great treasure without any side effects from the enemy, Yu Yu would ‘naturally’ make use of the opportunity to give a push and improve the power of his disciples!

Natural and unrestrained, without any worry, this was Yu Yu that Ji Hao knew!

All of a sudden, a fierce and violent gale roared over from all directions. Following that, over a hundred clones of Priest Mu approached from all directions. Every single one of them had tsunami-like waves of green light surging out of their bodies.

"Yu Yu, how dare you kill my clone?! How dare you!" These

clones growled out together.

Yu Yu grinningly raised the cyan-colored long sword held in his right arm. Meanwhile, his mouth corners curved downwards while his pair of dashing eyebrows straightened. A fierce intent of killing reached directly to the sky and stirred the surrounding green light into pieces.

"I, your master Yu Yu, just did it. Bite me!"

"Unhappy? Come, come, come, let’s fight. See if your Master Yu Yu can crush you, you crappy piece of wood!"

Hearing Yu Yu aggressively shouting, Ji Hao couldn’t help but laugh out loud and yelled, "Woah! Shifu! Kick his ass!"

Chapter 878: Shifu and Disciple Join Hands

‘Kick his ass!’

This sounded rude, but was quite satisfying when said out loud. By saying this, Ji Hao felt rather great.

A whole hundred and seven clones of Priest Mu approached from all directions. They, or ‘he’, had clearly heard Ji Hao. The language Ji Hao used came from his previous life, but as a powerful being with immeasurably great power and abilities, Priest Mu immediately understood all the meanings contained in Ji Hao’s words.

The faces of a hundred and seven clones turned green, just like moldy cabbages. Each of them cast a complicated glance at Ji Hao, then one of them pointed his finger froward and let green light spots spurt out of his fingertip. They condensed into a group of crystal spell symbols that looked like jade statues. These spell symbols quickly formed a human-head-sized teleporting magic formation.

A faintly audible spell incantation sound came from a long distance away. A green beam of light dazzled out of the teleporting magic formation, from within which, a linden seed, that had over a thousand golden lines on it, flew out from the magic formation, hovered in the air then transformed into another clone of Priest Mu.

A hundred and eight clones of Priest Mu encircled Yu Yu and Ji Hao, they bowed to Yu Yu, laughed and said, "Yu Yu, my friend, I refuse to accept what happened earlier, as final. Today, let’s continue the fight."

The clone of Priest Mu came through the teleporting magic formation wielded his broad sleeve, then slowly pulled out a branch, that was thickly inlaid with gemstones, pearls and jade pieces, and was coiled by five-colored divine light streams.

"Yu Yu, my friend, you sent a clone transformed from your spirit treasure to this place. I'm afraid it's not appropriate."

The glowing branches flicked slightly in his hand while the gemstones on the branch glistened dazzlingly. This clone of Priest Mu stared at Yu Yu with brightly shining eyes and continued with a low voice, "If I make this clone of you fall in this place, I'm afraid that countless years of severe cultivations of yours would be thrown to the winds, my friend."

"Shifu!" Ji Hao looked at Yu Yu in shock while he cast a deep shout.

It wasn't the real Yu Yu. Instead, it was a clone of his, transformed from his spirit treasure and a trace of his true spirit. This type of clone was much more powerful than Priest Mu's clones. After all, it was transformed from an especially powerful treasure.

However, a hundred and eight clones of Priest Mu were right here. Ji Hao dared not to just make a guess about the combined power of them all.

Yu Yu threw away the wine calabash in his hand, then gently flicked his cyan sword with the forefinger of his left hand. Along with a silvery clang, a stream of sword light was sent up from the sword edge. Within the sword light, ripples were spreading, with faintly visible duckweed in it. The sword light seemed to be free and unrestrained, yet bone-piercingly cold.

"Don't worry, don't worry, they're nothing but a hundred and eight crappy pieces of wood. They can do nothing to your Shifu." Yu Yu narrowed his eyes, smiled and said, "Ji Hao, my good disciple, today, with the two of us together, I will let you witness the 'supreme~divine~magic' of some top-grade prehistorical powerful being!"

When speaking 'supreme divine magic', even with his high status, Yu Yu couldn't help but drawl and raise his voice in a

dramatic tone. Anyone could sense the unconcealed teasing and scorn from his words.

Priest Mu's clones had their looks changed instantly. If Ji Hao attacked him with language, Priest Mu might not be enraged, because, in his eyes, Ji Hao was as weak as an ant. If a man was stung by an ant, he could easily crush the ant, and didn't need to be angry at all. However, being taunted by Yu Yu, who was at the same level as him, Priest Mu only felt that he has lost all his face. Besides, just now, Yu Yu witnessed Ji Hao cut his scalp broken and saw him bleed all over the face. Such a humiliating thing...If Priest Mu couldn't defeat Yu Yu to wash off his shame today, he would be too ashamed to go out and meet anyone for a long period of time, no matter how shameless he could be.

"Yu Yu, my friend, please kindly give your advice regarding my humble magics today."

While speaking, this clone slowly raised that colorfully glowing branch in his hand. Meanwhile, the other clones all raised their branches. The branches held by the other clones had the exact same shape as the one decorated with pearls and gemstones, but had only been glowing with a green light.

Following the moves of that clone, faintly visible golden lotuses could be seen under his feet. He swiftly flashed across the air for a few times, as a strangely-shaped, bloom-like magic formation was built by him in midair.

The power vibration released from all clones connected together. Then, golden streams of light mixed with dense green mist surged out of their bodies. Ji Hao's eyesight was blocked immediately. The flashing lights and shadows, the sky and the earth, all disappeared in his eyes. Instead, he was now surrounded by a boundless sphere of faint golden light, with countless green clouds floating in the light, and strands of silk-like warm mist descending from the clouds.

"This is called ‘great datura Futu devil-defeating formation’ I coincidentally created during the recent meditation." Priest Mu’s body was covered by those clouds, and Ji Hao couldn’t tell exactly where he, or they were. But, his voice could be sensed coming from all directions.

Ji hao wanted to talk, but Yu Yu had already laughed out loud. He wielded his cyan sword and released sharp beams of sword light, hovering around Ji Hao and himself like flying water streams.

The sword lights swished in the air, as clear as water, while Yu Yu laughed, "Before we start, you stupid rotten wood, your Master Yu Yu has something to say."

Priest Mu gave a deep, cold snort and responded, "What do you want to say? Just say it out! Are you going to beg for mercy?"

Yu Yu laughed so loudly that his eyes were squeezed into a pair of lines again. "Beg for mercy? No, no, no, you underestimated your Master Yu Yu too much...I was going to tell you that I will certainly spread the news about what happened today to everyone I know. The head of a clone of yours was actually broken by a disciple of mine, your Master Yu Yu! Ah haha!"

Yu Yu gave a wide grin, showed his shining teeth as he continued, "In the future, when you see Spirit Wa, Dong Gong, and Ximu again, you shall just pull off that old wrinkled face of yours, throw it on the ground and step on it yourself! You old bastard, you’re beaten up by a disciple of your Master Yu Yu!"

A raging howl came from all directions while a tsunami-like wave of green mist wrapped in the faint golden light roared over and bumped into Yu Yu’s sword lights.

The sword lights buzzed and tore a huge cloud of green mist apart. Next, Ji Hao burst with a loud laugh as the Pan Xi divine mirror released a dim stream of light and hovered around Ji Hao’s body for a while. Then, a cylindrical black glow spread out towards

every direction.

The golden light and green mist bumped onto the black glow and generated a slight buzz from the mirror. Right after that, the golden light and green mist disappeared. At the same moment, the golden light and green mist reappeared in the distance on a green cloud, violently clashing against it.

Priest Mu's attack landed on his own magic formation.

A raging growl could then be heard. Meanwhile, that green cloud was shattered thunderously. It turned into a puff of green light spots, rising high into the sky, condensing into an enormous datura flower.

The flower spun, and the bodies of Yu Yu and Ji Hao shook slightly and simultaneously.

Chapter 879: The Fight Between Two Powerful Beings

The strong spirit power crashed down overwhelmingly, like a heavy flood of liquid silver, roaring towards Ji Hao and Yu Yu in an unstoppable and destructive way. The invisible spirit power surrounded them, trying to corrode them, continuously attacking both their bodies and primordial spirits.

That familiar bitterness again…

Ji Hao sensed the bitterness fill every single cell of his body, while a strong despair and emptiness rose from his primordial spirit, that made him want to cut his own throat and end this miserable, hopeless life for no reason. It was an intense emptiness and despair, because of which, Ji Hao felt that he was standing by a bottomless chasm, and a tremendous suction force had been releasing from the chasm, dragging him down into the endless despair and miserableness.

Countless voices could be heard; men, women, old people and young people, they had all been crying and wailing with low voices, telling Ji Hao about their pains and sadness.

The enormous datura flower rotated slowly. On those translucent petals of the flower, countless human faces were faintly visible. If one looked closer, one could even find the faces of some Yu Clan, Jia Clan and Xiu Clan people sparkling on the petals, which was generated by Priest Mu’s magic formation.

"All living beings are miserable, and the sea of bitterness if boundless. Only my mercy can serve as a boat and save you from your miserable life."

Priest Mu’s voice came from all directions. He sighed slightly and said, "Yu Yu, my friend, you know nothing but wielding your swords and taking lives. But do you know that among all lives

you’ve taken, how many were innocent? How many were poor? How many were sad and miserable? You, you’re a great sinner!"

Hearing Priest Mu accusing Yu Yu, Ji Hao’s heart quivered. For unknown reasons, he felt like he had done countless evil things and his hands were all stained with the blood of innocent living beings. He felt to be a true sinner, an unforgiven sinner, and he was eager to kneel down under Priest Mu’s feet to beg Priest Mu to help him wash off his sin.

Yu Yu chuckled, flicked his sword with his finger and let a silvery sword clang rise into the sky.

This clear and bright sword clang woke Ji Hao up and made him shiver intensely. Then, his whole body and mind relaxed, his primordial spirit was freed as well, without any worry or sense of guilt anymore. He abruptly raised his head and yelled out towards Priest Mu, "Priest Mu! You’re a powerful being, an elder, but all you can do are these nasty dirty tricks!"

Taking a deep breath, Ji Hao raised the nine suns spear and challenged Priest Mu with a resonant voice, "If you’re a man, come fight us face to face. Do not hide in the darkness and play these lowly tricks!"

Yu Yu laughed out, raised his sword and continued loudly, "My good disciple is absolutely right. Priest Mu, don’t even try to shake the Dao of mine with all that nonsense of yours. What can this evil trick possibly do?"

The long sword released strands of water-clear sword light while Yu Yu gave a sneer and said, "Did you say that I’ve taken lives? I, your Master Yu Yu, do take lives, with good reason and with perfect justness. Laws and rules do not exist in the Chaos. With this long sword, I, your Master Yu Yu, corrected the rules, supported the laws, punished the evils and helped the good ones, saving countless lives!"

A fierce power vibration was released from Yu Yu that pierced

straight into the heaven. Meanwhile, his whole body transformed into a sharp shining long sword that dazzled so brightly that people couldn't even look directly at it.

"Priest Mu, I, your Master Yu Yu, can tell for sure that every single one who died in my hands died with a good reason! I was in the Chaos for countless years, and I've never killed a single living creature wrongly...I dare to swear this to the universe, you old bastard, do you dare to do the same? Do you even have the guts?!"

Hearing Yu Yu, Ji Hao shouted and laughed, "Shifu! Mighty! Priest Mu! Come out and fight!"

Priest Mu didn't respond. Yu Yu's words left him no space to respond at all. He attempted to shake Yu Yu's heart of Dao with his magic formation, in combination with language. Yet, he was nearly struck down by Yu Yu's fierce and just spirit.

As for Ji Hao's provocation, Priest Mu truly wanted to smash Ji Hao straight to death. But Ji Hao was under the protection of Yu Yu and the Pan Xi divine mirror now. Smashing Ji Hao to death wouldn't be so easy!

Snorting coldly, the one hundred and eight clones of Priest Mu showed up from the air, silently wielded their branches while swiftly moving in the air, along with the complicated curving lines of the magic formation, and rushing towards Yu Yu.

The power vibration released from each clone had combined into one. Their powers were connected, in the magic formation, and the combined power of theirs had been released perfectly. By now, the area sealed by this magic formation was like a toy in their hands, and they could do anything they wanted in this area.

Every single attack launched by them was as dreadful as a destructive natural disaster, seemingly ready to destroy the whole world and perish all living beings in the world.

Yu Yu delightfully grinned, as if he was a predator who had its

eyes fixed on its prey. Treading on a sword light, he dashed out while smoothly raising his sword, slicing, hacking, and sweeping the sword through the air. His moves seemed to be easy and quick, yet a sharp wave of sword light had been released, dazzling all over the sky. It struck on those branches held by Priest Mu's clones, causing them to dim down and made puffs of light spots drift down from them.

Soon, one hundred and eight clones of Priest Mu had Yu Yu encircled, slapping the one hundred and eight branches, including the colorfully shining one, decorated with gemstones and pearls, towards Yu Yu. The moves of these clones seemed to be random and disordered.

Yu Yu only had two arms and one sword. He unhurriedly wielded his sword, yet, he successfully fended every single attack launched by each clone of Priest Mu. No matter how hard those clones attacked, Yu Yu could keep himself three-meter away from all attacks launched by them. Merely judging by the current battle situation, in terms of fighting, Yu Yu was definitely over a hundred percent more powerful than Priest Mu.

Ji Hao was dazzled. Yu Yu's moves seemed to be simple, but actually contained the power of the great Dao. Priest Mu's moves seemed to be radon and disordered, but actually were well arranged and largely changeful. All these deeply attracted Ji Hao, soaking his whole body and soul in the endless, immeasurable mysteriousness of powers. While watching the fight between Yu Yu and Priest Mu, Ji Hao's own fighting skills had been improving as well.

Two top-grade powerful beings were doing a fight with the top-grade fighting skills in the world, right in front of Ji Hao. It was not hard to imagine how much Ji Hao could learn from it. Days ago, Ji Hao couldn't even clearly see the moves of these two powerful beings, neither could he learn anything from them, because they were way too fast, and the magics they used were way

too complicated hard to understand.

But now, Ji Hao's original soul power had been improved by countless times. It was now as great as, and even greater than the original soul power of Po and Gui Ling. It could be compared to the original soul power of any top-grade prehistorical creature. With such a great original soul power, Ji Hao's eyesight was surely much, much better than before.

Ji Hao grasped every single move made by Yu Yu and Priest Mu with his eyes. He learned as much as he could from their moves, enriching his own fighting skills. Gradually, his moves of Sky-opening, earth-splitting, everything grow and everything perish had turned smoother, more powerful and effective.

Abruptly, Yu Yu cast a thunderous growl.

"Zhong!"

Following his strong voice, a clone of Priest Mu was stabbed in the chest. This clone vomited blood and was pushed out from the group.

Ji Hao laughed out loud. This clone immediately turned around and threw a glance at Ji Hao. It pondered for a while and then flicked his finger. Followed by his moves, a hundred and eight glass beads zipped out of his sleeve, striking towards Ji Hao along with thunder-like rumbles.

Chapter 880: Quick Kill

That clone of Priest My threw out a hundred and eight glass beads, then coldly and scornfully snorted and gave a sneer. Next, he wiped the wound on his chest with his right hand and let it heal slowly. Taking a deep breath, he wielded the green branch and joined the group again in attacking Yu Yu.

A warm strand of power rose, while those beads struck down towards Ji Hao along with thunder-like rumbles. Ji Hao looked at these swiftly swishing glass beads and flashed across the air. He straightened his left hand like a blade and left an arc-shaped light stream in the air while combining the moves of sky-opening and earth-splitting, hacking fiercely on the first bead with his hand.

Crack! The bead and the bones of Ji Hao's left hand cracked simultaneously. The skin on the edge of his palm was broken, letting sticky and scorching hot drops of blood eject out, then swishing back into Ji Hao's body.

The bead hacked by Ji Hao let out a cracking noise as well while a hair-thin crack appeared across the entire bead. A large puff of seven-colored mist coiled up from the bead, like ceaseless water streams.

The one hundred and eight clones of Priest Mu turned around simultaneously, staring at Ji Hao in shock.

"How can it be? Is the skin of this little bastard truly so sturdy?"

As the power streams descended, seeming to strike on Ji Hao's body right away, the looks of those clones turned a lot softer. Even if Ji Hao had a sturdy body, that allowed him to crack a glass bead, he would never survive the coming attacks.

"This little bastard will be so unfortunate today."

Those clones laughed together, but as they were distracted by Ji Hao for a single moment, Yu Yu's body had already been shining

with a bright sword light while his cyan sword was launched swiftly like a ragingly pouncing dragon. Immediately, tens of cyan-colored sword light streaks rose into the sky, and next, over thirty clones of Priest Mu were sent flying away, while vomiting blood.

"Damn it! Yu Yu, after today, you will be like a broken mirror, and you will never recover from what you're going to suffer!" Priest Mu's clones growled out furiously. They had no spare attention to pay to Ji Hao, who was an 'insignificant' kid. Instead, they focused on dealing with Yu Yu, a fearful enemy.

The other glass beads zipped over. Ji Hao had already measured the power of these beads. Compared with his own body, these beads were only slightly sturdier, and would not cause any severe threat to him. After finding out the quality of these beads, Ji Hao would never idiotically meet these deeds head on once again. Instead, the Pan Xi divine mirror buzzed, then the dim divine light released from it transformed into a round-shaped screen, firmly shielding Ji Hao behind.

Those glass beads suddenly froze in the air. Meanwhile, the thunder-like fierce power vibration released from them disappeared suddenly. Following a slight buzzing noise, dazzling spell symbols flowed on the surfaces of these beads in streams and sparkled for a while. A splendid seven-colored glow was released, while every bead transformed into a three-meter tall muscular man.

The bodies of these muscular men were translucent and entirely shining with a colorful light. They each held a three-meter-long square, golden stick, with eyes burning with a raging fiery light, fixed right on Ji Hao.

These muscular men moved swiftly like flying dragons, leaving shreds of afterimages around Ji Hao. They slightly wielded their square golden sticks, which stirred the air, causing a sharp swishing noise. Abruptly, one of these muscular men gave an order, and then all muscular men cast a roar. The colorful light

emitted from their bodies grew brighter and transformed into a golden flame lion, roaring thunderously towards the sky. At the same time, a hundred and eight square golden sticks brought up strong gusts of wind, blowing towards Ji Hao from every single direction.

Ji Hao was startled by the sudden roars made by those muscular men. Their voices were incredibly loud, that sounded like ten thousand thunders striking straight on Ji Hao's forehead. It even made smoke puff out of his ears and nostrils, and vibrate his soul out of his body.

Seeing the golden flames burning more and more ragingly behind those muscular men, and those lions that looked more and more like golden statues, Ji Hao's internal organs were vibrating intensively, while his eyes were dazzled. He couldn't even tell directions anymore.

"Lion roar!" Ji Hao murmured with difficulty.

'Lion roar'. In his previous life, Ji Hao had indeed encountered a few people who cultivated themselves with this 'martial art'. Back in his previous life, magic barely existed in the world, and 'lion roar' had already degenerated into a 'martial art'. But right now, what these muscular men had been casting was the genuine, original version of 'lion roar', the version with 'magic'!

The wave of thunderous roar almost shook Ji Hao into parts. Ji Hao's limbs were now limp, and he could barely grip the nine suns spear, nearly letting it drop from his hand.

Seeing those square golden sticks smash down along with fierce gales, Ji Hao didn't even have the strength to dodge, but could only watch those sticks approach him.

Fortunately, he had the Pan Xi divine mirror.

With some solid efforts, Ji Hao barely maintained a slight consciousness, and with that, he activated a thin stream of spirit

power, giving a clear order to the Pan Xi divine mirror. As a deep, divine light flashed across the mirror, a misty stream of light was released from it, swiftly coiling around those square golden sticks.

A puffing noise could then be heard without an end. Those square golden sticks were made from pure gold mixed with a great number of divine metal materials. But suddenly, these metal sticks turned glowing red sticks with smoke puffing up, as they were forcibly transformed into ‘earth lung explosive flame crystal’ sticks by the mirror! The earth lung explosive flame crystal was the most unstable type of natural material in the world.

In shock, those muscular men lowered their heads, looked at their sticks which had already turned into glowing-red crystal sticks. Their eyes sparkled brightly, but before they figured out what had just happened, these unstable sticks turned by the mirror exploded intensely. Flame swallowed these muscular men while the strong explosive force sent them far away.

"Eh?"

On the other side, clones of Priest Mu, who had been fighting against Yu Yu, couldn’t restrain the shock in their hearts. They turned around, looked at Ji Hao, and were all stunned.

Did Ji Hao just break the golden steel datura magic formation formed by those muscular men in such a weird way?

The steel datura magic formation was a pure killing magic formation. Priest Mu created it with a great effort, for strengthening and expanding his sect in the future. The formation was mainly designed as a security one to guard the base of his sect, after his sect reached an ideal scale. Therefore, this magic formation was powerful and violent, and was controlled by the one hundred and eight powerful magic guards secretly cultivated by himself. In Priest Mu’s estimation, even if the few elder disciples of Yu Yu were here, the magic formation could stall them for quite a while.

Nevertheless, with the immeasurable power of the Pan Xi divine mirror, Ji Hao broke the magic formation so easily. Was that even true?

"Good treasure!" A clone of Priest Mu sighed, but before he voice faded, Yu Yu’s sword pierced into his throat and almost cut his head down.

Ji Hao laughed out loud while spreading his spirit power out, locking the one hundred and eight muscular men who were sent flying away.

The Pan Xi divine mirror quaked and released a hundred and eight beams of divine light, accurately landing on the heads of those muscular men. Silently, the defensive powers of those muscular men were speedily weakened by the mirror, quickly down to zero.

Ji Hao wielded the nine suns spear. An arc-shaped light beam sparkled in the air as it sliced across the air in a mysterious way. Then, the spearhead landed on the necks of all those muscular men almost simultaneously, even though Ji Hao had only launched one strike. Shrill howls were generated right away, following which, the heads of those muscular men flew up into the sky while their bodies collapsed, turning back into glass beads.

Ji Hao reached out his arm and grasped all one hundred and eight glass beads in the hands.

The Pan Xi divine mirror quaked once again, released another one hundred and eight beams of divine light, dazzling towards the clones of Priest Mu.

Chapter 881: The Trace of the Devil

"Eh, I didn't think you crappy piece of wood can do things like this!" Yu Yu saw the whole process when Ji Hao killed those muscular men, and couldn't help but praise loudly when those men transformed back into glass beads.

Only with a single glance, Yu Yu saw through these human-shaped battle machines. Priest Mu and his brother Priest Hua were good at making plans. Their fierceness and persistence even made Yu Yu praise. However, they seemed to be poorly talented in tool-crafting, in terms of which, they were not even as good as Yu Yu, not to mention Yu Yu's two brothers, who were known as the best magic pill maker and treasure maker in the world.

But this time, unexpectedly, Yu Yu saw that Priest Mu had made a batch of magic guards with divine metal materials and some special ingredients. In addition to that, these magic guards could form a powerful magic formation to trap and kill the enemies. This was quite genius.

Yu Yu had to admit that Priest Mu had improved his tool-crafting skills largely, and even had created a unique style of his own.

But the more had Priest Mu improved, the more violently Yu Yu launched his moves. Although there wasn't any bone-deep hatred between Priest Mu and himself, why would the competition between two sects need any excuse or reason? Sooner or later, this competition would generate an endless hared. Yu Yu was a wise being, and was clearly aware of this.

Sooner or later, a massive war would burst between these two sects. The more Priest Mu had improved, the better he performed, the harder Yu Yu should strike him. Right now, Yu Yu should just kill a few more clones of him and weaken his power even more largely.

Every clone of Priest Mu, every linden seed of his, was condensed

from Priest Mu's spirit power mixed with the essence of his true body. Losing one or two might be nothing to Priest Mu, but if he lost over a hundred of them all at once, Priest Mu would be affected rather badly.

The sword-like stream roared across the air like dragons. As cyan-colored sword light streams fiercely hacked down through the sky, those vividly green branches were chopped into pieces, while the robes worn by those clones were cut. Some of those clones even had their limbs cut off, and blood with a nice aroma spurt out from their bodies. While Yu Yu was crazily hacking at these clones, the divine light beams released from the Pan Xi divine mirror under Ji Hao's will arrived.

Facing Yu Yu's crazy attacks, Priest Mu's clones were too busy to be distracted. The divine light beams struck on the bodies of the one hundred and seven clones of Priest Mu, softening their bodies immediately. Under the effect of the divine light from the mirror, the powers of Priest Mu's clones were dispelled for less than 1/10000 second. Within this short span of time, all defensive magics cast by them disappeared.

"Break!" Yu Yu laughed out wildly. He turned around and released a miles long, entirely clear and green sword light stream. That finger-thick stream of sword light was as flexible as a snake, that coiled around the bodies of those clones and then hacked down

The one hundred and seven clones of Priest Mu growled out together. Then, their bodies blasted into a bright green light. The green light condensed into over a hundred fist-sized beautifully green linden seeds and zipped up into the sky, fleeing towards different directions as they left sharp green light beams behind.

Looking at these fleeing linden seeds, Yu Yu laughed out loud once again, and so did Ji Hao. Above Ji Hao's head, the immemorial sun streamer released a strong golden essence sun fire that transformed into a giant golden web. It spread and then

tightened, capturing all one hundred and seven linden seeds. Ji Hao grabbed the web back, carrying all linden seeds in his hand.

The web of essence sun fire burned ragingly. Inside the web, those linden seeds were still vibrating intensely, attempting to break the net and flee. However, they were all harmed severely by Yu Yu before, and now, no matter how hard they tried to struggle, they were still as soft as a frog which was boiled in the water for ten days. How could they ever leap up again?

A bright spot of divine light sparkled in the Pan Xi divine mirror. Ji Hao sensed the mirror's craving. Therefore, he activated the mirror and let it scan across this linden seed. Shrill screams were instantly generated from these seeds as the true spirits of Priest Mu contained in these seeds were killed. Next, the especially pure true spirit power from Priest Mu transformed into extremely thin beams of green light, slowly rose from these seeds and gradually flew into the mirror.

The Pan Xi divine mirror shivered in happiness while airily hovering around Ji Hao, as if it was a puppy which just had a nice meal. The mirror took a few circles around Ji Hao, then intimately rubbed Ji Hao's forehead.

That true spirit came from Priest Mu himself. The quantity was indeed not large, but the quality was amazingly high. For a supreme pre-world treasure like the Pan Xi divine mirror, its pursuit of powers was not based on quantity anymore. Instead, the quality of power meant everything to it. After the mirror devoured the true spirit from Priest Mu, all understanding attained by Priest Mu regarding the great Dao of nature of Pan Gu world and the mysteriousness of nature, now belonged to the mirror.

Ji Hao clearly sensed that the connection between the mirror and himself had turned tighter by at least one hundred percent. He could now release a stronger power of the mirror, and as a treasure from Pan Xi world, this mirror had now even built a tighter connection between Pan Gu world. It could now manipulate the

natural powers in this world to a much greater extent, an amazing extent.

The only remaining clone of Priest Mu fended himself from the Pan Xi mirror's divine light just now, with the colorfully shining branch holding in his hand, and survived the lethal hack launched by Yu Yu. However, before he could negotiate with Yu Yu, Ji Hao had already done all the work.

Those linden seeds landed in Ji Hao's hands, and the true spirit was killed and devoured by the Pan Xi divine mirror!

The last clone trembled in anger. He turned away from Ji Hao and put all his attention to Yu Yu.

"Yu Yu, my friend, today, I came here to chase a group of evil beings and to take out a great threat for the whole Pan Gu world." Priest Mu's eyes shone with a bright green light as he looked at Yu Yu and said harshly, "My friend, you ruined my plan today, so you shall take all the consequences and sins that will be caused in the future."

Ji Hao laughed out loud from the side and said, "Eh? Priest Mu, are you saying that you've been stupidly waiting in the sea for those evil beings to come to you by themselves?"

Laughing coldly, Ji Hao continued with a deep voice, "But why have I heard that you and those evil beings are on the same side?"

Yu Yu raised his long and dashing eyebrows, looking at Priest Mu with a faint smile.

Priest Mu blinked his eyes, then abruptly turned to Ji Hao and responded, "Ignorant little kid, I am a decent cultivator. How can I ever have anything to do with those outer space devils?"

Ji Hao clapped his hands and laughed, "Good, outer space devils, I didn't even know they are from the outer space until you mentioned it!" Clicking his tongue, Ji Hao continued, "So, Priest Mu, how exactly did you collude with them?"

Priest Mu paused briefly again, then he watchfully pointed at Ji Hao, prepared to shout. But all of a sudden, a five-colored mist rose from around him, while an especially silvery voice giggled and said, "Found you, hee hee, I couldn’t deal with the real you. But it’s fine for me to take a clone of you first!"

Priest Mu shivered, then his green pair of eyes abruptly turned colorful and misty.

Chapter 882: Two Powerful Beings

While giggling, ‘Priest Mu’ ogled at Yu Yu, with his colorfully shining, misty eyes.

Yu Yu was a powerful cultivator. He had been through countless great storms in this world. Even if all beautiful girls from the legendary Qing Qiu Country ogled at him together, Yu Yu’s heart of Dao would never, ever be shaken. To Yu Yu, beautiful women couldn’t even compare with a drifting cloud in the distance. Nevertheless, the one ogling at him just now was Priest Mu!

Looking at that familiar face and the flirting smile on that face, Yu Yu couldn’t help but shiver intensively. Embarrassedly, he flashed across the air and dashed to Ji Hao. Slapping on Ji Hao’s shoulder, Yu Yu pointed at Priest Mu, who was now with a weird look and voice, and asked, "Is this that devil thing?"

Ji Hao seriously nodded. His seed of Dao was activated, letting a golden beam of light out of his erect eye. It transformed into a transparent golden spell symbol and flew towards Yu Yu. Through the spell symbol, Ji Hao told Yu Yu about everything happened earlier, such as Po, Gui Ling and himself encountering those sky devils outside the devil-suppressing divine palace. He gave every detail to Yu Yu, except for the fact that he had digested some sky devils with the small caldron inside his body.

Gently touching the spell symbols with his finger, Yu Yu understood in a moment what Ji Hao, Po and Gui Ling had been through, and what those sky devils were like. Looking at Priest Mu, who looked at Yu Yu with his misty eyes and had been twisting his waist, Yu Yu silently took out an exquisitely crafted recording talisman and began recording Priest Mu’s weird performance.

While recording Priest Mu, Yu Yu laughed silently, with his teeth shining brightly.

"Ji Hao, this stupid wood and his brother, that crappy flower, value their dignity the most. But they are also the most shameless ones. Without a proof, they would never admit the things they've done. Whatever they've done, they would always pass the buck to the others."

"But this time, I, your genius Shifu, am recording this ugly face of this piece of wood. With this record, I can at least gain a pool of pure virtue water from him."

Yu Yu said with his pair of eyebrows raised in excitement, "That pure virtue water doesn't have much function, but if your elder uncle makes it into spirit fruit wine with the thirty-six-thousand types of spirit fruit in this world, that will taste...Ah, I can't even describe it!" Yu Yu clicked his tongue.

Ji Hao was also looking at Priest Mu, whose eyes were shining brighter and brighter with that colorful light. Obviously, the sky devil was occupying Priest Mu's body step by step. "But Shifu, don't you worry that they might start a life-risking fight against you when you send this record to their sect?" said Ji Hao in a lowered voice.

Yu Yu grinned. A fierce sword light flashed across his white shining teeth as he gave a frosty laugh and responded, "A life-risking fight against me? Only if they have the abilities! If my two brothers didn't stop me, back then I..."

An overwhelming intent of killing spread out, tightening every single pore of Ji Hao and squeezing a bone-piercing coldness out of his pores. Just now, Yu Yu accidentally released an intent of killing. That intent of killing wasn't released towards Ji Hao, but it made Ji Hao feel that the world was turned upside down, and was going to be crushed by Yu Yu right before his eyes.

Ji Hao sensed a great terror, as if he couldn't control his life and death anymore, and he was like a worm in a thunderstorm, that could die at any moment. Facing the intent of killing released by

Yu Yu, Ji Hao silently thought that even if he could improve further by a hundred times, even a thousand times, Yu Yu would still be able to crush him in a flash with a single finger.

That was the true power of Yu Yu!

That was the true dreadfulness of Yu Yu!

Nevertheless, this Yu Yu standing in front of them was only a clone, transformed from the spirit treasure of the real Yu Yu! Ji Hao couldn't even imagine exactly how powerful the real Yu Yu was, and exactly what level he was at.

Fortunately, this intent of killing faded right away. Yu Yu stopped laughing, and said to Ji Hao mildly, "Cultivators like us are free, away from all worldly affairs. What we are supposed to pursue is the eternal great Dao of nature, the ultimate secret of the great Dao. Things like fighting and killing, I did a lot when I was young and angry. Back then, I often pulled out my swords to hack the others. But in the recent years, I rarely do the same, just having my hands itchy all the time."

Showing a serious look that a Shifu was supposed to have, Yu Yu then smiled to Ji Hao and continued, "Ji Hao, my good disciple, you have to remember this... As cultivators, we need to cultivator our hearts and cultivate our original nature... You have to keep this in your mind!"

Before he finished his speech, the sky devil had already brought the surviving clone of Priest Mu under complete control.

With that wrinkled and bitter face, 'Priest Mu' abruptly chuckled, then smilingly waved his hand towards Yu Yu and said, "Ahyaya, this handsome priest here, is your name Yu Yu? Hehe, what a good name!"

Twisting his waist, 'Priest Mu' made a sexy posture, naughtily blinked his left eye and gave Yu Yu a wink. Next, with a strong amorous feeling, 'Priest Mu' crooked hi scrawny and wrinkled

right forefinger towards Yu Yu!

Imagine a bitter looking, scrawny and wrinkled old man, who had absolutely no extra flesh on his face, making a posture of a young girl and winking at oneself, even trying to flirt...

Ji Hao only felt that his internal organs twitched, that even made him throw up.

This sky devil was so impatient. She had just accepted this clone of Priest Mu and didn't even have the time to transform the shape of this body. But, she had already started to play her old trick! Yet, Priest Mu truly had an indescribably ugly appearance! As an old tree that lived in a river valley for billions of years, he was now trying to behave like a young girl in a brothel... This strong visual contrast just made Ji Hao want to vomit for a long while.

Abruptly seeing this creepy performance of Priest Mu, Yu Yu was enraged immediately. Once again, that destructive intent of killing rose into the sky, along with the tsunami-like power vibration released from his sword. This was despite the fact that the few words he just told Ji Hao to remember 'we need to cultivator our hearts, cultivate our original nature', were still lingering in his mouth.

"How dare you do such a thing? You evil being! This old bastard is indeed stupid, but he's still not for you to insult like this!"

The intent of killing spread in the air while Yu Yu pulled out his long sword with a storm of anger. He leaped straight up, wielded the sword and attempted to kill 'Priest Mu'.

Clang! A one-foot long colorful needle abruptly showed up around Priest Mu's body. The crystal clear needle had a faint glow, and was rather powerful. This strike launched by Yu Yu had actually been blocked by this thin and light needle.

"Where are you from?" Yu Yu sounded a lot more serious than before.

"This body is not bad as well. In this case, I shall just accept it." A beautiful, colorfully shining silhouette flashed out from the air. The silhouette was entirely shining, looked like a white jade statue. It chucked, then curled up and pounced on Yu Yu.

"Yu Zun, you're too impatient...But indeed, such a good body is not easy to found. This time, I'll just let you be the first."

Another silhouette walked out from the air. This silhouette was surrounded by a faint cyan smoke, looking like a cyan-colored rainbow shining out of the air. It stood aside while chuckling.

'Priest Mu' politely kneeled and kowtowed to that cyan-colored silhouette and said, "Ancestor Xia Zun, ancestor Yu Zun."

Ji Hao's heart drummed. Xia Zun and Yu Zun, were those the powerful ones among the sky devils?

Chapter 883: Fight the Devil

Yu Zun chuckled. That faint silhouette of hers wrapped in light cyan-colored mist, flashed across the air and approached Yu Yu swiftly.

She raised her right hand and pierced that foot-long colorful needle towards the spot between Yu Yu's eyebrows, along with a sharp buzzing noise. The needle was even thinner than a hair, a slight beam of colorful light releasing from it. Meanwhile, Yu Zun remained chuckling.

Once Yu Zun moved, countless abnormal scenes appeared in Ji Hao's eyesight. He saw a large number of nameless types of flowers bloom. These flowers looked as holy and pure as lotuses, yet as colorful as poppy. Petals still with their covers swayed in the air without being blown by any wind. And in these gradually blooming flowers, countless beautiful girls with jade-smooth skins had been slightly and airily twisting their bodies, exhibiting their perfect bodies.

The looks of these girls were pure and innocent, like the snow on top of the tallest mountain in the world, not stained by any dust. However, their bodies were s*xy and coquettish. Ji Hao clearly saw some changes that happened in the most private parts of their bodies, while the slight streams of enchanting aroma that could shake anyone's soul spread out from their bodies.

The seed of Dao had been blazing in Ji Hao's body, but sensing this magical aroma, the flame around the seed of Dao was disturbed. Ji Hao sensed a piercing pain from his heart, then a stream of blood was squeezed out of his mouth to far away.

Ji Hao shouted out in shock. Yu Zun wasn't attacking him. Her main target was Yu Yu, and Ji Hao had only been looking at her from a distance away. But still, Ji Hao was harmed by her without knowing how!

These sky devils were indeed mysterious and immeasurable, truly powerful!

As Ji Hao vomited blood, the Pan Xi divine mirror buzzed automatically. The mirror had just absorbed the true spirit came from Priest Mu and became like a living being. It flew to above Ji Hao's head, facing the top of Ji Hao's head with sparkling light beams flashing on its ink-dark surface. Next, countless water-clear but pure black light spots descended from the surface of the mirror. These light spots were condensed from tiny spell symbols, crystal clear and bone-piercing cold.

Those light spots landed on Ji Hao's body, instantly after which, five-colored mist puffed out from Ji Hao's body. Yu Zun attacked Yu Yu and Ji Hao cast a glance at her, but this powerful poisonous mist that could cause illusions had already entered into Ji Hao's body.

The light spots released from the mirror could dispel evil things. As the poisonous smoke was forced out of Ji Hao's body, Ji Hao's primordial spirit was cooled down and soon, he cleared his head. Slightly gasping, a golden flame flashed across Ji Hao's body, burning all the poisonous smoke out.

Settling his mind, Ji Hao began incanting the spell which he learned from a Daoist book back in his previous life, and was created especially for suppressing sky devils.

Without any glow or coiling mist, only a faintly sensible power vibration covered the seed of Dao of sun. This power vibration layer was fragile and thin, yet, it could perfectly suppress the power of sky devils. Ji Hao looked at Yu Zun again, and he still sensed that tsunami-like evil power coming at him. But this time, his seed of Dao stayed as stable as a towering mountain. The thin layer of power vibration had been quaking, fending against the evil power released from Yu Zun with difficulty yet determinedly.

Yu Yu had been smoothly wielding his long sword. Water-clear

streams of cyan sword light dazzled all over the sky, like a nimble flying snake. The long needle in Yu Zun's hand seemed to be made perfectly for Yu Yu's sword, and clanged against the sword over and over again, leaving that slight beam of colorful light in the sky. Loud clangs could be heard without an end. Every time the needle and the sword clashed against each other, an extremely thin beam of colorful light would drill into Yu Yu's sword.

Gradually, Yu Yu's sword was added with a colorful glow, as if a five-colored gemstone sheath had been put on it.

Ji Hao was dumbfounded. Although this was only a clone of Yu Yu, it was transformed from the spirit treasure and a part of the true spirit of Yu Yu, and was incredibly powerful. But fighting against Yu Yu, Yu Zun hadn't fallen into a disadvantage. Ji Hao estimated that even Po and Gui Ling couldn't rival Yu Zun, not even by joining hands!

Yu Zun was worthy to be the 'ancestor' among sky devils.

During the process of thinking, Ji Hao had also been carefully learning the art of sword performed by Yu Yu. Subconsciously, he wilded the nine suns spear. The golden, shining spear slowly tore the air open and raised a seven to eight feet long, water-clear and cold stream of light.

"Hehe, is your sword still working?" Yu Zun chuckled again and said, "It was struck so heavily by me for so many times. I'm afraid it's already getting more and more inconvenient, isn't it?"

Yu Yu sneered and shook the long sword in his hand. Following a cracking noise, the five-colored light wrapped on the sword shattered, then he conveniently lunged the sword.

His move was as simple as a move made by a kid while playing with a wooden stick, that could even be counted as a childish move. Nevertheless, this move was made so smoothly that it made Ji Hao feel that no one in the world could ever possibly dodge it.

Yu Zun paused. Meanwhile, Yu Yu had already moved across and even brushed against her body. The long sword brought up another sharp beam of sword light while easily cutting through her throat. Along with a shrill scream, a cloud of jade-colored mist puffed out from her neck. She covered her neck with both of her hands, then transformed into a jade-colored mist stream, swooshing tens of miles away.

Standing on a cloud, Yu Zun screamed with anger, "This one is awfully powerful. Join hands with me, whoever kills this one can have his body!"

Xia Zun, who had been standing aside and watching the fight, laughed with a sweet and soft voice. She twisted her slim waist while chuckling, then said, "Why didn't you say that earlier? How does that sword strike feel like?"

The power vibration released from Yu Zun changed, turning especially mysterious. The power vibration was strong and intense as she responded with a deep, vicious voice, "Not good. Do not let his sword touch you. The strike he launched just now almost killed me. This man's sword intent...It can reach straight to the true nature through all unrealness. He is the invincible enemy of our kind. Be careful, be extra careful, this man's sword intent is extremely powerful."

Reaching straight to the true nature through all unrealness. Hearing this, Ji Hao looked at Yu Yu with great admiration.

The sword move Yu Yu launched just now seemed to be quite simple, yet it was actually incomparably ingenious. Ji Hao had already boosted his spirit power up as much as he could, but still, he only managed to understand less than ten-thousandth of that sword move.

A high-pitched scream could then be heard, along with which, Yu Zun and Xia Zun rose into the sky, transformed into a dense, colorful mist and descended towards Yu Yu.

Ji Hao had been concentratedly watching the fight. All of a sudden, a fierce gust of wind blew over as ‘Priest Mu’ curved his body and launched a twisted attack, with that colorful branch of his, that was decorated with gemstones. ‘Priest Mu’s face was still filled with a ‘flirting' grin.

Ji Hao snorted coldly and sent out a stream of spirit power to keep watching the fight between Yu Yu and the two sky devils, then wielded the nine suns spear with both of his hands and lunged fiercely towards ‘Priest Mu’.

‘Priest Mu’ had been releasing a strong evil power from his body, but Ji Hao wouldn’t be tricked by it anymore. His eyes were as clear as water while his mind was calm and settled. The nine suns spear swished in the air along with a beautiful arc, dodged the branch held in ‘Priest Mu’s hand, and pierced deeply into ‘Priest Mu’s chest.

Without the power of enchantment, sky devils turned out to be just ordinary.

Ji Hao launched the move of sky-opening with the spear, and easily and severely harmed ‘Priest Mu’.

Chapter 884: Coming One After Another

Sky devils were terrifying because they were traceless, and targeted especially the original souls. When they greedily occupied the bodies of the others, despite the fact that they could still have their great magic powers, they would be affected by the bodies that they occupied without a doubt.

Just like ‘Priest Mu’, who had been crazily slapping Ji Hao with that branch held in his hand. He was literally slapping at random, just like an old woman from the countryside trying to drive a hen out of her kitchen. His moves were rude and simple, without any plan.

The spear punctured ‘Priest Mu’s body, and the essence sun fire silently burned on his body.

‘Priest Mu’ was a powerful being, and was a prehistorical spirit linden tree. His nature was that of a ‘divine tree’. Ji Hao’s essence sun fire was the most powerful type of fire in the world, the natural enemy of all kinds of spirit trees. The fire burned ‘Priest Mu’s body and made the sky devil inside his body scream in pain. She became angrier and angrier, waved the branch and tried to whip Ji Hao even harder, attempting to kill him with this powerful piece of branch.

However, Ji Hao trod upon a golden light while his body transformed from a hazy golden shred of shadow. The nine suns spear had been lunged by him over and over again, generating a strong wave of attack, as fierce and swift as a thunderstorm. Countless extremely thin beams of golden light penetrated ‘Priest Mu’s body, leaving holes on him. Inside every puncture wound, a stream of golden essence sun fire had been burning silently and unhurriedly. The sky devil in the body tried her best to kill the fire, yet the purely positive fire was her natural suppressor. No matter how hard she tried, the tiny flames remained unmoving in the wounds, burning steadily and continuously.

"Damn it!" ‘Priest Mu’ shouted. A colorful mist puffed up from his head. A beautiful girl was standing upon the cloud, holding a jade drum in her hand. She gave a sweet smile to Ji Hao, with her eyes sparkling with a watery light.

Ji Hao shivered slightly. That thin layer of devil-suppressing power vibration quaked intensely around his seed of Dao. With a solid difficulty but still determinedly, Ji Hao fended against the power of the girl, keeping his mind calm and clear.

"Zhong!"

Ji Hao roared out while the spear pierced violently into the spot between ‘Priest Mu’s eyebrows, leaving a beautiful arc in the air.

The three-feet and six-inches long spearhead penetrated ‘Priest Mu’s head, making him scream shrilly. A hazy shred of shadow flashed out of ‘Priest Mu’s body, but before it fled far, it was swallowed up by a dim stream of divine light released from the Pan Xi divine mirror.

Gradually, Ji Hao started to discover more magical functions of the mirror. For example, it could create a space inside itself to serve as a prison. The mirror was incredibly sturdy, and ordinary people could never, ever escape if they were trapped inside the mirror.

Ji Hao immediately imprisoned the sky devil escaped from ‘Priest Mu’s body, then swung his arm backward and cruelly beheaded ‘Priest Mu’. ‘Priest Mu’s body exploded and transformed into green light, dazzling for miles. Then, it merged back and transformed into a linden seed that had over a thousand golden lines on it, landing in Ji Hao’s hand.

Ji Hao grinned happily, squeezing his eyes into curved lines. These over a thousand golden lines on the linden seed meant that this clone of Priest Mu was created in 129600 times over a thousand years ago, and it was unimaginably powerful.

"Elder Priest Mu, you've been way too nice, you gave me so many gifts. How should I thank you for all this?" Ji Hao happily made a joke, then largely opened his mouth and swallowed this most precious linden seed.

Streams of essence sun fire rose from his internal organs, surrounded the seed and burned it, transforming the seed into a glowing green mist. Wrapped in the flame, the small caldron in Ji Hao's lower abdomen slightly moved and swallowed the mist, then released an enormous stream of golden sunlight, surging into every acupoint of Ji Hao's body.

In over a thousand acupoints, dim golden light spots emerged. These were over a thousand spirt stars, expanding and growing inside Ji Hao's body. Normally, a peak-level Divine Magus could have eighty-one spirit stars at most. Then, he or she would be able to try to break into the level of Supreme Magus. But Ji Hao now had over a thousand spirit stars emerged in his body. When these stars matured, although he might not be able to rival Supreme Magi, he would certainly be invincible among Divine Magi.

As those spirit stars continued growing, Ji Hao's body was nourished by the strong life-force and power of creation that came from that linden seed. His whole body was burning, scorching hot, while perspiration oozed out of his skin drop by drop. His skin, muscles, tendons, bones, marrow, blood veins, neurons, internal organs, and brain...Every part of him was improving and strengthening at an amazing speed.

Ji Hao's blood was changing, turning more and more sticky, heavier and heavier. It was gradually becoming the original version of Pan Gu spirit blood. If one looked closer, one would find a faintly sensible layer of original natural power emerging from Ji Hao's skin. It was cold, and seemed like an immemorial power, holy and majestic.

"Wonderful!" The mysterious man's voice came slowly from the spiritual space.

A series of clangs could be heard without an end. The two sky devils launched a massive wave of attack on Yu Yu. They didn't occupy any fleshy body. Therefore, they fought against Yu Yu with their usual forms. They moved magically fast and flexibly; their powers were fierce and nearly inexhaustible.

Yu Yu's long and wide sleeves fluttered in the air while he was wielding the long sword freely, keeping himself away from all attacks launched by the two devils.

Noticing that Ji Hao took out a sky devil, the one transformed from Priest Mu, so easily, then directly swallowed the linden seed of the clone of Priest Mu, Yu Yu was rather delighted, and laughed out wildly.

"My good disciple, today, I'm going to teach you a set of sword moves! That spear of yours is indeed good, but it's way too violent, best to be used in wars. It doesn't fit the style of cultivators like us. When I have the time, I will find you a top-grade sword. But today, you shall just memorize this sword move."

Yu Yu was thrilled by this intense fight, and decided to teach Ji Hao some sword art right now. Ji Hao even screamed out in excitement.

"Yes! Shifu!"

Yu Yu smilingly nodded, then put his left forefinger and middle finger together, slowly taking a few steps according to the positions of the seven stars of Big Dipper. Meanwhile, he raised the long sword with his right hand. Thus, a seemingly slow and gentle set of sword moves, that was actually lethally fierce, able to even to cut the sky, was made by Yu Yu.

Once this set of sword move was made, a series of puffing noise was generated, as nearly a thousand holes appeared on the bodies of the two sky devils.

The two sky devils screamed ragingly and released sky-devouring

waves of power, spreading out in all directions.

In midair, countless sparkling streams of mist condensed into legendary creatures and beautiful girls, flying towards Yu Yu and Ji Hao.

With a single glance, Ji Hao saw thirty to forty thousand sky devils approaching!

Chapter 885: Four Powerful Beings Come Out Together

From hundreds of miles away, those sky devils had already sent an overwhelming wave of spirit power attacks towards Yu Yu and Ji Hao.

Illusions generated by the powers of those sky devils struck Ji Hao's soul and made the defensive devil-suppressing power vibration around the seed of Dao of sun vibrate intensively, almost making it collapse. Seeing that the defense was about to be broken and he was going to face the joint-handed attack launched by tens of thousands of sky devils, Ji Hao gave a resonant roar and hurriedly pointed at the Pan Xi divine mirror. A dark stream of water splashed out of the mirror surface which was clear and cold, soaking Ji Hao's entire body. Ji Hao activated the Pan Xi divine mirror with all of his power, finally released a cooling divine light that could fend against sky devils.

Yu Yu was fighting against the two powerful sky devils at the moment. Meanwhile, he chuckled, turned around and quickly pointed at Ji Hao.

A magic formation blueprint, that seemed to be old and gray, slowly rose from between Ji Hao's eyebrows, hovered in the wind and expanded to hundreds of thousands of miles in radius. Gently yet firmly, it covered the whole area up. Next, four swords zipped out from Ji Hao's body and released strong power vibrations. Four sword light beams dazzled straight into the sky, even leaving four huge holes in the sky. The four enormous swords stood on the four corners of the blueprint, giving an unstoppable intent of killing to seal the space and time. This whole area was sealed completely.

"Let's do it together! These devils are quite interesting!"

Yu Yu's voice was clear and resonant, cold and filled with the intent of killing as it came from the sky. The space was cut open by

a sharp stream of sword light, and from the space rip, Yu Yu walked out. Wearing that vividly red long robe, carrying the wine calabash in his left hand and an exquisite small drum on his right hand, Yu Yu walked down from the air step by step with a serious look.

"Little brother, you're right... These devils are truly interesting!"

An unhurried and vigorous voice also came from the sky. Another huge hole appeared in the sky as an enormous chariot descended. The chariot was wrapped in coiling, warm purple mist, with a dense cloud rolling above it. Inside the cloud, countless stars were faintly visible. Tens of cranes with glowing-white feathers surrounded the chariot. These cranes were huge in shape, their eyes sparkled as brightly and beautifully as stars, and the power vibration released from them was dreadfully strong. The power vibration released from each crane was even multiple times greater than that of Ji Hao.

Sitting straight in the chariot was a middle-aged Daoist priest, wearing a purple robe. His left hand fiddled with a jade ruyi with embossment of dragons and tigers while his right hand gently pressed on the vaguely visible, dim-golden and translucent seal.

The middle-aged priest was handsome, with a glowing and wrinkle-less face. His eyes shone as bright as the sun in the sky, that ordinary people wouldn’t even dare to look directly at those eyes. His entire body was surrounded by coiling purple mist, with waves of indescribable, prehistorical power of Dao surging out from his body. Around twenty-five meters away from his body, the power of Dao he released condensed into countless purple characters, sparkling in the air. Those characters were actually numerous extremely ancient scriptures regarding the cultivation of Dao.

Ji Hao looked at the priest in a purple robe. Although Ji Hao had never seen him before, once he saw this man, he seemed to hear that the whole world was telling with an universe-shaking loud

voice — This was Yu Yu's second brother, Qing Wei.

A colossal pressure came towards Ji Hao, pressing down to him like a mountain. Ji Hao showed a solemn look and lowered his head to show his respect to Priest Qing Wei, then deeply bowed.

Instantly, this destructive pressure, that was great enough to crush Ji Hao's soul, became as gentle and warm as the breeze and drizzle in spring. A hot stream of power was sent into Ji Hao's body while three purple lotuses spun above Ji Hao's head, then quickly merged with Ji Hao's body.

A pure, nearly inexhaustible power of Dao surged into Ji Hao's body and merged with the seed of Dao of sun. The seed of Dao shone with a splendid golden light. Meanwhile, Ji Hao's power of Dao began improving speedily. Within a single second, Ji Hao's power of Dao became ten times greater than before! All these were only the small rewards given to Ji Hao by Priest Qing Wei when he cast a glance at Ji Hao and found that Ji Hao was quite polite, and had shown him enough respect!

Golden streams of mist rose from Ji Hao's head and formed a three-feet wide, small cloud above his head. At the moment, Ji Hao's cultivation of Dao had stepped to a considerable stage. Merely with his power of Dao, he was now powerful enough to rival any high-level Divine Magus.

Priest Qing Wei, what a terrifying man! If Ji Hao had shown any disrespect towards him just now, he would have suffered quite badly without a doubt. But once Ji Hao showed his respect to Priest Qing Wei, he was awarded immediately. Instantly, Ji Hao understood that, disciples of Priest Qing Wei were far less relaxed and free than disciples of Yu Yu.

He couldn't help but silently feel happy for himself. Fortunately, he wasn't taken as a disciple by Priest Qing Wei back then. Otherwise, with Ji Hao's personality, he would have been punished by Priest Qing Wei countless times already.

"My friend, you're indeed generous. But that makes sense anyway. You've occupied so many good places in the world. Any benefit slipped down from between your fingers can raise a powerful disciple of yours." A dry and hoarse voice came from the sky. That was Priest Hua flying down from the sky with a bland look. Ji Hao had met him once before.

Priest Hua glanced at Ji Hao, gave a bland smile and said, "The poor disciples of my brother and mine, our dojos are all savage lands, wild and poor. No matter how hard our disciples work, how much they want to improve, the result they gain wouldn't be better than the award you conveniently gave, my friend."

Priest Qing We's chariot stopped in the sky. Gently stroking that seal with his right hand, Priest Qing Wei responded with a resonant, harsh voice, "You think your dojo is poor and my dojo is rich... You're not thinking about coming to occupy my dojo, are you?"

Giving a cold laugh, Priest Qing Wei continued with that frosty voice, "If you have the interest, my friend, when we both have the time, why don't we make a bet?"

Eyes shining with a light bright as the sun, Priest Qing Wei sounded a bit excited as he continued, "To be honest, your Spirit Vulture Mountain is a top-grade nice place in the world, and can serve perfectly as a dojo. I've been envying you for having that place for many years."

"Why do you have to push it, my friend?" The familiar voice of Priest Mu descended from the sky. Following that, a green light poured down and a tens of thousands of meter tall, enormous linden tree showed up in mid-air. Priest Mu sat on a root of the tree with his legs crossed. While sighing with a bitter, miserable look, he said, "This time, I've made a mistake. My two friends, please lend a helping hand!"

Yu Yu threw a sideway at Priest Mu and responded without

showing any politeness, "Helping hand? Who would want to do that? If the mistake you made weren't going to throw all living beings in this world into a disaster, your Master Yu Yu would like to see you suffer!"

The clone of Yu Yu, who had been fighting against the two sky devils, laughed out loud. It transformed into a cyan stream of light and rose into the sky, dazzling towards the real Yu Yu who was coming down from the sky.

Yu Yu wielded his hand and that enormous cyan stream of light transformed into an oddly shaped long sword, falling into his hand. He pulled out the sword, slightly flicked his finger on it, then laughed out wildly and said, "Ji Hao, my good disciple, be careful and guard aside. See your Shifu and uncle destroy the devils!"

The long sword vibrated and buzzed shrilly.

Priest Qing Wei, Priest Hua and Priest Mu flashed across the air, each standing under a sword light of Yu Yu’s sword formation.

Yu Yu laughed out again, then grabbed Ji Hao, flashing under the last sword light of the formation.

None of them talked again. Instead, they each glanced at those tens of thousands of sky devils coming from all directions, then rubbed their hands and released thunderbolts towards the four enormous swords.

A strong aura of killing spread out and dominated the whole area, while the roaring intent of killing crushed the sky devils one after another.

Chapter 886: The Embryo Chaos Sword

Ji Hao silently sat beside Yu Yu with his eyes popped out, carefully observing every single move made by Yu Yu.

Yu Yu took a few steps according to the seven stars of Big Dipper, with his left forefinger and middle finger straightened, as he unhurriedly made a mysterious and powerful set of sword moves.

Every move was perfect and amazingly powerful. When Yu Yu pointed his two fingers out, a cyan-colored thunderbolt dazzled out from between his fingers and struck on the enormous sword floating above his head, adding even greater power to the sword formation.

Within every single second, countless sky devils would scream out in despair, then be slaughtered by the frightful sword formation. Yu Yu, Priest Hua, Priest Qing Wei and Priest Mu had now joined their hands to manipulate Yu Yu's sword formation, which was known as the fiercest magic formation in Pan Gu world. Facing the sword formation and the four extra powerful beings, those sky devils were wiped out in a flash, turned into strands of smoke by the sword formation without leaving even a trace, despite the powerfulness of these traceless sky devils.

Ji Hao's heart was aching!

In the eyes of Yu Yu and the other three powerful beings, these traceless sky devils were evil things that could bring a disaster to this world. But to Ji Hao, these sky devils were incomparably precious treasures that could allow him to reach to a supremely high level, even climb to the top.

Seeing those potential 'treasures' being destroyed one after another, crushed into ashes by the sword formation, Ji Hao was almost crying out. He didn't have the heart to look at those destroyed sky devils. Instead, he focused on Yu Yu, silently learning this powerful set of sword moves.

Yu Yu's spirit treasure was a sword. Without a doubt, he was a powerful sword artist. Ji Hao fortunately learned this set of sword moves from Yu Yu, and if he could truly find a nice sword, his power would be improved even further.

Every move, every step made by Yu Yu contained a marvelous feeling of the great Dao. Ji Hao was immersed in the mysteriousness of the great Dao. Gradually, a fierce sword intent began emerging from around his seed of Dao of sun, while dazzling beams of sword light became faintly visible.

The seed of Dao began spinning at its highest speed. Silently, Ji Hao pondered if Yu Yu's sword move could be combined with the moves of sky-opening, earth-splitting, everything-grow and everything-perish, how powerful would it become?

Gradually, Ji Hao's hands began moving along with Yu Yu's moves as well. Invisible streams of hot air puffed out from the tips of his ten fingers, tore the air into pieces and created extremely thin black traces.

Yu Yu delightfully nodded. Intentionally or not, when Yu Yu launched another wave of sword moves, he released a trace of his true spirit that generated an even stronger power of Dao from each of his moves, helping Ji Hao attain a deep understanding of this set of amazing sword moves.

Priest Qing Wei looked at Yu Yu from a distance away, then disapprovingly shook his head. In Priest Qing Wei's eyes, Yu Yu had always been spoiling his disciples. For a thing like learning a set of sword move, disciples should complete for it by depending on their own talents and diligent cultivation. Why would a Shifu consume his own power to help his disciples learn? When tutoring his own disciples, Priest Qing We was never a silly good man like Yu Yu.

Priest Hua and Priest Mu looked at Ji Hao with sulky faces while sensing the sword intent, spread out from Ji Hao's moving fingers.

The sword intent was growing stronger and stronger, more and more mature.

Watching another powerful disciple of Yu Yu rise, especially one who was the possessor of the Heaven and Earth golden bridge, Pan Xi divine mirror, nine suns spear and the immemorial sun streamer, along with many other supreme treasures as well...This made Priest Hua and Priest Mu feel like their hearts were being bitten by countless rats.

Why wasn’t Ji Hao a disciple of theirs?

Why didn’t those treasures belong to them?

"All living beings are miserable!" sighed Priest Mu while he released a palm move and slapped a few sky devils that rushed towards him into pieces.

"Save them with your mercy!" Priest Hua responded from a distance away with a gentle, singing voice. Meanwhile, he clapped his hands and let a lotus slowly bloom in his palm. Next, countless lotus petals spun swiftly like a milestone, and the divine light released from the petals crushed hundreds of sky devils into a thin stream of mist.

Four powerful beings combined their powers, with the fiercest magic formation in the world to seal the space. Within a couple of hours, tens of thousands of sky devils were destroyed for good.

The four powerful beings slightly waved their wide sleeves and let out a wave of thunderbolts that swept across the ground like a flood flushing through the earth. The thunderbolt waves scanned across this area sealed by the sword formation for tens of times and carefully checked every single corner. After making sure that all sky devils within the coverage of the sword formation were destroyed for good, these four powerful beings dropped their hands and smiled together.

Priest Qing Wei began talking in a serious tone, "Priest Hu and

Priest Mu, my friends, the rest of this shall depend on you. More devils can certainly be found out there, "

Priest Mu nodded to Yu Yu and Qing Wei, then gave a long sigh and said in an extra bitter tone, "I was careless. I didn't think that by cultivating in the Chaos with the primordial spirit power, I could give off a God-like power vibration and attract these terrifying beings."

Shaking his head, Priest Mu continued with a deep voice, "This was started by me, and I shall take the responsibility."

Priest Hua stood aside, grinned and said, "Brother, you've been too hard on yourself. These devils followed your power vibration to here. This means they were already not far from Pan Gu world. Even if you didn't cultivate in the Chaos, they would find this world sooner or later."

Keeping that grin, Priest Hua continued in a relaxed tone, "Brother, you sensed those devils ahead of time and drew them into Pan Gu world to allow us to catch the whole lot in a single move. This is good, virtuous... Why should you feel guilty?"

Hearing Priest Hua, Qing Wei unpleasantly snorted, then gently flicked his dragon and tiger ruyi, prepared to start his chariot and leave.

Yu Yu laughed in a wield tone, then wielded the long sword held in his hand. He gently knocked the side of his right leg with the sword while slowly saying, "My two friends, this isn't as easy as you think. If my brother and I didn't come to help you, this time, you might have caused a terrible disaster!"

Reaching his left hand straight to before Priest Hua and Priest Mu' faces, Yu Yu then grinned and continued, "Cut the crap. This time, your Master Yu Yu has done you such a great favor. Hurry, give something nice to seal my mouth! Otherwise, I will head to Spirit Wa's dojo right now and tell her everything that happened in here!"

Pausing for a second, Yu Yu carried on with that weird tone, "These sky devils are powerful, we all know that. Facing these devils, people like us can surely protect ourselves. But except for strong ones at our level, the other living beings could never survive. Priest Mu, this disaster you brought could truly be counted as destructive!"

Priest Mu's face turned darker and darker, more and more bitter. Priest Hua opened his mouth, but didn't know what to say.

These sky devils were indeed way too powerful.

A long while later, Priest Mu gave a bitter grin and responded, "Priest Yu Yu, my friend, you mean..."

Yu Yu laughed out loud, then he narrowed his eyes and said, "I was going to meet my Shifu and sue you. My Shifu might not kill you, but he will certainly make you suffer! However, as we have been friends for so many years..."

Yu Yu pointed at Ji Hao, grinned and said, "This disciple of your Master Yu Yu needs a nice sword. But you know, not every sword in the world can meet my requirement. Hmm, back then, you had attained an embryo sword from the Chaos, hadn't you?"

The looks of Priest Hua and Priest Mu changed simultaneously.

Chapter 887: Nine Suns Devil-Destroying Sword

The four different colored sword lights reached straight to the sky, with Yu Yu standing in the middle of the sword formation, naturally, gracefully and confidently.

Priest Qing Wei was going to leave, but he stayed, sitting in the chariot with a bland, calm face, silently looking at Priest Hua and Priest Yu Yu. Qing Wei's eyebrows were slightly knitted. Obviously, he didn't like what Yu Yu was doing. But since he stayed, and didn't say anything to stop Yu Yu. It was obvious that he wouldn't let Priest Mu and Priest Hua get away so easily.

It was reasonable though. After all, those sky devils were attracted to Pan Gu world by Priest Mu because he was cultivating with some secret kind of magic in the Chaos. Earlier, Qing Wei received Yu Yu's emergency alarm, came to this place from his dojo and helped Priest Mu and solved this devil problem. If he just returned to his dojo like this, he might make himself seem to be a bit too worthless.

No matter how, Priest Mu had to pay.

Priest Qing Wei would never extort Priest Mu. With his identity, he felt too disgraceful to accept anything from Priest Mu. However, as a young disciple of Yu Yu, Ji Hao was here. Priest Mu caused himself a huge trouble, asking Yu Yu and his brother Qing Wei for help, because of which, it was totally reasonable for him to give Ji Hao a gift to express his gratefulness!

Priest Mu and Priest Hua had been hesitating all the time, without saying a word.

Qing Wei abruptly raised his dragon and tiger ruyi and knocked on the bumper of his chariot. 'Dong'! Half a sky was instantly covered by the warm purple mist while streams of warm light

poured down straight from the sky, like columns supporting the heaven. Meanwhile, a nicely scented gust of wind blew across, making the sea wave unsettlingly.

"My two friends?" Qing Wei gave a harsh growl.

Priest Qing Wei was truly a bit unhappy. ‘You two thingy things, why do you have to be so hesitant to hand out a piece of treasure? Do you truly think my brother and I are cheap fighters of yours, to fight for you whenever you want, and leave as you wave your hands?’

‘If you don’t hurriedly hand out the piece...I might truly do something to bring justice back for my little brother!’ Thought Qing Wei.

Priest Hua and Priest Mu glanced at each other. Their looks turned even more bitter. Miserably, Priest Mu dropped his eyebrows and said in a pitiful tone, "Poor us, my dojos are all located in poor wild areas. I spent quite an effort to go deeply into the Chaos, and in so many years, the best piece I’ve ever attained is..."

Yu Yu grinningly looked at Priest Mu and said slowly, "In this case, I’ll go to my Shifu’s dojo and smash his door right now! Ahyaya, bringing rampant sky devils from the Chaos to our world, such a crime..."Yu Yu clicked his tongue and continued, "I feel so good just by thinking about it, hehe, hehe, hehehehe!"

Yu Yu laughed loudly, while the faces of Priest Hua and Priest Mu turned more wrinkled, seeming even about to cry.

Giving a long sigh, Priest Mu shook his head and clenched his fingers in the air. Instantly, an indescribable stream of light emerged between his two hands. Waves of water-like, mottled glow spread out from the light stream, while an extremely great sense of power suffused the whole area.

Ji Hao’s whole body was tightened under the effect of this strong

sense of power. Somehow, he felt like being stripped, and all his power was taken away, as if he was now an ordinary human being. Meanwhile, a tremendous holy weapon, that was great enough to cut the whole world into pieces, was floating in the sky, with its sharp tip pointing at his fragile body, as if it could crush him anytime.

Enduring the fear from his soul and the uncomfortableness from his body, Ji Hao fixed his eyes on the light stream between Priest Mu's hands. That stream of light was of an unknown color, as if it included all colors in the world, but seemed to be just gray.

The stream of light was shaped like an ancient styled sword, seeming to be thick and heavy. It was eight feet and one inch long from the hilt to the top; this was a super long sword. The shadow-like hilt was nine inches long, while the body of the sword was seven-feet and two inches long, with the width of a palm. The thickness of the thickest part of the sword body was around one centimeter, while the edge sparkled brightly. One could clearly sense the extreme sharpness of this sword, even from a long distance away.

Nine human-head sized swirls could be seen on the sword in a straight line. These gray-colored swirls spun slowly, seeming to contain some especially mysterious beings. Ji Hao gook a glance at the nine swirls and felt that his soul was shaking, almost pulled out from his body.

Priest Mu held this sword with both of his hands, looked at Yu Yu and said bitterly and tauntingly, "My friend, your nose is so long. I've been carefully hiding this sword and keeping the secret after I attained it, but still, you knew about it."

Yu Yu smilingly reached his hand out and grasped the sword in his hand. He gently stroked across the sword with his fingers, while looking at Priest Mu, sneered and responded, "You call your master Yu Yu an animal? Only animals have long noses, hehe, I will remember this, and I will make you pay for what you said

sooner or later. But today, I'm in a good mood, and will not waste time on you."

Measuring the sword in his hands, Yu Yu praised sincerely, "Forty-nine natural inhibitions, along with nine pre-world spirit magic talismans... Good treasure, indeed a good one. Good, good, good, this embryo sword is shaped, but it hasn't generated a sword spirit yet, neither does it have its own sword intent. This is perfect!"

Praising for a while, Yu Yu pointed his finger forward. The Chaos sword box abruptly flew out from Ji Hao's body.

Yu Yu grinned to Priest Qing Wei and said, "Brother, do us a favor. This stream of Chaos sword Qi you gave to Ji Hao, you can transform it into a sword spirit so that Ji Hao doesn't need to spend too much time to cultivate it!"

Priest Qing Wei nodded and cast a sideway glance at the miserable faces of Priest Hua and Priest Mu. He frowned and pondered for a while, then flicked his finger. A golden purple drop of blood seeped out of his fingertip and zipped down like a shooting star, shattering the sword box into pieces.

A gray stream of sword Qi flew out of the sword box, being smashed by that drop of spirit blood of Priest Qing Wei. The sword Qi then merged with Priest Qing Wei's spirit blood and transformed into a dim human-shaped silhouette, flashing into the embryo sword.

Yu Yu laughed out loudly, thanked Priest Qing Wei, then raised his hands towards the air and clenched his fingers.

With his great power, all the sunlight was grasped in Yu Yu's hands. The strong essence sun fire blazed on Yu Yu's palms. Gradually, nine golden spell symbols quietly emerged in Yu Yu's hands, releasing a scorching hot and incredibly strong sense of power.

Nine tiny suns floated above Yu Yu’s palms. With his supremely great power, Yu Yu had created nine true sun spell symbols with the sunlight of the sun of Pan Gu world!

Gasping slightly, a stream of cold sweat flew down from Yu Yu’s forehead. He widely opened his eyes and sent the nine tiny suns into the embryo sword, one after another. The sword instantly shone with an eye-piercing golden light while the nine swirls quickly transformed into nine dazzling golden spell symbols.

"With the true spirit of the sun, having an ability to destroy devils, this sword should be called ‘nine suns devil-destroying sword’!"

Yu Yu then crooked his finger. Following his move, a large rip appeared on Ji Hao’s chest. Then, his spirit blood surged out in streams into the sword, which was blazing ragingly like a golden sphere of flame.

Once the spirit blood merged with the sword, Ji Hao sensed that a tight connection was built between something extra powerful and himself.

Chapter 888: A Piece of Tree Bark

Packing the nine suns spear, Ji Hao made the Big Dipper step. Between his feet, a faintly visible golden light sparkled. With every step he made, a bright light spot would emerge in the air, shining like an eternal star. Holding the nine suns devil-destroying sword and making the set of sword moves taught by Yu Yu, Ji Hao's movements were slow, yet accurate and strong. The airstream brought up by his sword stirred the cloud in the sky, sending up thousands of meter tall waves from the sea.

Following every move made by Ji Hao, the nine mysterious and powerful golden spell symbols on the sword released an eye-piercing light, shining in a straight line on the sword like nine small suns. They gave off a great power vibration that was enough to suffocate people. After each move made by him, a frightful hot stream of power would gather inside the sword intent released from the sword. At first, Ji Hao felt it quite easy to wield the sword, but after three to five moves, the sword became heavier and heavier in his hands, such that even as Divine Magus, he could barely hold the sword anymore.

The entire world seemed pressing down onto the sword, bringing Ji Hao an overwhelming pressure.

Gradually, the strong power accumulated on the sword had almost broken every piece of Ji Hao's bones inch by inch, even before he completed ten percent of the set of sword moves. He could no longer control the sword, but could only cast a loud growl, grip the sword with both of his hands and wield the sword forward fiercely.

A dazzling stream of light flashed across the nine golden spell symbols while a buzzing noise could be heard. Then the sun in the sky dimmed down slightly. Next, a beam of sword light that was as fierce as a flame and a thunderbolt flashed out from the sword. It transformed into a thousands of meters long, tens of meters wide,

magnificent stream of sword Qi, roaring out.

The golden, tremendously powerful sword Qi split the surface of the sea and screamed straightforward. Wherever the sword Qi swept across, a giant amount of seawater would be evaporated, that caused a miles long and hundreds of meter deep crack to emerge in the sea.

Eighteen erupting volcanos were in the way of the sword Qi. The smallest one was around seven miles in radius while the largest one had a radius of over a thousand miles. The golden sword Qi swished across swiftly and shattered and melted all those volcanos one after another silently, without leaving a trace.

A single stream of sword Qi managed to sweep across the distance of three thousand miles and flattened eighteen volcanic islands!

Ji Hao gripped the sword, with his entire body soaked in sweat. His limbs were shaking, while his body was exhausted. He almost lost the power to even stand straight. However, he was thrilled now. The power of this sword and the power of the sword moves taught by Yu Yu were combined, and he had released less than one ten-thousandth of the full potential. Yet, the result turned to be so amazing!

At this moment, one could see Yu Yu’s proud grin and Priest Mu and Priest Hua’s bitter faces. The greater the power Ji Hao released with the nine suns devil-destroying sword, the harder Priest Hua and Priest Mu could accept it!

"Shifu, thank you so much for gifting me this sword! Thank you so much for teaching me the sword moves!" Ji Hao held the sword with both of his hands, kneeled in midair and kowtowed to Yu Yu for nine times in a row. He then stood up and turned to Priest Qing Wei, kowtowed to him for nine times too, then said politely, "Dear uncle, thank you so much for your generous gift. Dear uncle, you consumed your own spirt blood to improve my power. I will remember your great kindness forever!"

Priest Qing Wei smiled warmly. His face still looked as serious and strict as a door plant, yet his eyes were now showing gentleness and warmth. He looked at Ji Hao, who was smart and polite, nodded and praised, "Hmm, indeed an excellent disciple. Little brother, this disciple of yours is not bad."

Yu Yu laughed out loudly towards the sky. Then, with his brightly sparkling eyes, he looked at Ji Hao from head to toe.

"Eh? That cloak of yours..." Yu Yu abruptly found that the Gold Crow cloak he made for Ji Hao was gone. He made a quick spirit reaction with the cloak, then realized that the cloak was broken violently by someone else.

"The cloak gifted by you, my dear Shifu, was destroyed by those devils." Ji Hao said with a bitter smile, "Those devils were way too powerful, I couldn’t stop them."

Yu Yu pondered for a while, then took out a thumb-sized, yellow-jade-like bead, that had an amber-like color and a crystal luster. Inside the bead, nine tiny spell symbols could be faintly seen.

"Priest Mu, this is a soul-nourishing pill concocted my big brother. This is the only type of supreme magic pill that is effective for the soul injuries of people at our level, in this world." Yu Yu fiddled with the pill, while smilingly looking at Priest Hua and Priest Mu.

Priest Hua and Priest Mu had their eyes fixed on the pill instantly.

Priest Hua could still remain calm, as he blandly and coldly looked at the pill with sparkling eyes. No one knew what was he thinking. Unlike him, Priest Mu’s eyes even seemed to pop out of his eye sockets when he saw the pill. He stared straight at the pill, and even Ji Hao discovered his eagerness for the pill.

Ji Hao realized something.

With Priest Mu’s power and his mind cultivation, no matter how

many treasures were piled up in front of him, no matter how greatly he wanted those treasures, he shouldn’t be like this!

The only reason for Priest Mu to act in this way was that his mind had been shaken!

"Yu Yu, my friend!" said Priest Mu hurriedly.

"Hm, I was only suspecting earlier, but right now, I can tell for sure that my friend, your mind has been shaken!" Yu Yu seriously looked at Priest Mu and said coldly, "What exactly were you doing with those sky devils? How did they make you so blundering?"

Priest Hua took a step forward, shielded Priest Mu behind him and said with a deep voice, "Yu Yu, my friend..."

Yu Yu interrupted Priest Hua and also said with a deep voice, "I don’t care about those nasty things you’ve been doing. This soul-nourishing magic pill is not so easy to make, not even for my big brothers. My big brother can only make three to five pills like this in every thousand years, and for those in stock, a big half was wasted by my silly disciples."

Ji Hao chuckled while Priest Qing Wei unhappily cast a glance at Yu Yu. Only Yu Yu could say something like that without being ashamed at all. Yu Yu’s disciples were all straightforward and forthright. At the sight of injustice, they would pull out their weapons and go fight the evil beings without any hesitation. They fought a lot, and having their minds shaken or souls injured was also frequent for them. Therefore, Yu Yu often went to Priest Dachi’s dojo for the soul-nourishing pills, until a big half of those pills were gone.

At present, even Priest Dachi couldn’t easily hand out one or two soul-nourishing pills, all because Yu Yu’s disciples had wasted a lot, seriously a lot.

"I’m afraid, this one will be the only one within the next three to five-hundred years." said Yu Yu smilingly while looking at Priest

Mu, "My friend, every time you go through a natural trial, your body will molt for once. I want the first tree bark you naturally peeled after you came to Pan Gu world!"

Priest Mu paused in shock while Priest Hua gave an angry snort.

Yu Yu fiddled with the pill and continued slowly, "This soul-nourishing pill is not too good a thing, but to people like us, the injuries of souls and mind... hehe!"

Priest Mu remained silent for a while. Then, he shook his head, sighed, and threw out a roll of tree bark, that was brightly shining with a green light.

Yu Yu flicked his finger and sent the pill into Priest Mu’s hand.

Priest Mu and Priest Hua glanced at each other, both shaking their heads silently. Then, they merged with the air and dispersed.

Chapter 889: Nine Suns Stainless Cloak

"Hehe!" Priest Qing Wei laughed out loudly while pointing at Yu Yu with one finger, and shaking that finger of his slowly.

"Hehe!" Yu Yu took out another wine calabash and poured some wine into his mouth, gulping and laughing.

Ji Hao dared not to act impolitely. Although just now, the angry and sad looks of Priest Hua and Priest Mu made him really want to laugh, yet he dared not to laugh out at all. Instead, he could only fix his eyes on that three meters long, a foot thick roll of tree bark.

The texture of the tree bark was smooth, with some wood grains clearly visible on its surface. Those wood grains formed complicated and beautiful patterns, seeming to contain some deep secrets of the great Dao.

Between the layers of tree bark was a faintly visible, beautiful glow. It was indeed a tree bark, yet it had a smooth shining luster, just like pearls. It also had a glow releasing from the inside of it that made the surrounding air ripple like water.

This tree bark was from the true body of Priest Mu, which was a prehistorical linden tree, that came from the Chas. Every billions of years, Priest Mu would go through a natural trial, and after that, a layer of bark of his would naturally peel off. It was not hard to imagine how much power and energy was contained in this sheet of tree bark, and how many secrets of the great Dao could be found in it.

Yu Yu extorted Priest Mu for the very first sheet of tree bark that was naturally peeled off from Priest Mu’s true body after he came to Pan Gu world. In other words, Priest Mu came to Pan Gu world from the Chaos, so the great Dao he pursued was switched to the great Dao of Pan Gu world from the great Dao of the Chaos, which also could be seen as a switch from pre-world to after-world. Then, this sheet of tree bark naturally peeled off. Besides the great Dao of

nature, this tree bark also contained the immeasurable secrets of the power of creation.

This sheet of tree bark was unique, and one could only find one such thing in the whole universe.

If Priest Mu didn't have his mind shaken and if he didn't have to rely on the effect of the soul-nourishing pill to recover, Yu Yu could have never attained this tree bark from him, not even by using violence.

One had to know that this tree bark was peeled off from Priest Mu's true body; it was same as the skin of a human being. No matter how powerful Yu Yu was, Yu Yu could never violently force a same-level powerful being to give his own skin to another person. Only under such circumstances when Priest Mu eagerly needed a top-grade spirit pill to heal himself, Yu Yu could possibly trade this sheet of bark from Priest Mu.

Priest Qing Wei laughed, and so did Yu Yu. They laughed delightfully, loudly and brightly. A soul-nourishing pill was nothing to them, because Priest Dachi had the skill and materials to make more of them. However, this sheet of tree bark was unique in the whole universe, and it now belonged to Yu Yu!

This was not only about a sheet of tree bark. This was also about the fact that Priest Hua and Priest Mu had lost all their faces today! Therefore, Priest Qing Wei had been laughing extra loudly, while he now looked at Ji Hao even more warmly than before.

"Alright, since my little brother values you so much, I, as your uncle, cannot be too stingy. I've watched two great shows today, and I'm now in quite a good mood. I shall just help you one more time!"

Pointing his finger out, a roll of silk appeared in front of Priest Qing Wei. The silk was long, seemed to be woven from threads of ice. Appearing along with the silk was a three meters long, brightly glowing golden crystal and tens of gemstones with different colors.

"Little brother, what do you think?" Priest Qing Wei pointed at those materials floating in front of him.

"I’m afraid they’re still not good enough for Priest Mu’s face." Yu Yu said straightforwardly, "I have some other nice stuff, which is useless for me to keep anyway. Why don’t we just use them now?"

While speaking, Yu Yu stealthily looked around, then flicked his finger. Following his move, three-hundred meters long, colorful, triangular dragon scale silently emerged, releasing a prehistorical and vague power vibration.

"The reverse scale of the dragon ancestor?" Priest Qing Wei paused in shock, looked at Yu Yu confusedly. He opened his mouth, then shook his head as he wielded the ruyi with his left hand. A black and white stream of mist puffed out, wrapping Yu Yu and himself up.

"Alright, the other forbidden materials of yours, don’t take them out. We’ll take our time to sort and count." Priest Qing Wei murmured helplessly.

Ji Hao also had cold sweat flowing down from his head. The reverse scale of the dragon ancestor? How on earth did Yu Yu get something like that? The ancestor of all dragons in the world, his reverse scale...To the dragon-kind, that reverse scale should be like a memorial gate for their oldest ancestor. How on earth did Yu Yu attain that?

From the air, Yu Yu’s voice descended, "Ji Hao, you just wait for a moment. Your uncle’s dragon and tiger ruyi has a space inside. In that space, the time flows billions of times faster than it in the outside. I will make you a top-grade cloak for your protection."

The black and white mist coiled into a ball three-hundred meters in radius, floated in midair while slowly spinning. Within the mist ball, a large diagram of Taiji was faintly visible.

Ji Hao waited outside for twenty-four hours when abruptly, a rip

showed up on the mist ball. Then, a purple mist stream swished into the air from the ball, dispersing immediately. A while later, a refreshing sense of power came from the sky, following which, an elderly man with a simple flax robe and a mild look trod on a cloud and descended from the sky, flashing into the mist ball.

Ji Hao became nervous. Once he saw that elderly man, he sensed that the world had begun shaking. He knew the identity of that elderly man at that point. He was no one else but Yu Yu and Priest Qing Wei's big brother, Priest Dachi, the most mysteriously powerful one among all three of them!

Ji Hao couldn't help but have his scalp numbed. What kind of cloak had Yu Yu been making for him? Why did he even need this legendary powerful being to come to help? What kind of treasure needed all three of them to work together?

Sitting in midair with his legs crossed, Ji Hao silently waited in a daze.

While he was waiting, Ji Hao sensed the power vibration released from Zhu Rong a couple of times. He cast a few glances over, but right after that, he rushed away at his highest speed, just like a startled rabbit. Obviously, Zhu Rong recognized that black and white mist ball, and apparently, Zhu Rong didn't want to make too many contacts with Priest Qing Wei.

Soon, six days had passed. Ji Hao didn't know how long it had been in that small world inside the dragon and tiger ruyi. Abruptly, the black and white mist ball dissipated, while a fresh gust of wind and a purple stream of mist rose into the sky together and disappeared in a moment, leaving Yu Yu standing in the air by himself.

Ji Hao politely kneeled down and watched the fresh wind gust and the purple mist stream disappearing, then looked at Yu Yu, who had been gasping quickly and heavily.

"Shifu!" Seeing Yu Yu's tired face, Ji Hao was greatly moved, but

he didn’t know what to say.

"Here, you have the nine suns spear and nine suns devil-destroying sword. So, this cloak shall be named as nine suns stainless cloak. It will never be stained by any dust. No devil can ever approach it, no weapon can harm it, and no disaster can destroy it...This cloak is the best piece I’ve ever made during the past countless years."

Yu Yu smilingly threw a golden, shining cloak towards Ji Hao. Inside the cloak, nine dazzling small suns had been hovering while spinning swiftly. The cloak seemed to be weightless. It landed on Ji Hao’s body and he moved slightly. Immediately, a raging sun fire wrapped his whole body up, making him look like the legendary God of sun descending to the mortal world from the heaven.

Chapter 890: Ten-Thousand Arrows Kill

A dark golden divine light flashed across the space. Ji Hao activated the Heaven and Earth golden bridge, which tore the space apart, bringing Ji Hao, his mother Qing Fu, and tens of his close clansmen swiftly towards Yao Mountain territory in the Midland.

The incident started in the evil-suppressing divine palace had ended. But under the invitation of Zhu Rong, and also because of his own cautiousness, Yu Yu gladly took Po and Gui Ling to Zhu Rong Mountain as guests, in case those sky devils refused to give up on their evil plan and came back to intrude the divine palace again.

At the moment, the divine palace was guarded by Yu Yu himself. Those sky devils might survive if they stopped planning on Chi You, but if they ever dared to intrude the palace again, they would be seeking death.

Ji Hao returned to Gold Black Mountain and ran a discussion with elders of Gold Crow Clan. Then, he decided to bring Qing Fu back to Yao Mountain territory himself, to meet Ji Xia. Meanwhile, the Gold Crow Clan would select a batch of elite clansmen and send them to Yao Mountain territory under the escort of Zhu Rong Family. After all, only people from Gold Crow Clan were Ji Hao's true clansmen, who shared the same bloodline and origin with Ji Hao. At present, the population of Yao Mountain territory was large, yet all of those people were purchased, looted, and even tricked by Ji Hao to join the territory. The current Yao Mountain people were not from the Gold Crow Clan, and some of them were even not human beings.

In this age, if one wanted one's clan to rise, grow strong, and to constantly develop, one had to have a batch of trustworthy clansmen. Not to mention any other fact, physically, those purchased or looted Yao Mountain people were not as strong as

Gold Crow Clan people.

Gold Crow Clan elders valued Ji Hao's suggestion a lot. Under Ji Hao's request, they prepared to select over ten-million elite clansmen and send them to Midland. With this batch of clansmen, a truly sturdy foundation of Yao Mountain territory would be laid.

The golden bridge flew as fast as the bolts of lightning. Ji Hao's original soul power was now thousands of times stronger than before. Added with the fact that Priest Qing Wei had kindly improved his power, currently, he was much more powerful than before when he just returned to Southern Wasteland. Therefore, he could now manipulate the golden bridge much more freely.

With a couple of hours, the golden bridge had already reached Midland from Southern Wasteland. Ji Hao stopped the golden bridge and floated above the fierce layer of the void gale, looking down at the vast Midland.

"Amma, this is Midland. Pu Ban City is in here, and so is the emperor of our humankind."

Standing above the void gale, countless kilometers high from the ground, Qing Fu could only see a beautiful landscape, even though she had tried her best. After all, she was only a Senior Magus.

However, with a glance from such a long distance away, Qing Fu could sense the uniqueness of this Midland world. Compared to the wild Southern Wasteland, every mountain and river in Midland seemed to be delicate and lively, that made her feel so great and refreshed. The delicateness and liveliness of Midland were in a greater harmony with Qing Fu's taste. Therefore, Qing Fu fell in love with this place at first glance.

"This is a nice place!" Qing Fu dragged Ji Hao's sleeve, smilingly nodded and said, "The natural scenes in Southern Wasteland are already great, but compared to this place, something is lacking."

Talking about the natural scenes of Midland for a while, Qing

Fu’s topic changed naturally, "Hao, I’ve met Man Man before. But what is that girl called Shaosi like? How much do you like her? If you really like her, just marry her as soon as possible!"

Narrowing her long beautiful eyes, Qing Fu grinningly raised her hand, stood on her tiptoes and gently patted on Ji Hao’s shoulder.

"You’re so tall now. See, I can only reach your shoulders. Back then, when you were a baby, you were only as big as a bamboo rat, see, about this size." She raised both her hands to show Ji Hao how small he was. Then, with a pair of eyes filled with warm love, she looked at Ji Hao and continued, "Therefore, you’ve grown up now. Just marry Man Man and Shaosi as soon as you can, then have many babies. I can take care of the babies for you!"

Ji Hao had cold sweat oozing out of his skin as he looked at Qing Fu and laughed embarrassedly. He responded, "Amma, this..."

Qing Fu just couldn’t stop. With her eyes narrowed, he looked at Ji Hao and continued talking with a warm and gentle voice, "Do you remember those kids you grew up with? They all have their own children now. The oldest among those little ones can already hunt a wild wolf by himself!"

"You’re Earl Yao now, you’re a minister of the human government. Your position is even higher than those most powerful ancestors of Gold Crow Clan now. In the future, the branch of clansmen represented by you will become the strongest branch of Gold Crow clan."

"You have to have many kids, especially boys, so that our clan can grow stronger. The stronger a warrior is, the more kids he should have for his clan. This is his responsibility towards his clan."

Ji Hao’s mouth corners twitched slightly while saying ‘yes’ embarrassedly.

On the golden bridge, a few kids, who were shocked by the landscape of Midland, had been yelling and shouting. Hearing

them, Ji Hao even had a headache. These boys and girls were all Ji Xia's kids, Ji Hao's brothers and sisters!

Qing Fu glanced at those shouting kids, then pinched Ji Hao's arm and continued with a low voice, "Learn from your Abba... You're my son. You can marry a hundred girls. With this, you're different from your father...If there is any girl that you like, I will go talk to the girl for you."

Ji Hao chuckled, then hurriedly started the golden bridge and brought up a dim dark stream of light, swishing towards Yao Mountain territory. He dared not to let Qing Fu continue talking. Otherwise, Qing Fu might force him to consummate his marriage today. Ji Hao liked Man Man and Shaosi, but he was not the same as people living in this age. He just didn't want to get married and have kids so soon.

According to Qing Fu's plan, in three to five years, he would have tens of boys and girls crying and rolling in front of him, hugging his legs and calling him 'Abba'! Thinking of that crazy scene, Ji Hao only felt that his scalp was numbed and his whole body was itchy, and that even made him want to die.

The golden bridge transformed into a stream of golden light and descended at high speed, flying at a low altitude, even brushing against mountaintops. Ji Hao flew over Pu Ban City and approached Yao Mountain City. He slowed down, pointing his finger down and telling Qing Fu, his brothers and sisters and the others of his clansmen about the natural scenes in this area.

This place was the largest natural pasture of Yao Mountain territory, and had countless wild animals living on it...

This area was the most important forest farm of Yao Mountain territory, with fifteen logging teams from Yao Mountain City stationed in this forest...

The front area that had fire rising constantly was one of the biggest mines of Yao Mountain territory. It had over a thousand

smelting furnaces, and could produce innumerable pure gold and other precious metals every single day...

Hearing Ji Hao's explanation, the group of clansmen standing behind him were stunned.

They knew that Ji Hao was doing pretty good in Pu Ban City, and had already attained the title of 'Earl Yao', but they had been living in Southern Wasteland since forever, and they had absolutely no idea what the tile of 'earl' or 'marquis' meant.

Listening to Ji Hao for quite a while, a sturdy man with a simple and honest look rubbed his hands and asked with a great surprise, "Ji Hao kid, this territory of yours, how big is it?"

This man was a distant cousin of Ji Hao. He and Ji Hao were close friends. Hearing his question, Ji Hao was going to give the answer. But all of a sudden, followed by a deep shout, over ten-thousand purely metal arrows zipped over like a group of flying buzzing locusts. Different colored spell symbols sparkled brightly on each arrow.

A heavy rain of arrows roared down from the upper sky and covered the golden bridge up, aimed at the vital body parts of everyone on the bridge.

Chapter 891: Teamed Up

Outside Yao Mountain City, beside a rapidly flowing river...

Man Man was wearing dragon leather soft armor with elbow sleeves, holding a dimly sparkling trident. She was standing on a rock by the river, with a faint fiery light shining in her eyes. Those eyes of hers were fixed on a group of ‘white belly black back iron scale silver carp’, through the flowing river water.

This group of fish had dug a nine-meters deep dent in the sand area by the river, as their nest. The nest was surrounded by rocks, and the water inside the dent had been flowing gently, as it was filled with thriving aquatic plants. Indeed, this dent could serve perfectly as a nest for fishes.

Man Man boosted up her strength, abruptly gave a shout while swiftly lunging the fork held in her hand. The head of the fork swished out and penetrated into the head of a six feet long fish through the tens of meters deep river water, as fast as a bolt of lightning. Three lethal spell symbols on the fork-head released a fierce power vibration, following which, the body of the large fish trembled and stopped moving after it died.

Man Man shouted out happily. A thin black chain around the fork-head tightened up, and then abruptly pulled backward. Being pulled by the chain, the fork-head, which was covered in thorns, dragged the large fish out of the water surface. Man Man stuck her fingers into the gills of the fish, then held it in her arms while laughing.

"Large fish, large fish, a delicious iron scale silver carp."

Laughing happily, Man Man rushed backward with the fish, which was almost the same size as herself, held in her arms. At a distance from the river was a burning bonfire with an iron pot floating upon it. Yu Mu had been carefully throwing some weirdly shaped herbs into the pot.

The water in the pot had boiled already, yet not even a single drop of oil could be found in it. However, because of those strange spices Yu Mu threw in, an exotic aroma had already spread out in the air. This aroma was hard to describe, but it could indeed make everyone drool.

Shaosi took over the large fish from Man Man’s hands and put it on a clean large plantain leaf. Then, she laughed to Yemo Shanye, who squatted aside, and said, "Come over here. You saw how I did this a couple of days ago. Do you want to give a try by yourself this time?"

Yemo Shanye blushed because of the excitement. She hurriedly nodded, carefully touched the cold and hard scales of the fish, then took over the red bronze dagger decorated with gold on the hilt.

The one foot and two inches long bronze dagger had tens of sharpening and hardening spell symbols on it, and consequently was impressively sharp. She scrapped the scales off the fish not so expertly, then pressed her fingers on the dagger, slowly and smoothly cutting off a snow-white slice of fish.

"Not bad," Sitting by the bonfire, Yu Mu praised, "Sister Yemo, you have to be careful when you slice it. You should go along the lines left on the fish skin when you slice it, so that you won’t break the structure of the fish muscles, and it will taste better and softer in that way."

Giving some advice to Yemo Shanye, Yu Mu continued seriously, "Eh, I don’t know much about your Yu Clan people, but for our human beings, if a girl doesn’t even know how to cook, no one would want to marry her for sure!"

"Eh?"

Yemo Shanye was shocked. No one would want to marry a girl who didn’t know how to cook? Was that true? This was largely different from the tradition of Yu Clan. For Yu Clan nobles, if any girl would go make the food or boil the tea by herself, that would

be quite disgraceful, and literally, no Yu Clan man would ever want to marry a girl like this,

If her sister, Yemo Luoye, could see what she was doing at the moment, Yemo Luoye might faint, and even vomit some blood.

However, the lives of human beings seemed to be a lot more interesting than those of Yu Clan people. Human beings didn't need to wear all those luxurious clothes and try their best to act elegantly. They could run, they could touch the trees and flowers, they could play with those adorable animals, as much as they wanted. Human beings could do whatever they liked! Even slicing a fish was much more interesting than doing those so-called 'elite art' in the Dark Sun Castle.

White and soft fish slices fell into the soup pot one after another, as Yemo Shanye's moves got quicker and quicker, smoother and smoother.

A long distance away, Feng Xing sat on a branch of a large tree, looking at Yemo Shanye, who was laughing happily with Shaosi and Man Man. A non-humankind girl, but not irritating at all, how special was that!

More than not irritating, she could even make the others like her, and want to protect her!

Among those evil, blood-thirsty and hypocritical Yu Clan people, a girl like Yemo Shanye was just like the only bright pearl shining in the boundless darkness.

"Ah..." Feng Qing sighed slowly. The ancient styled longbow of his was put horizontally on his lap. Gently flicking the bowstring with his fingers, countless familiar faces flashed across Feng Xing's mind, old ones, young ones, men, and women.

The dense scent of blood reached the sky, while a black smoke suffused the air. Within the smoke and blood, countless faces, which belonged to the dead ones, were smiling at him. Those

smiles made his heart ache, and even froze his soul.

Among all those faces, a tender and innocent one looked seventy to eighty percent similar to Yemo Shanye's face. They both were so kind and naive, pure and flawless; their pure vibe could immerse one, could break one's heart.

"Yi Shen! Hmm...I will go back." murmured Feng Xing, "I will go back. The bloodline of Yi, the ancient divine God, you humiliated this bloodline. You don't deserve this bloodline...You!"

Feng Xing stroked the longbow gently with his fingers, while his tone turned softer and warmer. The longbow buzzed deeply while releasing streams of divine light, slowly merging with Feng Xing's body. The power vibration released from Feng Xing was changing slowly, turning sharper and sharper, fainter and fainter.

In the woods far away, Gong Gong Wuyou stood under a tree, with a thin stream of watery mist hovering around him. Blandly, he looked at Man Man, Shaosi, and the others, who had been enjoying the picnic time by the river, and said with a low voice, "We're friends indeed, but I will not join the mission of yours this time. By bringing you here, I've done enough as a friend."

Slightly waving his hand and rolling a black jade flute in-between his fingers for a few times, Gong Gong Wuyou then continued, still in that bland tone, "As for the next, you're on your own. You've already set up a teleporting magic formation anyway, so you will be able to retreat safely as long as you can catch her. I'm leaving now, do whatever you want!"

Gong Gong Wuyou flashed across the air after laughing and jumped into the river flowing through the woods with tens of his warriors, disappearing within the blink of an eye.

Inside the woods, nearly a thousand heavily armored Yu Clan nobles and Jia Clan warriors had gathered up with serious looks. They began checking their own equipment, putting the defensive and attacking jade talismans and the other one-time usage tools, in

the most convenient places.

"We have the time span of ten breaths!" said a Yu Clan elderly man coldly, "We only have ten breaths. If we miss the target, we retreat through the teleporting magic formation immediately. Otherwise, we will all die here."

"Go, now!" growled the Yu Clan elderly man with a deep voice, "Mission, take Miss Yemo Shanye back and kill everyone around her!"

Flicking his fingers, a purely black divine tower roared up from underground and expanded to three-hundred meters in a moment. Then, it released a thick layer of dark light screen that covered up the whole area with a radius of a hundred miles.

Over a thousand Yu Clan and Jia Clan warriors dashed out of the woods, as fast as a gust of wind, leaving shreds of afterimages in the air.

Chapter 892: Kill Ten-Thousand Enemies

On the Heaven and Earth golden bridge, Ji Hao shouted out loudly.

Tens of thousands of arrows had been released simultaneously, screaming over from all directions like a rampant group of locust. Ji Hao wasn't the only target of these arrows. Behind him, Qing Fu and the other Gold Crow Clan people were all targeted.

Apart from Qing Fu, the others that came to Midland with Ji Hao this time were his younger brothers and sisters and his close relatives. They could be counted as the closest clansmen of Ji Hao among the entire Gold Crow Clan. But the enemies hiding in the woods had launched a lethal attack against all of them. Without a doubt, this triggered Ji Hao's anger.

The flame of rage rose straight into his head from his heart while the Pan Xi divine mirror swished out of his body. The thick and heavy mirror buzzed slightly and released a dim stream of divine light, hovering out and covering the entire golden bridge up.

Over ten-thousand arrows pierced into the divine light along with an ear-piercing scream, then all disappeared. Afterward, countless shocked and angry howls rose from the woods down below.

From the few different sized mountains down below, thousands of silhouettes swished up into the air, trod on gales and stood in midair. They were wearing tight feather armors that only Eastern Wasteland archers would wear, and had faintly visible cyan-colored gusts of wind roaring behind them. Within the winds, hazy silhouettes of legendary creatures like rocs, golden eagles, cranes and cyan birds could be seen flapping their wings.

Qing Fu raised her long pair of eyebrows and asked, "Eastern Wasteland people? Hao, how did you offend them?"

Ji Hao snorted coldly, looking at those Eastern Wasteland archers, who were obviously affected quite badly by the reversed attack just now, and responded, "Amma, I didn't offend them. Instead, they just keep bothering me...They have truly been seeing me as a pushover."

Qing Fu slowly nodded. She put down her arms and let extremely thin strands of powder drift out from between her fingers. Once the powder made contact with the air, it immediately transformed into invisible streams of mist, spreading out silently.

Among the four wastelands in Pan Gu world, only Southern Wasteland was hot and moist. This allowed all weird kinds of poisonous bugs to live in the forest. Therefore, although the drug users in Southern Wasteland were not experts in saving people, speaking of killing people with poisons, they were definitely top-grade ones among all.

Qing Fu was a master of the mysterious Southern Wasteland art of poison, and all poisons she used came from Southern Wasteland bugs. Especially after the Gold Crow Clan was brought under the protection of Zhu Rong Family and began serving under Zhu Rong Tonggong's direct command, the resources possessed by Zhu Rong Family were all opened to Gold Crow Clan. This allowed Qing Fu to attain more top-grade materials that came from rare types of bug to do her research. For this reason, although her power hadn't improved too much, her poison-using skill had already reached a scary level.

Thousands of Eastern Wasteland archers floated in the air, staring at Ji Hao coldly and fiercely.

Ji Hao turned his eyes and looked coldly at them. This place wasn't too far away from Yao Mountain territory. For Magus Kings, if they rushed at their highest speed, they would be able to reach Yao Mountain City in one hour tops. With such a short distance, and with so many Eastern Wasteland archers sneakily gathered in here, something was certainly not right.

Among those over three-thousand archers floating in the air, nearly a hundred were Divine Magus, nearly a thousand Magus Kings, while the other two-thousand were all peak-level Senior Magi. They were all wearing specially crafted feather cloaks. Even as Senior Magi, they could fly with the powers of their cloaks.

A few breaths later, another seven-thousand archers rose from the woods down below. These archers were much weaker than the first batch rose from the woods, and were mostly ordinary Senior Magi. Wearing the same leather cloaks, they trod on a wind and floated in the air, facing Ji Hao.

The power vibrations released from these Senior Magi archers were disordered. Many of them had blood stains on their clothes. Apparently, when the Pan Xi divine mirror sent back those arrows, these seven-thousand Senior Magi didn’t manage to dodge the arrows released by themselves, and were injured.

"What are you doing here?" Ji Hao held his hands behind his back, with the nine suns stainless cloak dazzling. Except for his faintly visible face, he looked just like a sphere of flame and light, that no shape could be seen at all.

A terrifyingly great heat spread out. Qing Fu and the other Gold Crow Clan people only felt that their whole bodies were warm, while those archers felt like they were being burnt by a raging fire. Their feather cloaks even started to emit a smell of burnt food. Some archers even had their skins cracks because of the dryness, with blisters popping out of their skins.

This was the power of the nine suns stainless cloak. Ji Hao had only slightly triggered the sun power of the cloak, and a crazily great heat was released immediately, burning most of those archers powerless.

The battle formation of those archers began shaking. An Eastern Wasteland elderly man with white hair and straight back growled resonantly out, "Fight!! Kill this guy! Kill Earl Yao right here, right

now! Everyone will be awarded! Prince Yi Shen will certainly award us with whatever we want when we return!"

Yi Shen? Again?

Ji Hao's face turned dark. Why did Yi Shen send over ten-thousand archers to ambush around Ji Hao territory?

Was he playing another trick?

Was he still desiring for Feng Xing's bow?

'Well, since you're already here, you shall not think about returning.' Ji Has thought while glancing at those archers with a sulky face.

Inside his body, inside his acupoints, over a thousand golden light spots had been slowly yet steadily growing. The seed of Dao of sun floated in his spiritual space, dazzling with a golden light. The pure positive power surged like blood, roaring in and out of the seed of Dao like hundreds of flying dragons.

Over ten-thousand Eastern Wasteland archers pulled their bows open together, and this time, they all aimed at Ji Hao.

They prepared to launch a joint attack to kill Ji Hao with their greatest power. As for Qing Fu and the other Gold Crow Clan people behind her, these archers didn't take them seriously at all.

The bowstrings buzzed, and those arrows were about to be released, while Ji Hao pulled out the nine suns devil-destroying sword.

Making the steps according to the locations of stars, Ji Hao wielded the sword with both of his hands and slowly made the first sword move taught by Yu Yu.

Hacking down in the air, a golden beam of light flashed across the sword edge, then an arc-shaped sword light flew out. Under the control of Ji Hao's great spirit power, the sword light split into thousands of thumb-sized light flakes once it was released from the

sword edge.

These light flakes pierced straight towards most vital body parts of those archers, leaving countless beautiful golden arcs in the air.

The sword move taught by Yu Yu seemed to be powerful enough to reverse the time. Once the move was made by Ji Hao, the sword light had already chased up with the passing time. This sword move was way too fast, even faster than time itself.

Starting from that elderly one with white hair, thousands of Eastern Wasteland archers had a stream of blood spurting out from between their eyebrows. Their souls were burned straight out by the essence sun fire. These archers shivered in the air, then all Divine Magi, Magus Kings, and Senior Magi fell into the woods.

By now, the poison released by Qing Fu hadn’t even begun working. Yet, Ji Hao had already taken out over ten-thousand strong enemies with a single sword move!

Chapter 893: Nail Head Arrow Book

Yu Mu was smilingly watching Yemo Shanye slice the fish. From time to time, he raised his head and took a glance at Feng Xing.

Yu Mu's eyes were filled with helplessness and a faint dissatisfaction.

'Since you like this girl, even though she's a non-humankind being, you should get access to her. Just talk to her more, shouldn't you? Why are you following her day and night from tens of miles away? What is this?' thought Yu Mu.

From tens of miles away, Feng Xing could clearly see every single fine hair on Yemo Shanye's face with his eye power. But Yemo Shanye didn't even know where Feng Xing was!

"You bastard!" murmured Yu Mu while taking out a few vividly red pieces of fire rirmiana wood from a bag beside him and throwing them into the bonfire. Fire rirmiana wood was the best firewood in the world. Earlier, the phoenix-kind sent a large group of people to Yao Mountain City to help build the perpetual portal, and from them, Yu Mu traded for some of this firewood with especially strong fire power, with quite a high price.

The firewood blazed ragingly. The fire had a light cyan color, and the temperature was high enough to melt even gold and rock.

On the surface of the large iron pot, black spell symbols had been sparkling while the soup contained in the pot was boiling. Fist-sized, nearly transparent fish slices had been rolling up and down in a group, releasing a magically amazing aroma that would make anyone drool.

Yu Mu stopped complaining about Feng Xing, and instead, focused on the pot of soup. Carefully, he put a few different types of mosses and mushrooms that he collected with solid efforts into the pot. These mosses and mushrooms could ensure a better flavor

of the soup.

Swish! A black light screen suddenly covered the sky. From the light, a fierce arrow, that was as large as spears used by human beings, zipped down. Along with a shrill swishing noise, the arrow pierced straight towards the back of Yu Mu's neck.

Yu Mu snorted slightly, then his neck abruptly, and magically, split up. His skin, bone, blood veins, everything split into two. The large arrow flew through his split neck, then fiercely banged against his pot.

Swoosh! The split neck merged back together. With a special magic learned from a Magi Palace master Magi recently, Yu Mu dodged the arrow. Yet, he helplessly watched the pot of soup be turned over.

"My soup!"

'You shall never curse the parents of a dutiful son to his face, and you shall never destroy delicious food, that was expected by a food lover, right in front of his face either', because either of the above two things could infuriate someone and make them put up a desperate fight against oneself. This was what Yu Mu had been thinking at the moment. The soup he elaborately made was destroyed. The other things were not so important, but those spices and secret ingredients of the soul were collected and prepared by him with genuine efforts; that was all done painstakingly!

Followed by a raging growl, a dense dark cloud emerged from above Yu Mu's head. A strong gale rose, while a drizzle fell down from the dark cloud. The crystal-like sparkling drizzle was blowing slanting down by the wind, towards those Yu Clan and Jia Clan warriors, rushing out of the woods in the distance. Meanwhile, the Disease God streamer emerged behind Yu Mu. Gray streams of mist drifted into the dark cloud ceaselessly, making the poison contained in the drizzle more and more powerful.

A few Yu Clan elderly men raised their wands while opening their erect eyes. Seven-colored beams of light hovered in the air. These Yu Clan people were all from Moho Family of the Full Moon, and could control the surrounding natural powers. Strong gusts of wind rose from the ground one after another, fighting against the Yu Mu's dark cloud, protecting those non-humankind warriors. Not even a single drop of the rain could approach those warriors.

Nevertheless, the strong poison contained in the drizzle had spread out. The movements of many non-humankind warriors slowed down abruptly, while their skins began turning green and black, speedily.

"Die!"

A Jia Clan warrior raised his head and looked at Yu Mu. As he slightly flicked his left hand, a fist-sized meteor hammer, that was thickly covered in sharp thorns, roared out.

Yu Mu gave a deep roar, along with which, his large pot rose and hovered in the air, shielding his chubby body behind it. However, that meteor Hamer exploded all of a sudden and released a dazzling sphere of thunderbolt that wrapped the large pot and Yu Mu in it entirely, like a rippling pool of water. The thunderbolt sphere flashed and sizzled, letting out countless electric bolts. Fierce thunderbolts drilled into Yu Mu's body in a row, making his chubby body quiver from time to time. His skin, blood and fleshy were partially burned by the thunderbolt, that forced Yu Mu to scream in pain.

Feng Xing shouted out brightly and resonantly while zipping straight up into the sky with his bow pulled open. A roaring gust of wind followed behind him closely. Nevertheless, as he leaped up for less than three meters, the erect eye floating upon the black divine tower released a water-tank-thick black stream of divine light and violently struck on Feng Xing's body. Feng Xing gave a scream, because half of his body withered immediately, making him look like a human skeleton. With all this happening, Feng

Xing only managed to release three arrows.

Golden arrows flashed across the sky. Three Jia Clan warriors rushed to Man Man and Shaosi, but before they could do anything, a golden arrow pierced into the spot between the eyebrows of each of them. Puff! The heads of these tree Jia Clan warriors were blown up simultaneously, that took their lives right away.

Man Man picked up her hammers while Shaosi held the shield with her left arm, gripping her long spear with her right hand. Man Man and Shaosi shielded Yemo Shanye behind them from both sides.

Yemo Shanye looked at those non-humankind warriors who had been rushing over, and shouted out harshly, "They're my friends! Who dares to hurt them? Aren't you afraid of the revenge of Yemo Family?!"

All non-humankind warriors stopped immediately while staring at Yemo Shanye in fear and shock. They had done enough mental preparation before they came. But right now, as they were actually doing the job, these elite non-humankind warriors suddenly realized that the one they were supposed to bring back was the youngest princess of Yemo Family, the most beloved one!

The little princess of Dark Sun, the most special one, the most beloved one!

In the hearts of some powerful beings from Dark Sun, Yemo Shanye was much more important than Yemo Luoye, who was the current emperor in power of Dark Sun, in Liang Zhu City and had a great political power within her grasp. To those Dark Sun powerful beings, Yemo Luoye was just a capable descendant, while Yemo Shanye was the most 'beloved' descendant!

Capable descendants were merely tools and fighters, but beloved descendants were the blood of their hearts!

Therefore, no one dared to neglect Yemo Shanye's threat. The

moves of these non-humankind warriors slowed down while they all turned around and looked at the Yu Clan elderly man who was in charge of this mission.

The elderly man looked at Yemo Shanye with a bitter face, not knowing how to respond to her threat. However, a bigger threat approached speedily.

From a grass wood beside Yu Mu, a large puff of soft and dry grass was kicked up into the sky. Then Taisi, who was in a deep sleep in the grass wood, rushed out.

Looking at Yu Mu, whose face was burned black, Taisi's eyes instantly and entirely turned gray, even before he completely woke up.

"Who...hurt....my...friend?"

Taisi's voice was cold and creepy, sounding like the roars of soul-eaters that came from the hell.

A tiny book flashed across his palm. Next, Taisi raised an anciently styled tiny arrow and poked it straight into his own thigh, without even making a moan.

Blood gushed out while the arrow sparked with a dim light. Taisi began incanting a spell with a low voice. Following his voice, the tiny arrow suddenly transformed into countless shreds of shadows that spread out silently.

The Nail Head Seven Arrow Book was activated with his own spirit blood, because that was the fastest way to activate it.

Chapter 894: Chase the Soul for Ten-Thousand Miles

Taisi and Shaosi had each absorbed a Candle Dragon pearl. Shaosi attained the ability of teleportation. With her current power, she could send herself anywhere within the area one hundred miles in radius in a flash. This made her as powerful as the sky devils, because the enemies wouldn't even be able to attack her. Taisi attained the power of time-reversal. He could control the time within a small range, that allowed him to freely chose to attack his enemies at a point of time that was in the future or in the past. Taisi was already a master of magic curses, but this new power made him even harder to deal with, and made his attacks harder to predict.

Thousands of shreds of shadows transformed from the tiny arrows sliced the air open. Those elite non-humankind warriors hurriedly activated all of their defensive treasures and talismans. Layers of magic light screens covered their bodies up, with all kinds of defensive spell symbols sparkling. Afterward, these non-humankind beings showed relieved smiles.

The non-humankind had been fighting against the humankind for countless years. Therefore, these non-humankind beings knew quite much about the magic curses created by human beings, and had developed effective defensive methods to fend against the magic curses cast by human Magi. Taisi was scrawny, and looked like a hypogenetic teenager. Non-humankind beings clearly knew that among human Magi, older ones were always more powerful than younger ones. Especially those who were capable of cursing the enemies to death from millions of miles away, such human Magi were no different from ten-thousand years old zombies.

Merely judging by Taisi's appearance, he couldn't possibly be too powerful.

Countless shreds of arrow shadows penetrated the bodies of those non-humankind warriors. Yet, the protective magic light screens surrounding their bodies remained perfectly motionless. As they estimated, those arrow shadows released by Taisi didn't seem to cause them any harm.

"He was bluffing! Kill this little bastard!" A Jia Clan warrior growled out, then raised an especially huge three-headed flail and violently smashed down towards Taisi.

Taisi raised his head slowly, staring at this Jia Clan man with his deathly gray, emotionless eyes.

Taisi was surrounded by a magical layer of time-ripple. The three-headed flail fiercely swished across Taisi's body, yet it seemed to move across the body of a phantom, failing to even shake Taisi's body slightly.

The Jia Clan man looked at Taisi in shock. Everyone on the scene witnessed his three-headed flail, that was sparkling with eye-piercing lightning bolts, smash into Taisi's body. But why, why did he fail to kill him?

"You're dead already..." Said Taisi with a creepy smile on his face, "You're all dead people now..."

Swaying slightly, Taisi continued with that deep, spooky voice of his, "As for me, I am present one day later than you. Unless you can twist the time, how can you kill me, when there's a time difference between us?"

Taisi laughed with an evil voice, that made the Jia Clan warrior tremble. It was something he couldn't help but do.

The power of time; among all types of natural powers in this world, the power of space and the power of time were the ones most difficult to control. Time and space were like two coordinate lines that formed the foundation of this world. Anyone possessing the power of time or the power of space was definitely a top-grade

powerful being that one could not bear to offend.

Could Taisi actually twist the time?

Was he not present in the current time?

Was he actually one day ahead of the others?

The Jia Clan man was deeply confused. He tried, but he couldn't figure out why Taisi stood right in front of him, talking to him as he claimed that he was a day ahead of the others. Besides, he said 'you're all dead', what did that mean?

All of a sudden, the hearts of over a thousand elite non-humankind warriors began aching piercingly. In a great panic, they lowered their heads. On the chest of each of them was a small, thumb-thick hole left by an arrow. From the hole, transparent blood had been ejecting out. The blood was completely colorless, as if all the essence of the blood had been drained by an unknown, mysterious power, already.

No reaction was made by their defensive treasures and magic talismans. Not even a ripple was stirred up from those protective magic light screens surrounding them. Before they sensed any attack, they were attacked already, and that attack was lethal.

"Three days ago, I killed you!"

Taisi gave another evil, creepy smile. Shaosi stood aside and cast a sideway glance at him, then showed the whites of her eyes helplessly. Ever since Taisi began learning all kinds of evil and cruel magic curses from that old monster, Candle Dragon Gui, his smile became uglier and uglier, while the sense of power released from him turned eviler and eviler. By now, Taisi looked exactly like a moving ghost; he was nothing like human beings now, nothing at all.

Having a brother like this was truly a bit humiliating!

Nevertheless, even Shaosi had to admit that Taisi's magic curses were indeed terrifying, and had been getting more and more

terrifying.

Taisi twisted the time and attacked these enemies three days ago. Three days ago, the power of the Nail Head Seven Arrow Book had punctured the hearts of these enemies.

These enemies with thick armors had fully prepared for magic curses. All defensive magic talismans and treasures worn by them were especially powerful, and were designed for the evilest magic curses created by human beings. With Taisi's power, even though he could control the Nail Head Seven Arrow Book, without building an altar and performing a blood offering ceremony to increase the power of his magic curse, he could harm one or two among these enemies face to face at most. But, he could never cause any lethal harm to over a thousand emeries simultaneously.

But three days ago...

Non-humankind beings loved luxurious fashion styles. Three days ago, they were certainly in exquisite and luxurious clothes, holding the hands of their girlfriends, or hanging out with their friends. They would never stay armed to the teeth twenty-four hours every day, keeping their defensive treasures activated and wasting their magic talismans to wrap themselves up with magic light screens all day long.

Taisi launched the attack on these enemies three days ago and killed them easily, as they were defenseless back then!

"What a...weird curse!" A Yu Clan elderly man quivered. His skin turned paler and paler, until no redness could be discovered in his skin anymore, as if his spirit blood had been devoured by an unknown power. "A curse to twist the time...We, we underestimated you!"

The Yu Clan elderly man thudded against the ground, twitching intensively, but completely powerless.

With difficulty, he raised his head and continued stutteringly,

"Damn it, Gong Gong gave us the wrong information. He said you're just a bunch of weak kids...Damn it, Gong Gong Wuyou, he lied to us!"

The Yu Clan elders man screamed out with a hoarse voice, "Gong Gong Wuyou brought us here! He covered us, helped us sneak into Yao Mountain territory! He lied to us! Damn it, he lied to us! Your powers, your powers..."

A series of muffled thuds was started as those elite non-humankind warriors fell to the ground one after another. They looked at Taisi despairingly. Through the holes on their chests, their life-force were drained speedily, that made them turn old and withered.

The power vibration released from Taisi was boosted up instantly while the life-force of over a thousand elite non-humankind beings was taken away by an unknown, terrifying being. Ten-percent of that life-force merged quickly with Taisi's body.

"Ao...." Taisi gave a long and shrill howl while a gray light spot sparkled between his eyebrows. A dim spirit star began growling inside his body. The life-force that came from over a hundred non-humankind beings pushed him straight up into the level of Divine Magi.

High up in the air, a star, that had an evil vibe and could give anyone goosebumps at first glance, abruptly started shining. It released a gray stream of straight and poured down onto Taisi's body.

Taisi chuckled, then said with that spooky voice, "Gong Gong Wuyou? You can't run... Chase the soul, go!"

Following his deep growl, Taisi flicked his finger, and a dark arrow shadow flashed out, merging with the air immediately.

Chapter 895: The Chosen One

Yao Mountain territory, on the mountainside of a nameless mountain...

Zhu Rong Tianming leaned against an old zelkova tree, gazing at the boundless plain area in the front with his eyes narrowed.

Bo Qiujia, Priest Corpse and a group of their disciples stood beside him. The skin of each of these cultivators was crystalline and sparkling, like peals and gemstones, that made them look like statues. Hundreds of Fire Qi Lin Clan warriors guarded in an area ahead with serious looks, and had been vigilantly looking around.

This was Yao Mountain territory, Ji Hao's territory. These Fire Qi Lin Clan warriors understood that their master didn't have a good relationship with Ear Yao, and even intensive conflicts had happened between Earl Yao and their masters. Zhu Rong Tianming came without an invitation and sneaked into Yao Mountain territory with a large group of warriors and cultivators. If a patrolling troop of Earl Yao territory discovered them, another intense fight would start.

Silently leaning against the old tree for quite long, a snow-white, fist-sized beautiful bird, which had three feet long and splendidly pretty, glowing tail feathers, descended from the sky.

Bo Qiujia reached out his fingers and let this beautiful bird landed on them. The bird pecked his finger with its light silver beak, then gave a beautiful silvery cry.

"Hmm, hmm..." Bo Qiujia nodded while listening to the bird. A while later, Bo Qiujia took out a faintly golden pill and put it into the bird's mouth, then flicked his finger and sent the bird up into the sky. He turned around, smiled to Zhu Rong Tianming and said, "Prince, as we thought, Yi Shen hasn't given up on Yao Mountain City yet. This time, he colluded with the non-humankind and sneakily gathered over a hundred thousand archers to ambush

around Yao Mountain city. We don’t know what he intended to do."

Zhu Rong Tianming gave a vicious grin. A fire flood dragon coiling around his waist gave a deep roar and let out a dense sphere of flame. The flood dragon had already shown a sign of transformation from a flood dragon into a true dragon.

Zhu Rong Tianming laughed and coldly ordered, "Can we find any evidence of him colluding with the non-humankind?"

Bo Qiujia spread his hands, sighed slightly and responded, "He is extremely cautious. Although those non-humankind beings, who have intruded into Yao Mountain territory, are certainly related to him, they didn’t move together. Therefore...We can’t get evidence against him."

Helplessly shaking his head, Zhu Rong Tianming said with a dark face, "If we can’t find any evidence against him, we shall kill him directly. No one can betray me, not even Yi Shen! The prince of the Ten Sun Country, big deal?"

Priest Corpse’s face slightly darkened as well as he said in a cold voice, "Yi Shen should really die. Ever since the prehistorical era, no one could continue living a free life after tricking me!"

Priest Corpse, Bo Qiujia and the group of disciples of theirs all had sour faces now.

Tempted by an immortal life, Yi Shen agreed to become a disciple of Priest Corpse, and support Zhu Rong Tianming with all of his powers for attaining the throne of the human emperor. However, back in the war that happened in Pan Xi world, Zhu Rong Tianming’s performance was extremely lame, that caused severe damage to the group of princes who followed his lead. Since then, Yi Shen started to doubt Zhu Rong Tianming as well. Therefore, Yi Shen decided to compete for the throne himself after returning to Pan Gu world. Supported by Gong Gong Wuyou, Yi Shen told everyone that he was going to join the competition for the throne,

and started an open recruitment for supporters and followers.

With the great power of Gong Gong Family as the dominator of Northern Wasteland, added with the domineering position of Ten Sun Country in Eastern Wasteland, Yi Shen's group began growing rapidly once he set up the flag. By now, the momentum of Yi Shen had almost suppressed Zhu Rong Tianming.

With both rage and shame, Zhu Rong Tianming swore that he would kill Yi Shen. Priest Corpse and Bo Qiujia, who also felt that they were betrayed by Yi Shen, gathered a large group of elite disciples, followed Zhu Rong Tianming and tracked Yi Shen into Yao Mountain territory.

Priest Corpse clapped his hands. The faintly golden pair of palms banged together, generating a bright and resonant sound, seeming like a bell ring. Next, he said with that sulky face of his, "Let's see what he's going to do. If he intends to break Yao Mountain City, perhaps we can harvest an unexpected surprise."

Zhu Rong Tianming raised his eyebrows and curved his lips upwards, giving a few weird laughs.

"Best case scenario, Yi Shen kills Ji Hao, and then I kill Yi Shen..." Clicking his tongue, Zhu Rong Tianming said, "Man Man is so disappointing. If she is pregnant with Ji Hao's child now, as an uncle of that child, I would reasonably take over Yao Mountain territory, wouldn't I?"

Greedily glancing at the boundless and fertile plain area of Yao Mountain territory in the front, Zhu Rong Tianming continued murmuring to himself, "If I can raise an army in this place, if I can put billions of people in here and turn all of them into believers of yours, my tutors..."

The eyes of Priest Corpse and Bo Qiujia sparkled brightly, as they both gazed at the rich land of Yao Mountain territory with especially greedy looks.

A while later, Bo Qiujia mumbled to himself, "Isn't that right? If we can make this land our own, I would be able to build a top-grade dojo in this place. If you, my prince, can attain the throne of the human emperor and make our sect the largest sect in the human world, letting all human beings worship our two master Shifu...Hehe!"

Priest Corpse patted gently on Zhu Rong Tianming's shoulder, with his eyes shining strangely bright, then said with an extra serious tone, "Prince, perhaps, you can truly be immortal, and dominate the human world forever. As long as our sect becomes the largest sect in the human world, my prince, you will become the first immortal human emperor!"

Zhu Rong Tianming's face was blushed as his nostrils expanded. He gasped quickly and heavily while staring at this land of Yao Mountain territory with a twisted face.

A long while later, Zhu Rong Tianming murmured, "I shall kill Yi Shen the first. This anger of mine will not fade if he stays alive!"

A rapidly flowing river flowed across this nameless mountain and the other few mountains. Down the mountain, the surface of the river was over three-thousand meters wide. The river surged and roared, creating thousands of differently sized whirlpools on the river surface.

While Zhu Rong Tianming silently swore to himself that he would kill Yi Shen no matter how, a thousands of meter tall water column suddenly rose from the river. Hundreds of Gong Gong Family warriors in black armors rushed hurriedly out from the water column, with Gong Gong Wuyou surrounded by them. Blood had been gushing out from Gong Gong Wuyou's chest in streams.

Those warriors put Gong Gong Wuyou down under the mountain. A few female warriors ripped off his long shirt in a flurry, exposing his bleeding wound. Then, they hurriedly thrust all kinds of precious life-saving magic pills and ointments into his

mouth.

Two Master Magi in long robes wielded their twisted, snake-like wands and started a weird dance around Gong Gong Wuyou while quickly incanting spells. Strong waves of power vibration transformed into frigid gusts of wind, blowing in all directions spirally.

In both shock and surprise, Zhu Rong Tianming stood on the mountainside, looking at Gong Gong Wuyou and his people who popped out from the river unexpectedly.

Slightly quivering, Zhu Rong Tianming laughed abruptly out loud and yelled, "I knew I’m the chosen one, Gong Gong Wuyou. Gong Gong Wuyou, you came to give your life to me! Without you, how can Yi Shen possibly compete against me for the throne?"

Bo Qiujia and Priest Corpse were seriously surprised as well. They never thought that Gong Gong Wuyou would show up in here!

More importantly, Gong Gong Wuyou was severely injured, and those guards and warriors around him hadn’t discovered Zhu Rong Tianming and the group of cultivators at all!

Remaining silent for a while, Priest Corpse raised his right hand high, then slapped straight down.

A shining, golden hand, three meters in radius, silently slapped down from the sky, violently landing on Gong Gong Wuyou and his warriors.

Followed by a thunderous boom, half a mountain was flattened by this strike of Priest Corpse.

Chapter 896: Everyone Improve

The Heaven and Earth golden bridge flashed across the air and reached Yao Mountain City in a moment, leaving a long dark golden stream of light in the air. The Heaven and Earth great formation based on Yao Mountain City had already activated itself. Warm clouds of mist covered the air while heavily armored elite warriors guarded on the fence wall, in a compact battle formation. Warriors from the phoenix-kind, dragon-kind and Tushan Family also stood on the fence wall, curiously looking around.

Ji Hao opened his eyes of Dao of sun and let out a golden shine. With that eye, he immediately saw a black sphere of light whiten the Heaven and Earth great formation. That was a divine tower, which had been fending against the destructive power of the great formation with difficulty. A single divine tower couldn't possibly rival the Heaven and Earth great formation, with was connected with earth meridians and stars. At the moment, boundless warm mist surrounded the area with a radius of a hundred miles around the tower, which was entirely darkened. An immense destructive power made the black area shake and twist ceaselessly, ripping out giant cracks in the darkness from time to time.

"Break!" Ji Hao gave a raging growl while the golden bridge flashed across the air and sent the group of Gold Crow Clan people and Ji Hao into the city. Gripped in JI Hao's right hand, the nine suns devil-destroying sword let out a shrill scream and started a three-hundred meters thick stream of flame, violently hacking on that sphere of darkness. The darkness was about to collapse already under the power of the great formation, so being struck by the sword flame, it now shattered thunderously. Next, the sword fiercely struck on the purely dark divine tower and chopped it into two.

Large streaks of golden flame roared down. The ten Jia Clan warriors guarding around the tower were burned into ashes before

they could make any sound. The sword was incredibly powerful, such that even the armors and weapons of those Jia Clan warriors were burned into a strand of smoke.

Ji Hao moved swiftly to above the dark area and immediately saw Taisi with a pair of gray eyes. The power vibration released from Taisi's body was extremely cold and evil. He raised his gray eyes and glanced at Ji Hao. Then, the white light shining in his eyes dimmed down gradually while the layer of time-ripple around him dispelled slowly. The enormous gray star in the air let down a grey stream of starlight, surging into Taisi's body.

The Magus acupoints and meridians inside Taisi's body had now been shattering and melting, transforming into a small 'star void'. Within this small 'star void' inside Taisi's body, a large cloud of gray mist had been spreading while a fist-sized star was growing brighter and brighter. Near this fist-sized star, another eight thumb-sized gray light spots had been sparkling. Taisi absorbed the life-force that came from over a hundred elite non humankind beings, and now, he was going to condense this power into nine inner spirit stars all at once!

Ji Hao glanced at Taisi, then flicked his wrist and threw a linden seed, which belonged to a clone of Priest Mu, to Taisi.

Taisi's eyes shone. He didn't know what the thing thrown over by Ji Hao was, but the linden seed was a top-grade treasure, and Taisi discovered the strong life-force contained in it, along with a mysterious, indescribable power of creation.

"Good stuff!" Taisi raised his hand, forcibly pulled down his jaw and opened his mouth as much as possible, then swallowed this linden seed entirely up. One had to mention that this linden seed was even bigger than his fist.

A vividly green light merged with Taisi's body. Afterward, gray perspiration began oozing out of Taisi's body. An odor spread out while Taisi quivered slightly. Meanwhile, new light spots began

emerging inside his body.

High up in the air, an ink-dark star emerged, releasing a strong evil power vibration. The light of this star was sharp and clear, as if it had countless dark tentacles. The star floated in the air and poured down a black stream of light. Inside Taisi's body, the nine nearly emerged light spots quickly turned black. The sense of power released from Taisi's body was already dark and mystical, but now, it became even more mysterious.

Ji Hao raised his head and looked at that black star, then glanced at Taisi, sensing that evil power released from him. Ji Hao couldn't help but shake his head. 'It seems that Taisi has already decided to be a dark one, and has given up on any thoughts of an alternative.' thought Ji Hao.

Seeing Ji Hao, Man Man leaped up and yelled, "Ji Hao, go see Feng Xing! A half of his body is dried!"

Yemo Shanye had her long dress rolled up, with the edge of the dress held in her hand. She rushed to Feng Xing already and screamed, "He's struck by the Dark Sun divine light. His life-force has been devoured! No, no, I, I don't have any drug to replenish his life-force!"

Yu Mu bounced over like a large meatball and dashed up to Feng Xing merely with two rises and falls. Looking at the skeleton-like half body of Feng Xing, two hot streams of tears instantly surged out of Yu Mu's eye sockets as he howled, "Feng Qing! You're drained! A half of your body is shriveled! Crap...crap..."

While crying, Yu Mu grabbed Feng Xing's belt, prepared to rip Feng Xing's pants off.

Feng Xing still had half a body remain undamaged. He popped out his good eye in panic while dragging his belt with his good hand and screaming out with a hoarse voice.

"You fat ass! What the hell are you doing?! Why are you pulling

my pants?!"

Yu Mu also screamed in a great panic, "Feng Xing, you haven't married yet! If you're halfway drained down there too, you, you, you..."

Feng Xing's undamaged half of face twitched instantly. Then, he slowly lowered his head with difficulty and took a frightened glance at his own lower body. Meanwhile, the clenched fingers of his undamaged hand were loosened.

Followed a loud ripping sound, Yu Mu ripped Feng Xing's pants apart.

Yemo Shanye had just rushed over. Seeing what happened, she turned around and rushed back away with a blushed face.

Man Man and Shaosi stopped running simultaneously, then turned around and moved backward as fast as they could. While escaping, they angrily and loudly complained about Yu Mu.

Ji Hao laughed out loud. He flashed across the air and reached to Feng Xing. Seeing Feng Xing's skeleton-like body, Ji Hao hurriedly took out a linden seed and crumbled it in his hands. Then, he turned the powder into a green stream of mist and sent it into Feng Xing's body with a spell.

Nourished by the life-force contained in the linden seed, Feng Xing's body recovered speedily. A dry layer of dead skin fell off from his body. Afterward, his body turned even stronger than before, and a bright luster was added to his skin.

Pondering for a while, Ji Hao took out another linden seed and put into Feng Xing's mouth, then gave Yu Mu one as well.

"Don't ask what it is, and don't tell anyone that you've taken it. Hmm, just swallow and absorb it."

"In around half a month, you will all become Divine Magi."

Ji Hao looked at the two crystal-like, shining linden seeds and

laughed happily. He then swung his arm back and threw out another three linden seeds, each falling into the hands of Man Man, Shaosi and Yemo Shanye.

Just now, when Yemo Shanye lifted her dress up and rushed to Feng Xing, Ji Hao clearly saw that her face was filled with her concern for Feng Xing, and some indescribable feeling.

‘She’s beautiful anyways,’ thought Ji Hao. ‘You won’t dislike her only because she has three eyes, will you?’ God knew how many weird thoughts had now been popping out in Ji Hao’s head.

Man Man and Shaosi swallowed the linden seeds up.

Yemo Shanye curiously looked at this linden seed, which contained an immeasurable amount of life-force. She raised her head, seeming to ask Ji Hao a question.

Before she could say a word, a tall and slim man abruptly leaped out from beside. That was Yi Shen. He spread his arm, grasping towards Yemo Shanye’s snow-white neck.

"Dark Sun princess, come with me!"

Chapter 897: Cut Yi Shen

Yi Shen moved incredibly fast, that Man Man, who was the closet one to Yemo Shanye, didn't have the time to react at all. She gripped her hammers, and the hammerhead blazed with a raging fire as Man Man intended to smash Yi Shen. But, Yi Shen's fingers were already about to reach Yemo Shanye's neck.

Yi Shen's fingers were long and smooth, with a strange metal-like luster. They looked like eagle claws, seeming to be cold and dangerous.

Yemo Shanye's neck was long and slim, soft and snow-white, looking like a tender lotus root. Yi Shen could easily break her neck by gently clenching his fingers. Nevertheless, Yi Shen was indeed fast, but someone on the scene was even faster than him.

Shaosi flashed across the air and showed up beside Yemo Shanye, put her arms around her and then flashed across the air once again, bringing her ten miles away.

Yi Shen's fingers brought up five sharp gusts of wind, violently sweeping across Shaosi's body. They ripped her long cotton dress open and left five purple-black bruises on her soft white skin.

If Yi Shen didn't want to capture Yemo Shanye alive and if he didn't intentionally restrain his power, as a peak-level Divine Magus, he could definitely tear Shaosi apart.

Shaosi gave a muffled moan, then let out a mouthful of blood.

Sticky blood oozed out from the bruises on her body, but the linden seed she took just now released its strong life-force inside her body, allowing those bruises to fade and disappear. Soon, Shaosi recovered fully.

"Damn it!" Yi Shen shouted out. He flicked his finger and let out a beam of arrow light towards the head of Feng Xing. Feng Ling had already pulled his longbow open. The first purpose of this surprise

attack launched by Yi Shen was to capture Yemo Shanye alive, and the next was to kill Feng Xing.

Yemo Shanye was taken away by Shaosi, then at the moment, killing Feng Xing was the only thing he could do!

Yi Shen was arrogant, yet he wasn't stupid. Shaosi was capable of teleporting herself and the others, this meant no matter how hard he tried, he could never catch up with Shaosi. The great formation in Yao Mountain City was already activated, which didn't leave him too many opportunities to attack. If he couldn't leave Yao Mountain territory before the Heaven and Earth great formation sealed the area ten-thousand miles in radius completely, he wouldn't even be able to leave at all!

From a distance, a series of deep roars came. Following that, a group of Jia Clan warriors, who followed Ji Hao's lead, leaped up from the fence wall, dashed over and left streams of light in the air. Over three-hundred Divine-Magus-level Jia Clan warriors rushed over from hundreds of miles away, as the strong intent of killing had locked on Yi Shen like heavy chains.

Yi Shen moved again, flicked his wrists and sent out two beams of arrow light towards Feng Xing's heart and lower belly. Then, he swiftly flew towards the woods nearby like a fierce gale, leaving shreds of afterimages in the air.

Human silhouettes could be seen quickly moving in the woods. At least a thousand Eastern Wasteland archers had been hiding in the woods. A teleporting formation had already emitted an eye-piercing light. As long as Yi Shen could cover this short distance, which was less than twenty miles and reach the teleporting magic formation, he would be able to take his warriors and escape.

Ji Hao took a sideway step and blocked the three arrow lights striking towards Feng Xing, with his own body. The nine suns stainless cloak shone brightly, with a raging golden fire rising from it. Nine human-head-sized spheres of flame hovered in the sky and

burned the three beams of arrow light into smoke, before they could even touch Ji Hao's body.

"Yi Shen, you should die!"

Ji Hao growled coldly. He saw the bruises on Shaosi's body, and even though the linden seed helped Shaosi to recover, Ji Hao was still infuriated when he saw Shaosi shedding blood.

To be honest, no deep hatred existed between Ji Hao and Yi Shen. However, ever since Yi Shen came to Pu Ban City, he began causing Ji Hao troubles just like a fly. Before, Ji Hao dared not to kill Yi Shen because of those powerful Eastern Wasteland clans. But now, Ji Hao had grown much more powerful than before, so why should he still worry so much?

In Ji Hao's previous life, he would seek revenge for the smallest grievance. In Ji Hao's mind, this was a good tradition that never wanted to change. The golden bridge flashed while Ji Hao transformed into a golden stream of light and abruptly showed up in the teleporting magic formation that Yi Shen prepared for himself to escape.

Those Eastern Wasteland archers around the teleporting magic formation stared at Ji Hao in shock as if he were a ghost. Impossible, how could he be even faster than Yi Shen?

Ji Hao raised his right foot and stamped heavily against the ground.

As a high-level Divine Magus, Ji Hao had a great physical strength, and that strength of his was improved by the cultivation method with nine turns. Ji Hao had now reached the fourth turn, which meant his physical strength was sixteen times higher than an ordinary high-level Divine Magus. That dreadfully great physical strength burst and destroyed the less than three-hundred meters in radius teleporting magic formation. Thousands of different sized magic crystals in the teleporting magic formation were shattered one after another.

"No!" Yi Shen popped out his eyes and gave a despairing growl.

Ji Hao looked at Yi Shen with a fierce aura of killing, then smiled, slightly nodded to Yi Shen and said, "Since you've come, why are you leaving? Yao Mountain territory is not huge, but it's broad enough for you to find a nice spot to serve as a grave... for all of you!"

The Heaven and Earth great formation was still rumbling like thunder. The sky was still covered by warm mist, but the surrounding space was sealed already.

Air rippled around Yi Shen's body faintly because of the sealing power of the great formation. An invisible power had been sealing Yi Shen, while he was trying his best to fight against it. That was why the air began to ripple.

Yi Shen shouted loudly out, "I am the prince of Ten Sun Country! I am meant to be a..."

"Dead man!" Ji Hao rudely interrupted Yi Shen, simply and straightforwardly providing a perfect end to his words.

The nine suns devil-destroying sword raised a large stream of golden flame as Ji Hao gripped it with both hands and slashed down. Tens of archers who didn't manage to dodge howled before they were cut into pieces. The golden fire roared, turning the tens of archers into strands of smoke.

The woods was heated up when Ji Hao held the sword with both hands, making the steps according to the positions of the stars. He moved as quickly as a shadow, leaving clearly visible afterimages in the air while approaching Yi Shen as fast as a ghost.

Yi Shen stared at the sword in fear.

He was a peak-level Divine Magus. He was powerful, and ordinarily holy weapons could never break his body. Nevertheless, countless supreme treasures and spirit treasures existed in the world. Some treasures were naturally crafted before the world was

created, while some were created along with the world itself. Facing these supreme treasures and spirit treasures, the body of a peak-level Divine Magus was only slightly harder than the bodies of ordinary human beings.

He was nothing but a Divine Magus, and he didn’t have the power to rival a supreme treasure with his fleshy body.

The nine suns devil-destroying sword was a Chaos treasure, and it was crafted by Yu Yu himself with the great Dao of sun; it was incomparably powerful.

As a powerful human being, Yi Shen instinctively and clearly sensed the power of the sword. He understood that the sword was powerful enough to kill him. With a single strike, the sword could hack him to death.

"I’m the prince of Ten Sun Country!" Yi Shen stared at the sword and growled hoarsely.

Ji Hao raised the sword and silently hacked down.

From the head to the crotch, Yi Shen was cut into two. The golden fire roared out from inside Yi Shen’s body and burned him into a puff of ash within the blink of an eye.

"The prince of Ten Sun Country will die as well!" Ji Hao shouted coldly, then raised the sword high.

"Kill every last one of them! Kill every last enemy!"

The group of Jia Clan warriors roared in response to Ji Hao’s order, then pulled out their weapons, pouncing on those Eastern Wasteland archers.

Chapter 898: The Death of Wuyou

Shrill howls came from the woods, as those brutal Jia Clan warriors had been crazily hunting Eastern Wasteland archers.

Under the coverage of the power of the Heaven and Earth great formation based on Yao Mountain City, the powers of these archers had been weakened to an extreme degree. They couldn't even move or dodge easily by now. Therefore, facing those violent and cruel Jia Clan warriors, these archers were slaughtered like chicken.

"I surrender! I surrender!"

"Don't kill me! Please don't!"

"I give up!"

The cries and beggings of these archers came from everywhere in the woods. But, Ji Hao had hardened his heart and refused to accept their surrender.

Feng Xing had just recovered from the injury. At the moment, he squatted on the ground, and was in a daze. Silently, he looked at the last strand of ash left by Yi Shen after he was killed by Ji Hao with the nine suns devil-destroying arrow. Feng Xing stared at that wisp of ash, abruptly raised his head and laughed loudly, then burst into a rage of tears.

Yu Mu stood beside Feng Feng, gently patting his huge belly while slightly shaking his head.

Ji Hao held his hands behind his body and said with a strong and deep voice, "I should've let you kill him yourself, but at that moment, I forgot to restrain my power." Clicking his tongue, Ji Hao continued, "He killed all your families. So sooner or later, I'll kill all his families for you."

Every single word said by Ji Hao was filled with a strong intent of killing, but Man Man, Shaosi, Yu Mu and Taisi all nodded, as they

agreed.

In this bloody era, if someone killed all of one's families, one would have to take the lives of all his families as well, if one had the power to revenge. This was a cruel and chaotic era. Ji Hao's words were rude and violent, yet he pointed out the supreme principle of survival in this world.

When the last howl came from the woods faded, the group of Jia Clan warriors walked out of the woods one after another with their bodies were covered in blood. They politely kneeled down on one knee and saluted to Ji Hao.

Ji Hao nodded. He prepared to order these Jia Clan warriors to go back into the city, but abruptly, a strange power vibration came from a distance away. Ji Hao had absorbed the original soul power of a large number of sky devils, which allowed his spirit power to improve at an amazing rate. Due to this, he now possessed a mysterious, great power. With the power, he clearly recognized the nature of this power vibration, and the location of its owner, even though it came from a long distance away.

Snorting coldly, Ji Hao growled in a harsh voice, "All follow me! Yu Mu, you stay here with Feng Xing!"

Flashing across the air, Ji Hao rose into the sky along with a golden stream of light and reached hundreds of meter high within a blink of an eye. Then, he turned in the air, heading to where the power vibration came from.

Hundreds of Divine-Magus-level Jia Clan warriors shouted out together while excitedly flying up. They followed behind Ji Hao while rubbing their hands. Just now, the massacre stimulated their brutal natures, but they hadn't killed enough, and wanted to kill more.

Feng Xing took a deep breath. A pair of cyan-colored wings condensed from a fierce gust of wind suddenly spread out as he zipped into the sky. He followed closely behind Ji Hao, leaving tens

of shreds of afterimages in the air.

From the sky, Feng Xing's laugh could be heard. "Ji Hao, you killed Yi Shen for me. From now on, you're my blood brother. We live and die as brothers!"

Yu Mu patted on his fat belly, gave a bitter sigh and complained in a low voice, "You're all fast, you're all so fast. Look at all this fat of mine! Eh..."

Shaking his head helplessly, Yu Mu carried his large pot upon his shoulder, then leaped like a bouncing meatball, chasing behind Ji Hao. With every bounce, he could cover tens of miles.

Man Man, Shaosi, Taisi and Yemo Shanye all released their own powers and chased up. From Yao Mountain City, streams of fiery light roared into the sky. Those were Ji Xia and powerful Gold Crow Clan people from the city.

A half of the nameless mountain was flattened. Half of those hundreds of elite Gong Gong Family warriors were killed by a palm attack launched by Priest Corpse from the back, while the rest were all severely injured. Two enormous black flood dragons had their bodies coiled, shielding Gong Gong Wuyou with their tremendous bodies. Gong Gong Wuyou seemed to be in a coma.

The two flood dragons raised their heads, letting out black smoke and poisonous gas while roaring towards Priest Corpse with deep voices.

The scales of the two black flood dragons were cracked, their horns were shattered, while a big half of their bodies were nearly smashed. However, they still stayed by Gong Gong Wuyou's side, fearlessly facing the great pressure given by Priest Corpse, and showed no sign of drawing back.

Priest Corpse looked at the two flood dragons smilingly and said, "Good, good, good, you two are pretty brave and strong. I can use a pair of spirit beasts to guard my place. You're destined to meet me.

Just come, obey and come under my guidance. You will be happy, forever."

Laughing loudly, Priest Corpse reached out his hands. Each hand gripped the neck of a black blood dragon and lifted them up.

Gong Gong Wuyou lied in front of Zhu Rong Tianming. Zhu Rong Tianming raised his head and laughed wildly out towards the sky in pride. He pointed at Gong Gong Wuyou and shouted, "Gong Gong Wuyou, look at you now! Your Gong Gong Family has been going against Zhu Rong Family for countless years. You're the old bastard Gong Gong's only son> Today, I will kill the only descendant of your Gong Gong Family!"

Turning around his left hand, a glowing-red machete was gripped in Zhu Rong Tianming's hand. The machete was spurting cyan, blue and purple flame sparkles. Laughing coldly, Zhu Rong Tianming leaped high up, then hacked the machete down towards Gong Gong Wuyuo's head with all of his power.

Tens of badly injured Gong Gong Family warriors screamed out together. They boosted their last bit of power to struggle up, attempting to save Gong Gong Wuyou from this strike.

Bo Qiujia laughed tauntingly while gently pointing out his left hand. Faintly golden, glowing drops of water zipped out and fiercely bumped into the bodies of these Gong Gong Family warriors. They cracked their armors and even shattered their bodies.

Buzz! The machete holding in Zhu Rong Tianming's hands violently hacked on Gong Gong Wuyou's head.

A black mist puffed up from between Gong Gong Wuyou's eyebrows. Within the mist, Gong Gong's pale face emerged. A black sphere of mist held the machete up. Meanwhile, Gong Gong stared at Zhu Rong Tianming and growled, "Little bastard, how dare you hurt Wuyou, my son?!"

Zhu Rong Tianming roared furiously. He pointed at Gong Gong and screamed, "Gong Gong, even you can’t save your son this time! Don’t even think about it!"

Turning around his right hand, Zhu Rong Tianming took out a red divine talisman and fiercely slapped on the black mist sphere. The divine talisman exploded, and within a sphere of thunder-flame, Zhu Rong’s figure showed up. Zhu Rong’s right fist punched down like a blazing shooting star, shattering the black mist that rose from Gong Gong Wuyou’s forehead. After that, the thunder-flame released from the divine talisman faded away along with the black mist.

Laughing out wildly once again, Zhu Rong Tianming hacked Gong Gong Wuyou’s head and cut him into two, from the head to the feet.

Zhu Rong Tianming worried that Gong Gong Wuyou might still survive. So, he crazily wielded the machete over and over again, until Gong Gong Wuyou was chopped into meat paste.

From high up in the air, there came a mad, furious roar. Following that, dense dark clouds gathered from all directions.

Chapter 899: Gong Gong's Anger

Back in Heaven, inside the Divine Origin Pool...

This was a blood-red space. The air was filled with a magical blood-red spirit light. The spirit light sparkled, sometimes bright and sometimes dim, and contained an especially strong life-force. Down in the pool was sticky yet clear blood-red divine liquid. Countless spell symbols flashing across the surface of the liquid-like flame sweeping across the top of waves.

These spell symbols were extremely tiny, corresponding to all great Dao of nature. As long as one was patient enough, one could find all natural laws of Pan Gu world in this place.

These spell symbols were transformed from the power of great Dao of nature. They were like naughty elves, hovering and flying in the blood-red liquid. Occasionally, a few spell symbols would bump into each other and start a puff of electric sparkles that contained thriving life-force.

Different sized dim light spheres floated in the bottomless liquid. Within the light spheres, some magical beings had been growing. Those magical beings might be a tree, a mountain, a gust of wind, or a bolt of lightning...All natural phenomenon in Pan Gu world could be found in here.

Those trees were of different sizes. The taller ones were millions of meter high while the small ones were only seven to eight feet tall. Those mountains were of different sizes as well. The large ones extended for billions of miles, seeming to be massive mountain ranges, while the small ones were only hundreds of meters tall, small hills. Winds, thunder, lightning, fire, light, inside the pool, all these natural elements had different features.

Every single light sphere had been releasing a great power of creation. The powers released from some light spheres were even strong enough to suffocate human beings. Occasionally, a heart-

beat-like sound would come from a light sphere, and after that, a terrifying energy storm would be raised from the pool.

Gong Gong floated in this blood-red space, gazing down at those different sized light spheres with a complicated look.

This place was called Divine Origin Pool. It was a secret supreme treasure of the ancient Heaven, and also the ultimate way for the Heaven to remain existing. This place was even more important than the Heaven and Earth great formation and the Heaven itself.

This place was magical and creative. The life-force gathered in this place was the strongest in the whole world, and not a single area in Pan Gu world had a life-force denser than this place.

Some people said that this place was the broken heart of Pan Gu. It was found by the first generation of the divine emperor, then was turned into the Divine Origin Pool.

As the name stated, this place was where divine Gods originated from.

These light spheres were conceiving divine Gods, the new generation of divine Gods.

These new divine Gods were different from the thousands divine Gods remained in Heaven, as Kua E and his brothers were given birth biologically, and their bloodlines were passed down from their ancestors through generations. Therefore, their powers were mixed and thin, for which reason, they were far less powerful than their ancestors.

Unlike Kua E and his brothers, these new divine Gods conceiving in the pool were generated from by the natural laws of Pan Gu world, and absorbed the purest natural powers. Indeed, these new divine Gods couldn’t be as powerful as the first generation of divine Gods, but without a doubt, they would be much more powerful than the second generation of divine Gods, who were given birth by the original divine Gods biologically!

Among these new divine Gods, one could find the new Fire God, the new Thunder God, and naturally, one could also find the new Water God!

With a complicated look, Gong Gong glanced at a black sphere of light down below. Within the dark light sphere, a flood dragon over a million miles long was faintly visible. The power vibration released from this enormous flood dragon was incredibly strong and dreadful, much stronger than that released by Gong Gong himself. Once this flood dragon was given birth, he would be a top-grade, fierce divine God. And judging from his power vibration, he was a divine God with the nature of water.

However, would this new Water God listen to Gong Gong's orders...

Gong Gong chuckled, then his look turned especially dark and vicious.

"You're all mine!" murmured Gong Gong, "You, you will all be mine. Once I bring the Heaven under control, you will all be my ministers. My orders will go in every direction, and I will rule the whole world, and all living beings in Pan Gu world will worship me, will enshrine me."

"Their souls belong to you, but their bodies belong to me!"

A faint, blood-red mist spread out from behind Gong Gong, from the mist, Dishi Cha walked out. He glanced around relaxedly, then began talking with a sincere tone, "What a magical place! We've occupied countless worlds, yet not a single world can naturally generate new divine souls after the first generation of Gods fell."

"Was this place the heart of Pan Gu? I don't think so." Dishi Cha sniffed, looking around while murmuring to himself, "I don't think this was Pan Gu's heart, but what is this?"

Pondering for a while, Dishi Cha carelessly shrugged and continued, "Alright, this is not important. Anyway, it now belongs

to us, doesn’t it? My dear Water God, in the future, the souls of all living beings in this world will follow you, worship you, and their bodies will work for me, be my loyal slaves."

Gong Gong looked at Dishi Cha with a cold smile and responded, "Things are not settled yet, Dishi Cha. Don’t laugh too early. For example, you now can tell me how to deal with these things, can’t you?"

Gong Gong pointed down at those light spheres and intended to continue speaking, but all of a sudden, his look changed.

"Wuyou, Wuyou...Who dares kill my son?! Damn it! Damn it! I will cut you into pieces!"

Gong Gong howled furiously. His eyes popped widely out as he stared at the front, making him look like a crazy man. He transformed into a roaring dark cloud with thunders rumbling in it and roared out of the Divine Origin Pool, rushing towards the entrance of the Heaven as if he had forgotten everything else already.

Dishi Cha paused for a second, then knitted his eyebrows. Pondering for a while, he moved slightly then disappeared in the blood mist.

"Damn it, what happened? We sent his son to bring back the unruly little girl. Was there a problem?" Dishi Cha’s voice lingered in the pool, yet his figure had disappeared already, without leaving a trace.

Following Gong Gong’s rage, the few main water veins in Midland began surging simultaneously while large and dense dark clouds swiftly gathered towards where Gong Gong Wuyou was killed. Lighting bolts flashed, and thunder rumbled in the sky as waves of thunder even made the earth shake.

Gong Gong brought Xiang Liu, Wuzhi Qi, Snake Xiu and the other few ministers under his command, along with thousands of

warriors. He fiercely roared down from Sky Pillar and trod on a storm while dashing towards Yao Mountain territory.

They neglected the hidden rule of the humankind that the territories of earls and marquis were inviolable. They rushed straight into Yao Mountain territory and ragingly rushed to the central area, bumping directly into Ji Hao, who had transformed into a golden beam of light, and had been flying over.

Ji Hao stopped Gong Gong and his people and shouted harshly, "Gong Gong, the Water God, this is the territory of mine, Earl Yao Ji Hao! You broke in without an invitation, to do what?"

Gong Gong roared furiously out. His eyes had turned blood-red, and his voice had turned hoarse.

"To do what? Kill!"

Gong Gong wielded his arms and let a hundreds of miles wide bolt of thunder descend from the sky. The enormous thunderbolt was compressed into the size of a fist and instantly, violently struck onto Ji Hao’s head.

For this strike, Gong Gong had activated all of his powers, and showed no sign of mercy.

Chapter 900: Tacit Agreement

Ji Hao lost his eyesight as he thudded to the ground from a high altitude like a shooting star. From where Ji Hao landed, the earth rippled circle by circle. Rocks vibrated, and the ground split up. Mountains collapsed as countless towering trees were shattered in the earthquake.

Ji Hao sank deeply into the ground and drilled into the earth to a great depth.

Facing the full-powered strike launched by Gong Gong, the Pan Xi divine mirror blocked a big half of the effect for Ji Hao, while the nine suns stainless cloak released nine raging spheres of flame and burned out the thunderbolt sent over by Gong Gong completely. Not even a hair of Ji Hao was burned.

Nevertheless, this was a full-power strike launched by Gong Gong after all. Despite the fact that the mirror and the cloak managed to protect Ji Hao's body, he still couldn't cope with the terrifying impact force. Consequently, he failed to steady his body in the air and was struck down to the ground.

Tens of thousands of meters deep under the ground, the rocks and sands were melted into lava by the great heat released from the nine suns stainless cloak. Ji Hao shook his head with a bad dizziness. Soaking in the lava, he remained in a daze for quite a while, then finally figured out what had just happened.

What a scary strike! If he didn't have the two treasures to protect him, this strike made by Gong Gong could definitely destroy both his body and his soul.

Gasping deeply in the lingering fear, Ji Hao thought of the feeling he had just now when the thunderbolt struck on his head. At that moment, he instinctively sensed despair and fear. Ji Hao couldn't help but have his face twisted and teeth exposed when he rubbed his whole body.

Gong Gong, so frightful! Only the power vibration that came from the thunderbolt he released had given Ji Hao a great fear, that made Ji Hao not want to see him anymore. Then, this weird feeling made Ji Hao slightly angry, and afterward, this slight anger quickly transformed into a sky-devouring fury.

"Gong Gong!"

As he growled out, Ji Hao gripped the nine suns devil-destroying sword with his right hand, the nine suns spear with his left hand, while the Pan Xi divine mirror was faintly visible above his head and the golden bridge released a dim golden light, wrapping his entire body up. He moved as fast as a lightning bolt, bumped up through the thick rock layers then swished into the sky.

Where Ji Hao landed, in hundreds of miles, all mountains were flattened, and the ground had dented for over five-hundred-meter deep, as if it was struck by an enormous shooting star. On the edge of this dented area, rocks had piled up into a circle-shaped wall.

With a badly darkened face, Ji Hao activated the golden bridge, flashed across the sky and showed up right in front of Gong Gong once again.

He pointed the spearhead out and growled out with a harsh voice, "Gong Gong, what are you doing?! This is my territory! I am Earl Yao! You broke into my territory without permission, are you trying to start a war against me?!"

Gong Gong gave a glance at Ji Hao in a slight surprise. Just now, he fully activated his divine power and launched a thunder strike to Ji Hao. But as a Divine Magus, Ji Hao survived that strike, and was actually unharmed at all?!

"Wuzhi Qi, kill him." Gong Gong blandly waved his hand, then trod on a dark cloud. He swished across Ji Hao, dashing towards the nameless mountain which was not far away.

Once Ji Hao slightly moved his body, Wuzhi Qi walked over with

a heavy iron stick carried in his hand. While showing his teeth, he silently stood in Ji Hao's way.

Wuzhi Qi's eyes were sparkling with a golden light, and his sharp teeth reflected a bright cold light. Standing in front of JI Hao, Wuzhi Qi began talking with a dark face and a deep voice, "Earl Yao Ji Hao, today, you better not make any reckless moves. Things happened before can be big, and can also be small. But if you go against us today, we would be having no choice but make you shed blood right on the spot."

Ji Hao's face turned even darker as he asked loudly, "What exactly is this for?"

But in the next moment, Ji Hao quickly released his spirit power, swept across the area for a million miles in radius, like thousands of threads. He saw Gong Gong Wuyou, who was already chopped into meat paste, and also saw Zhu Rong Tianming, who was covered in blood. In addition, he saw Priest Corpse, who had leaped up into the sky, rushing towards Gong Gong.

"Did Zhu Rong Tianming...Kill...Gong Gong Wuyou?"

"This...Zhu Rong Tianming, he, he, he..." Ji Hao stared at Wuzhi Qi in shock.

"Zhu Rong Tianming has to die! Zhu Rong has many descendants, but our Gong Gong Family is never the same. Gong Gong Wuyou was the only son of my current master, so, you better stay out of this."

Holding the dark and heavy iron stick that had countless complicated patterns of rivers and mountains clearly visible on it; dim and blue streams of watery light flowed on those patterns of rivers, making those rivers look like wriggling dragons.

Wuzhi Qi gently stroked across those patterns on the stick with his fingers, then continued in a lower voice, "Honestly, I never liked the personality of my current master, neither do I like the

way he handles things. Prince Wuyou, that trash, was even more annoying. However, back then, when the old master saved me, I swore that I will be loyal to Gong Gong Family generation after generation."

Ji Hao understood Wuzhi Qi. He put down the spear and the sword and brought the golden bridge back into this spirit space, only leaving the mirror floating above his head, releasing a divine light to surround his body.

Looking at Wuzhi Qi, Ji Hao said, "Alright, I admit, although Zhu Rong Tianming is an elder brother of Man Man, Man Man doesn't like him, and neither do I...As for those followers of his, they never liked me either. Therefore..."

Wuzhi Qi blinked his eyes towards Ji Hao and shouted out, "Come, come, let's see what you have got!"

Ji Hao slowly nodded, turned around and glanced at the group of his friends and warriors, who had been hurriedly rushing over. Then he yelled, "Wuzhi Qi is so powerful! I can't defeat him! Come! Hurry! Come help me deal with this old monkey!"

While yelling, Ji Hao threw a gentle punch towards Wuzhi Qi's head.

Wuzhi Qi dropped the iron stick and launched a soft kick towards Ji Hao's lower belly.

Ji Hao and Wuzhi Qi each made a series of swift yet soft moves and started an 'intense' fight.

Man Man, Shaosi, Yu Mu, Feng Xing and the others who arrived later were all confused. They glanced at each other, then looked at Gong Gong, who was facing Priest Corpse at the moment. Then, all of them nodded, picked up their weapons and joined the fight against Wuzhi Qi.

Soon, one could see Wuzhi Qi releasing his great powers, such that his pair of fist and legs moved as fast as windmills, Ji Hao and

his friends and the hundreds of Jia Clan warriors couldn't even approach him.

Not only that, from time to time, numerous Jia Clan warriors would be sent flying out of the group with swollen faces and bleeding mouths, one after another. They howled so loudly, and without a doubt, they were deeply awed by Wuzhi Zhi Qi's power.

The fight continued for a while, as Ji Hao and Wuzhi Qi yawned simultaneously.

They glanced at each other, then Ji Hao took out the cloud bag, released a dense stream of water mist that covered the sky. He wrapped the whole group of people in it.

A few hassocks were put on the ground, and a few plates of fresh fruits were served. Shaosi boiled the tea for everyone, while the group of Jia Clan warriors randomly clanged their weapons. They sat in the watery mist, looking at Gong Gong fighting against Priest Corpse, from a long distance away.

Table of Contents

- The Magus Era
  - Synopsis
  - Copyright
  - Chapter 801: Perfect Talent
  - Chapter 802: Destructive Dark Thunder
  - Chapter 803: Get Involved
  - Chapter 804: Reverse the Time
  - Chapter 805: Xiang Liu Kill
  - Chapter 806: Beheading
  - Chapter 807: The responsibility of Supervision
  - Chapter 808: About to be Activated
  - Chapter 809: A Trip Across Space
  - Chapter 810: Following
  - Chapter 811: A World of Water
  - Chapter 812: A Journey with Bad Luck
  - Chapter 813: Local Water Spirits
  - Chapter 814: Creature With Instinct
  - Chapter 815: Escape
  - Chapter 816: Nest
  - Chapter 817: Surprise Attack
  - Chapter 818: Intelligent Group
  - Chapter 819: A Magical Race
  - Chapter 820: Saving Them
  - Chapter 821: Quiet Life Divine Flower
  - Chapter 822: Quiet Life Divine Fruit
  - Chapter 823: Deep Underwater
  - Chapter 824: The Holy Land of Spirit Mermaids and Mermen
  - Chapter 825: A Shocking Discovery
  - Chapter 826: They Have Been Here
  - Chapter 827: Evil Mermaids and Mermen Siege
  - Chapter 828: Availing the Opportunity to Get In
  - Chapter 829: Remerging
  - Chapter 830: Great Causes and Great Effects
  - Chapter 831: Infinitude Underwater City
  - Chapter 832: Kappa

Chapter 833: Kappa’s Army
Chapter 834: Ji Hao Sets a Trap
Chapter 835: Ji Hao Boils the Sea
Chapter 836: The Disturbance of Destiny
Chapter 837: Tushan Construction Site
Chapter 838: A Trap Among Stars
Chapter 839: The Killing Poison of Snake Xiu
Chapter 840: The Forbidden Card
Chapter 841: Break Into the Heaven
Chapter 842: Into the Heaven
Chapter 843: Occupy the Heaven
Chapter 844: Control the Divine Sleeping Palace
Chapter 845: The Gate Keeper
Chapter 846: The Divine Origin Pool
Chapter 847: Burn Kappa
Chapter 848: Kill Kappa
Chapter 849: Back to Southern Wasteland
Chapter 850: Zhu Rong’s Invitation
Chapter 851: Meeting Zhu Rong Again
Chapter 852: The Fire Sea Divine Palace
Chapter 853: Suppressing the Evils Forever
Chapter 854: The First Chi You
Chapter 855: An Eternal Being
Chapter 856: A Southern Wasteland Man
Chapter 857: Golden Body, Treasure Body
Chapter 858: Human Weapon
Chapter 859: A Powerful Magic
Chapter 860: Flying
Chapter 861: Sky Devil?
Chapter 862: The True Face of Sky Devil
Chapter 863: The Rising Evil Flame
Chapter 864: Unassailable
Chapter 865: The Sword Formation Kills the Devil
Chapter 866: Intruding the Divine Palace Again
Chapter 867: Possess The Body and Take the Soul
Chapter 868: The Cauldron and The Original Spirit
Chapter 869: Above the Common
Chapter 870: Dimond Cuts Dimond
Chapter 871: Cross Bite

Chapter 872: Unexpected Possibility
Chapter 873: Search For The Devil Million Miles Away
Chapter 874: Encountering Priest Mu
Chapter 875: Priest Mu Sheds Blood
Chapter 876: Follow The Sound Here
Chapter 877: Bullying Act
Chapter 878: Shifu and Disciple Join Hands
Chapter 879: The Fight Between Two Powerful Beings
Chapter 880: Quick Kill
Chapter 881: The Trace of the Devil
Chapter 882: Two Powerful Beings
Chapter 883: Fight the Devil
Chapter 884: Coming One After Another
Chapter 885: Four Powerful Beings Come Out Together
Chapter 886: The Embryo Chaos Sword
Chapter 887: Nine Suns Devil-Destroying Sword
Chapter 888: A Piece of Tree Bark
Chapter 889: Nine Suns Stainless Cloak
Chapter 890: Ten-Thousand Arrows Kill
Chapter 891: Teamed Up
Chapter 892: Kill Ten-Thousand Enemies
Chapter 893: Nail Head Arrow Book
Chapter 894: Chase the Soul for Ten-Thousand Miles
Chapter 895: The Chosen One
Chapter 896: Everyone Improve
Chapter 897: Cut Yi Shen
Chapter 898: The Death of Wuyou
Chapter 899: Gong Gong’s Anger
Chapter 900: Tacit Agreement